

Mandukyopanishad

To

Paul Brunton, with all best wishes of V. Subrahmanya Iyer, of Mysore.
{Kemmanjundi?}.
18/4/1937¹

¹ The original editor inserted "To Paul Brunton, with all best wishes of V. Subrahmanya Iyer, of Mysore.
{Kemmanjundi?}.
18/4/1937" by hand

“If the sole object be the attainment of the Highest Truth (the supreme goal of existence) the single Upanishad of Mandukya is sufficient.”

– *Muktikopanishad.*

“The Upanishad (Mandukya) with the Karika embodies in itself the Quintessence of the substance of the entire philosophy of Vedanta.”

– *Sankara.*

THE MĀNDŪKYOPANISHAD
WITH
GAUDAPĀDA’S KĀRIKĀ

Sri Ramakrishna Centenary Publication

THE

MĀNDŪKYOPANISHAD

WITH

GAUDAPĀDA'S KĀRIKĀ

AND

ŚANKARA'S COMMENTARY

TRANSLATED AND ANNOTATED

BY

SWAMI NIKHILANANDA

WITH A FOREWORD BY

V. SUBRAHMANYA IYER

SRI RAMAKRISHNA ASHRAMA

MYSORE

1936

Published by
THE PRESIDENT
SRI RAMAKRISHNA ASHRAMA
MYSORE

All Rights Reserved

PRINTED AT THE BANGALORE PRESS, BANGALORE CITY

TO
HIS HIGHNESS
SRI KRISHNARAJA WADIYAR BAHADUR IV
G.C.S.I., G.B.E.
MAHARAJA OF MYSORE

AS A MARK OF THE HIGHEST ESTEEM FOR THE
REMARKABLE EXAMPLE HE HAS SET BY HIS
UNDEVIATING STEADFASTNESS IN THE
PURSUIT OF TRUTH, WHEREVER
FOUND: IN ART, RELIGION,
SCIENCE OR PHILOSOPHY,
OF WHATEVER AGE
OR COUNTRY.

“If thou wouldst master care and pain,
Unfold this book and read and read again
Its blessed leaves, whereby thou soon shalt see
The past, the present, and the days to be
With opened eyes.....”

C.R. Haines.

The Notes are expansions freely made by nikhilananda on the basis of V.S.I's commentaries.²

The actual text of the Upanishad ends on page 92 each verse of the 12 verses constituting it being numbered in Roman numerals; all other verses are by Gaudapada and are numbered in Arabic numerals; they are the "Karikas".

CONTENTS

	PAGES
Foreword.....	i-ix
Preface.....	xi-xliii
Vedic Invocation	1-6
Chapter I. Āgama Prakarna.....	7-97
Chapter II. Illusion.....	98-154
Chapter III. On Advaita	155-242
Chapter IV. Quenching of Fire-Brand.....	243-359m
<u>Causality</u> ³	
The Concluding Salutation by Sri Śankarācharya.....	360-361

CHAPTER I. = the truth taught on a basis of faith, i.e. Upanishadic scriptures. Agama is scripture, prakarana is chapter. Other chapters are reasoned

CHAPTER II. = enquiry into the nature of the object the drsyam, resulting in the discovery that the external world is unreal, is ever-changing, and is only an idea along with the first of all ideas, i.e. the ego

CHAPTER III. = enquiry into the nature of the seer the drik, the individual self or subject, resulting in the discovery that it is not separate from the world, i.e. non-dual.

CHAPTER IV. = enquiry into other philsoptic views and demonstration of their falsity, chiefly because they are based on causality.

² The original editor inserted "The Notes are expansions freely made by nikhilananda on the basis of V.S.I's commentaries." By hand

³ The original editor inserted "m Causality" by hand

“The unique feature of *Mandukya* lies in this that while all the other Upanishads deal with the several phases of Vedanta, such as Religion, Theology, Scholasticism, Mysticism, Science and Philosophy, *Mandukya* deals exclusively with *Philosophy*, as defined by *the most modern authorities*. The three fundamental problems of philosophy, according to this special treatise, are (1) the nature of the external (material) and the internal (mental) worlds; (2) the nature of consciousness and (3) the meaning of causality. Each of these subjects is dealt with in a chapter. The remaining chapter sums up the whole at the very commencement. There is nothing more for philosophy to do. While it shows how the most advanced modern sciences and modern philosophies are approaching its conclusions, it gives to the world of our own times its central doctrine that partial data give partial truth, whereas the totality of data alone gives perfect truth. The ‘Totality’ of data we have only when the three states of waking, dream and deep-sleep are co-ordinated for investigation. Endless will be the systems of philosophy, if based on the waking state only. Above all inasmuch as this philosophy holds that ‘satisfaction’ is no criterion of truth the best preparation for a study of *Vedanta Philosophy* is a training in *scientific method*, but with a determination to get at the very end: ‘To stop not till the goal (of Truth) is reached.’ ”

V.S.I.

FOREWORD.⁴

NO one that knows anything of the philosophy of the Upanishads can be said to be ignorant of the place that *Māndūkya Upanishad* with its *Kārikās* occupies in it. If a man cannot afford to study all the hundred and more Upanishads, it will be enough, it is declared in the *Muktikopanishad*, if he reads the one Upanishad of Māndūkya, since, as Śankara also says, it contains the quintessence of all of them. Thoroughly to grasp the philosophy taught in Māndūkya, one needs a knowledge of the whole field of ancient Indian thought. Such being the nature of this work, one with my limitations of knowledge cannot presume to be able to do any justice to its merits and that in, what is called a "Foreword". And yet if I agreed to write a foreword to Swami Nikhilanandaji's most valuable publication it was not because I had any thought that this well-known and learned author of the translations of *Vedāntasāra* and *Dr̥ḡḡ Dr̥syā⁶ Viveka* and frequent writer to many leading Indian journals on religion and philosophy, needed an introduction to the literary world. Nor did I think that I could add anything of value to his critical and scholarly preface and notes. On the other hand, I consented because I felt that this was an opportunity for me to indicate in some measure the place of Gaudapāda not among religionists, theologians, scholastics or mystics but among *philosophers*. In⁷ what high regard he is held by the Vedāntins of the past is well known. But the esteem that he commands among distinguished men of our own times has yet to be pointed out. With this object in view and also with an idea of acknowledging my own indebtedness to some of them I have ventured to say a few words. Of two such renowned personages of our day one was my most revered Guru, the late Sri Satchidananda Sivābhinava Narasimha Bhārati Swāmi of Sringeri, who introduced me to the study of the *Kārikās*, at whose feet I had the inestimable privilege of sitting as a pupil. Here, a short account of my first lesson in Gaudapāda may not be considered irrelevant by the reader. The very first day I paid my respects to the Swāmi more than forty years ago, I started thus: "The follower of every religion thinks that his faith, his scripture or his interpretation of it reveals the highest truth and that they are therefore superior to other faiths, scriptures or interpretations. This notion has contributed not a little to the misfortunes of mankind in this world. The case is not far different with many of those that are called philosophers. Though they have not instigated men to cause bloodshed, as mere religionists have done and are still doing, yet they have made their followers delight rather in their points of *difference* than in those of *agreement*. How

⁴ i

f

⁵ In this word symbol not found in Book Antiqua font so we have inserted from Tahoma

⁶ In this word symbol not found in Book Antiqua font so we have inserted from Tahoma

⁷ ii

then is a Hindu in any way better than a Mahomedan or a Christian? Or, again, if truth or ultimate truth, a something common to all minds, cannot be rationally reached, is not *philosophic* enquiry a wild goose chase, as⁸ so many modern and honest thinkers have held? Lastly, as regards truth itself, everyone, even a fool thinks that what he knows is the truth." The Swāmi in reply said, "What you say may be true with regard to mere religion, mysticism, theology or scholasticism which are mistaken for philosophy. It may be so with the early or intermediate stages in philosophy. But Vedānta, particularly its philosophy, is something different. It starts with the very question you ask. It sets before itself the object of finding a truth, 'Free from all dispute' and 'Not opposed to any school of thought or religion' or interpretation of scriptures. Its truth is independent of sect, creed, colour, race, sex, and belief. And it aims at what is 'Equally good for all beings'." Then, I said, that I would devote the whole of my life to the study of Vedānta, if the Swāmi would be so gracious as to introduce me to a Vedāntin, past or present, that did not or does not claim superiority for his religion over others on the authority of his own scripture, who does not refuse to open the gates of his heaven to those that differ from him, but who seeks only such philosophic *truth* as does not lead to differences among men. Immediately the revered Guru quoted three verses from Gaudapāda, *Kārikās* II-1, III-17 and IV-3, and explained them, the substance of which has been quoted above. "If you want," he added, "truth indisputable by any one and truth beneficent to *all* men, nay, to all *beings*, read and inwardly digest what Śankara's teacher's teacher, Sri Gaudapāda says in his *Kārikās*."

The⁹ other eminent personage to whom I owe most of my effort to make a critical study of Gaudapāda is His Highness the Maharaja of Mysore, Sri Krishnaraja Wadiyar Bahadur IV. His profound and extensive knowledge of philosophy and particularly his high regard for *Māndūkya Upanishad* and the *Kārikās*, led to frequent talks on the topics dealt with therein. His Highness who is accustomed to meeting learned scholars, pious religionists, and deep thinkers of all types and of different countries, is a most disinterested critic. This drove me to the necessity of ascertaining how far Gaudapāda's views are of value from the standpoint of the student of western science and philosophy and how far the ancient Vedānta could stand the fire of modern criticism, particularly of science, a knowledge of which is so indispensable to the study of philosophy nowadays.

In this connection, I must not forget to mention that my debt is also immense to Mr K.A. Krishna-swami Iyer, the Vedāntin of Bangalore, and to those Swāmis of the Sri Ramakrishna Order, that have devoted their life to the *philosophical* pursuit of truth both

⁸ iii

FOREWORD

⁹ iv

FOREWORD

from the ancient and from the modern view-points and that have been with me at Mysore.

After studying Gaudapāda for a time I turned to the Upanishads and to *Brahma-Sutras* as interpreted by Śankara, under the Sringeri Swāmi's invaluable guidance. I have now for more than forty years read and re-read them in the light of the Swāmi's teachings and I find that Vedānta is far in advance, not merely of¹⁰ the most modern western philosophic thought, but also of scientific thought, so far as its pursuit of knowledge for its own sake is concerned. To refer to an instance or two: Two thousand years ago Gaudapāda anticipated what science is just beginning to guess in regard to 'causal' relation without a knowledge of which Vedānta can *never* be understood. The meaning of 'Truth' which is still a matter of dispute among many philosophers, has been investigated by him more deeply than has yet been done by other thinkers.

Vedānta in its highest, that is its philosophic aspect can have no significance to one who has not realized the importance of the *most fundamental* question in philosophy: What is truth, particularly 'Ultimate Truth'? How is it to be tested? It is the Upanishads that answer it by declaring that Ultimate Truth is that which admits of no difference of view of any kind, as two plus two are equal to four. Gaudapāda and Śankara follow this doctrine in all its implications. It assigns to religious faith, theology, scholasticism, mysticism, art and science, their respective places in the one grand edifice of human knowledge, *as a whole*. Gaudapāda rejects no kind of knowledge or experience. Even the views of his opponents, he welcomes and accepts as parts of the knowledge that leads to the attainment of truth and Ultimate Truth. His distinction lies in the emphasis he lays on the impossibility of reaching the highest truth unless the *totality* of human experience or knowledge be taken into consideration.¹¹ Others generally build their systems on the *waking* state alone. But the philosophers of the Upanishads hold that unless the three states of waking, dream and deep sleep be co-ordinated, there cannot be adequate data for the enquiry regarding Ultimate Truth. This is a matter still unknown to Europe and America. Nor has the West as yet evaluated *conceptual* knowledge. The relation of mind to its ideas or contents is another problem that has not as yet been even dreamt of in Western Philosophy.

To one desirous of making a scholarly study of Vedānta, the historical side of the evolution of philosophic thought, in India is of great value. One can, however, easily obtain this information in any of the modern text-books on Indian philosophy. But, though Gaudapāda could be fairly appreciated even without such background, yet, his commentator Śankara and his followers cannot be fully comprehended without a

¹⁰ v

FOREWORD

¹¹ vi

FOREWORD

previous acquaintance with the several systems of Indian thought. Swami Nikhilanandaji has therefore furnished valuable notes to make such matters clear. One point, however, needs to be referred to here, as it is of special interest to modern thinkers.

The several theories of perception, for instance, are discussed in the *Kārikās*, it being taken for granted that causal relation is an unquestionable fact. Like all true *philosophers*, he starts with the *perceptual world* and pursues the enquiry. If the word “real” be confined to percepts, Gaudapāda is not a realist. If the word “ideal” be confined to what is known within, apart¹² from the senses, he is not an idealist. But he admits that the concepts, *real* and *ideal*, are of value as steps leading to the *highest truth* which is beyond idealism or realism, or spiritualism, all of which only refer to waking experience. To him the external world as well as the internal is unreal. But his philosophy does not lead to illusionism, as the goal. The relation between mind and matter, idea and sense objects, or even mind and its contents is a matter of dispute to this day. But Gaudapāda’s explanation may or may not be accepted, to the extent to which it is confined to the waking state. It does not, however, affect in the least his conclusion which is based on the *three* states. He denies the category of relationship, in what is Ultimate Truth. Nor does he admit ‘Satisfaction’ (*Anandam*) to be a test of it.

Another important feature is that he is a thinker of the most rational type, which Śankara’s interpretation of him, points out. The “philosophic method” (*prakriya*) described here clears so many misapprehensions regarding the meaning of *philosophy*, in general.

Philosophy, according to Gaudapāda and Śankara, is an interpretation of the *totality* of human experience or of the *whole* of life from the standpoint of *truth*. Philosophy, therefore, is the whole, of which Religion, Mysticism (*Yoga*), Theology, Scholasticism, Art and Science are but parts. Such philosophy or Vedānta as ignores any part or parts, is no Vedānta. In fact it employs the scientific method more rigorously than modern science does. Gaudapāda’s and Śankara’s view of *philosophy* is being echoed and re-echoed¹³ by modern Western thinkers in defining it. These ancient philosophers further declare that all other kinds of experience and knowledge are but several *stages* in the evolution of life and philosophic thought. And the object sought by philosophy, as these two pre-eminent Hindu philosophers say, is the happiness (*Sukham*) and welfare (*Hitam*) of *all* beings (*Sarva Sattva*) in this world (*Ihiva*).

¹² vii

FOREWORD

¹³ viii

FOREWORD

Gaudapāda is little known in the West. There is not the least doubt that his work will open new vistas of thought to Western enquirers and will make them turn to the East for more light. Without the slightest fear of exaggeration, it may be said that in no other part of the "world" has man dared to pursue *truth* with the degree of devotion, and particularly of *determination* with which he has done in India. It is in India alone that one sees the seeker sacrificing not merely all his material belongings as in other countries, but also every feeling, thought, view, or perception to which he may, at the start, be *attached*. Till one makes sure that one's mind has been completely purged of all preconceptions or prejudices which are the offspring of *attachment*, one cannot hope to command the concentration of mind needed for climbing the topmost steps leading to *truth*. One of the greatest characteristics of *philosophy* in India – not Indian theology and the like – is the perfection to which the method of *eliminating preconceptions* is carried. And to do this one must be a *dhira* (hero).

Many such matters of great value are ably dealt with¹⁴ by the Swāmiji in the body of the work. This distinguished and learned author has done a real service to such earnest seekers after truth, as are *determined* to reach the end, wherever English is known, by translating this priceless work of Sri Gaudapāda, the first Vedāntic *philosopher*, known to Indian history in what is said to be the post-Upanishadic or modern period.

V. SUBRAHMANYA IYER.

PREFACE.¹⁵

THE *Māndūkya Upanishad*, like *Mundaka*, *Prasna* and some minor Upanishads, forms part of the *Atharva Veda*. It is one of the shortest of the ten principal Upanishads. Gaudapāda has written two hundred and fifteen verses known as the *kārikā* to explain the Upanishad and Śankara has written a commentary on both the Upanishad and the *kārikā*. Ānandagiri in his *Tikā* explains at greater length Śankara's commentary.

The *Māndūkya Upanishad*, like other Upanishads, discusses the problem of Ultimate Reality. The knowledge of Brahman or *Ātman*, the goal of existence, is its theme. Unlike most of the Upanishads, it does not relate any anecdote or any imaginary conversations to elucidate the subject-matter. It is also silent about rituals and sacrifices in any form as they are irrelevant to the metaphysical discussion of Reality. It goes straight to the subject. The extreme brevity of its statements has been the cause of despair to superficial readers who are unable to understand its real significance.

¹⁴ ix

FOREWORD

¹⁵ xi

The well-known method of Vedānta to arrive at Reality is what is known as “Vichāra”. This Upanishad also follows the same method. In the first place *Ātman* is associated with the three states of waking, dream and deep sleep, and, then, these states are shown to merge in *Turiya* or the Ultimate Reality. And¹⁶ in the sequel it is pointed out that the non-dual *Ātman* is identical with the three states and therefore all that exists is Brahman. The nature of the Ultimate Reality has been described in the seventh text of the Upanishad.

As the generality of men cannot realize the Ultimate Reality which is beyond all categories of time, space and causation, it is sought to help them to do so by means of a symbol. The symbol selected by the *Māndūkya Upanishad* as well as the other Upanishads is *Aum*, the word of all words. *Aum* consists of three sound symbols, viz., *A*, *U*, and *M*. These three denoting the gross, the subtle and the causal aspects of Brahman (from the relative standpoint), have been equated with the three states mentioned above, which contain the totality of man’s experience. The method adopted by the Upanishad and followed by Gaudapāda for arriving at Reality is to analyse our experience. Through the contemplation of the three sound symbols as the three states, the student, endowed with the mental and moral qualifications required for the understanding of Vedānta, is helped to reach the Ultimate Reality.

The *kārikā* of Gaudapāda is divided into four chapters (*prakaranas*): (1) *Āgama* (Scripture), (2) *Vaitathya* (the illusoriness of sense-experiences), (3) *Advaita* (non-duality), (4) *Alātasānti*¹⁷ (the quenching of the fire-brand). The first chapter deals with the problem of Reality from the standpoint of the Vedas. The three subsequent chapters demonstrate the same truth by means of reason.

Śankara,¹⁸ who has commented only on Vedāntic works of the most authoritative character, such as the *Gītā*, the *Upanishads* and the *Sutras*, has deemed it necessary to write a commentary on Gaudapāda’s *Kārikā*. This indicates the supreme importance and value of this treatise to the philosophy of Advaita Vedānta.

Who was Gaudapāda? Tradition makes him the teacher of Govinda who was the teacher of Śankara. It is said that Gaudapāda wrote, besides the *Kārikā* on *Māndūkya Upanishad*, commentaries on the *Sāṅkhya* system and *Uttara Gītā*. But there does not exist much evidence to support it. Ānandagiri says in his *Tikā* on Śankara’s commentary on the *Kārikā* (4-1) that Gaudapāda performed great austerities in the

¹⁶ xii

PREFACE

¹⁷ In this word symbol not found in Book Antiqua font so we have inserted from Tahoma

¹⁸ xiii

PREFACE

Badarikāśrama, in the interior of the Himālayas, in order to propitiate Nārāyana who is worshipped there as the God-Man. Nārāyana being pleased with his devotion revealed to him the secret of the Advaita Vedānta. Gaudapāda salutes this Nārāyana in the opening verse of the fourth chapter of the *Kārikā*. In the face of the controversy regarding the date of Śankara, the date of Gaudapāda cannot be definitely fixed. The generally accepted date of Śankara's birth, one agreed to by Bhāndārkar, Pāthak and Deussen, 788 A.D. is not free from objections. According to Swami Prajñānānanda Saraswati and a few other scholars, Śankara flourished before Christ. Some eminent scholars, by an examination of the literary style of Śankara and the historical and other references, push¹⁹ back his date to the second century B.C. Their contention cannot be lightly brushed aside. One fact, however, can be asserted without fear of contradiction that Gaudapāda is the solitary philosopher, known to us, who, before Śankara, gave a rational explanation of the Advaita Vedānta which is the objective of the Upanishadic teachings.

Even the *Sutras* of Bādarāyana are not free from *a priori* reasoning, that is, reasoning conditioned by the tradition and the authority of the Scriptures. It is only Gaudapāda that has successfully demonstrated in his *Kārikā* that the non-dual *Ātman* declared in the Upanishads as the Ultimate Reality is not a theological dogma, and that it does not depend upon the mystic experiences of the Yogis; but that it is a metaphysical truth which satisfies the demands of universal tests and which is based upon reason independent of scriptural authority. Gaudapāda, as already stated, follows, in the first chapter of his book, the traditional method of basing his conclusions on the authority of the Scriptures and demonstrates that the aim of the *Śruti* is to establish the non-dual *Ātman* as the ultimate authority. In the following chapters he re-establishes the same truth through reasoning alone and thus meets the arguments of the Buddhists and other thinkers who do not admit the authority of the Vedas. Śankara refers to this in his commentary on the first verses of the last three chapters of the *Kārikā*.

Here, we deem it necessary to review some of the observations of the latest among well-known authors. Professor²⁰ S.N. Das Gupta, M.A., Ph.D., in his celebrated work, *A History of Indian Philosophy*, (pp. 423–429) regarding Gaudapāda and his philosophy writes: "Gaudapāda thus flourished after all great Buddhist teachers Asvaghosha, Nāgārjuna, Asanga and Vāsubandhu, and I believe that there is sufficient evidence in his *Kārikās* for thinking that he was possibly himself a Buddhist, and considered that the teachings of the *Upanishads* tallied with those of *Buddha*. Thus at the beginning of the fourth chapter of his *Kārikās* he says that he adores that great man (*dwipadām*

¹⁹ xiv

PREFACE

²⁰ xv

PREFACE

varam) who by knowledge as wide as the sky realized (*sambuddha*) that all appearances (*Dharma*) were like the *vacuous sky* (*gaganopamam*). He thus goes on to say that he adores him who has dictated (*desita*) that the *touch of the untouch* (*Asparsa Yoga – probably referring to Nirvāna*) was the goal that produced happiness to all beings and that he was neither in disagreement with the doctrine nor found any contradiction in it (*avivāda aviruddhascha*).....In IV. 19 of his *Kārikā*, he again says that the *Buddhas* have shown that there is no coming into being in any way (*sarvathā buddhairajāti paridipitāh*). Again in IV. 4.2. he says that it was for those realists (*vastuvādis*), since they found things and could deal with them and were afraid of non-being, that the *Buddha* had spoken of origination (*jāti*). In IV. 90 he refers to *Agrayāna* which we know to be a name of *Mahāyāna*. Again, in IV. 98 and 99, he says that all *appearances* are ‘pure and vacuous’ by nature. These the *Buddha*, the²¹ emancipated one (*mukta*) and the leaders know. *It was said by Buddha that all appearances were knowledge. He then closes the Kārikās with an adoration which in all probability also refers to the Buddha*.....Gaudapāda does not indicate his preference one way or the other (*i.e.*, regarding the theories of creation), but describes the fourth state..... In the third chapter Gaudapāda says that truth is *like the void* (*Ākāśa*) which is conceived as taking part in birth and death, coming and going and as existing in all bodies, but, however it be conceived, it is all the while non-different from *Ākāśa*..... He should *awaken the mind (citta) into its final dissolution*..... All the *Dharmas* (appearances) are without death or decay. Gaudapāda then follows a dialectical form of argument which reminds us of Nāgārjuna..... All experiences (*prajñapti*) are *dependent on reasons*, for otherwise both would vanish..... When we look at all things in a connected manner they seem to be dependent, but when we look at them from the point of view of Reality or truth the *reason ceases to be reason*.....Therefore neither the mind nor the objects seen by it are ever produced. Those who perceive them to suffer production are really *traversing the reason of vacuity* (*Kha*).....*It is so obvious that these doctrines are borrowed from the Mādhyamika doctrines, as found in the Nāgārjuna Kārikās and Vijnānavāda doctrines as found in Lankāvatāra, that it is needless to attempt to prove it. Gaudapāda assimilated all the Buddhist Śūnyavāda and Vijnānavāda teachings²² and thought that these hold good of the ultimate truth preached by the Upanishads. It is immaterial whether he was a Hindu or a Buddhist, so long as we are sure that he had the highest respect for Buddha and for his teachings which he believed to be his*.....He only incidentally suggested that the great Buddhist truth of indefinable and unspeakable *Vijnāna* or *vacuity* would hold good of the highest *Ātman* of the Upanishads, and *thus laid the foundation* of a revival of the Upanishadic studies on Buddhist lines.....” (The English words in italics are ours.)

²¹ xvi

PREFACE

²² xvii

PREFACE

Our interpretation of the passages in the above quotation will be found in the body of the book. Prof. Das Gupta has given his own interpretation of the *Kārikā*, without attaching any value to the commentary of Śankara or the *Tikā* of Ānandagiri and it is clear from the point of view of Prof. Das Gupta that Śankara has failed to understand the sense of the *Kārikā*. This attempt of Prof. Das Gupta to interpret the *Kārikā* according to his own view is no doubt responsible for ascribing to Gaudapāda the views which, according to us, he never seems even to have dreamt of cherishing. Prof. Das Gupta tries to prove that Gaudapāda was *possibly* a Buddhist and that his philosophy was borrowed from Buddhism. We shall therefore offer a few words of criticism regarding the views of Prof. Das Gupta.

It has *not* been *settled* that Gaudapāda flourished after the Buddhist philosophers, Asvaghosha, Nāgārjuna, Asanga and Vāsubandhu. Some recent researches reveal²³ that he lived long before them. This is, however, a point for the student of history of literature. Further, the *standpoint* and the *conclusion* of Gaudapāda's philosophy, however, are *fundamentally different* from those of the Buddhist thinkers named above. There is no evidence in his *Kārikā* to show that Gaudapāda was *possibly a Buddhist*. There is positive proof on the other hand to show that he was not a Buddhist. Gaudapāda himself states, for instance, in the clearest possible language at the conclusion of the *Kārikā* (IV. 99) that "This (his own view) is not the view of Buddha." Śankara in his commentary of this *Kārikā* says that the essence of the Ultimate Reality, which is non-dual and which is free from multiplicity of the perceiver, perception and the perceived, has not been taught by Buddha. In its refutation of the reality of the external objects and in asserting that all objects are mere acts of mind (*manahspandanam*), the Buddhist *Vijnānavāda*, no doubt, approaches the non-dual consciousness of the Upanishads, but the knowledge of the non-dual *Ātman*, which alone is the Ultimate Reality, can be found in Vedānta alone. We are of opinion that Buddhist metaphysical thought is nearest to Gaudapāda's *kārikās*. Further corroboration can be found in Śankara's commentary on *Kārikās* IV. 28 and 83.

Prof. Das Gupta, in order to prove his conclusion, has given his own interpretations. One studying the Upanishads and the *kārikās* in accordance with the six canons (*lingam*) of interpretation, *viz.*, the beginning²⁴ and the conclusion (*upakrama and upasamhāra*), repetition (*abhyāsa*), originality (*apurvatā*), result (*phalam*), eulogy (*arthavāda*) and demonstration (*upapatti*), will find that the aims of the Upanishads and the *Kārikā* are identical, namely, the establishment of the non-dual self as the Ultimate Reality and this cannot be found in the teachings of the Buddhist philosophers.

²³ xviii

PREFACE

²⁴ xix

PREFACE

At the beginning of the fourth chapter of the *Kārikā*, Gaudapāda does not adore Buddha but Nārāyana who is worshipped in Badarikāśrama through the symbol of *Man*. The word *Dharma* used by Gaudapāda does not mean *appearance*. ‘*Dharma*’ literally means ‘attribute’, which is, according to the Vedānta philosophy, non-different from the substance—as the heat and the light are non-different from the sunshine. ‘*Dharma*’ is used by Gaudapāda to mean *Jiva* which if taken as attribute of Brahman is non-different from it. Gaudapāda has admirably proved in his *Kārikā* that all *Dharmas* or *Jivas* are identical with the non-dual Brahman and therefore they are ever-pure and ever-illuminated. The word ‘*Dharma*’ has been used in the plural sense in view of the multiplicity of the *Jivas* from the standpoint of empirical experience. Gaudapāda contends that what others, from their relative standpoint, take to be multiple *Jivas*, is nothing but non-dual Brahman. The analogy of *Dharma* to *Ākāśa*, based upon *vacuity*, is farfetched. The real point of analogy lies in their all-pervasiveness, purity and subtle nature. But *Dharma* is²⁵ not really identical with *Ākāśa* as the latter is known, from the empirical standpoint, to contain the element of insentientcy (*jada*). The adoration referred to in IV. 2 is not directed to Buddha, as hinted by Prof. Das Gupta, but to *Nārāyana*.

The translation of the word ‘*Asparsayoga*’ as the ‘touch of the untouch’ does not convey any meaning. It certainly does not refer to *Nirvāna* as suggested by Prof. Das Gupta, if *Nirvāna* means total annihilation. We prefer to translate the word as the *Yoga* which is not related to anything. Apparently there is a contradiction involved in the word. The word ‘*Asparsa*’ meaning freedom from relationship refers to the non-dual Brahman alone. But *Yoga* signifying union indicates duality. Gaudapāda designates the path of knowledge described in the *Kārikā* and in *Advaita Vedānta* as *Asparsayoga* inasmuch as the word *Yoga* was used in his time also to denote the method of attaining to the Ultimate Reality. In the *Bhagavadgītā*, for instance, *Yoga* is used in different senses. *Yoga* is also used in the broad sense, of ‘discipline’ or ‘path’. That this method is free from all relationship has been demonstrated in the *Kārikā*. The Ultimate Reality taught in the *Kārikā* and *Advaita Vedānta* cannot be *Nirvāna* if that word means, as is known from the study of some of the Buddhist writers, the total negation of everything. But whether Buddha himself used the word in that sense is doubtful. The non-dual Brahman taught (*vide* Chapter III and II. 23 of *Kārikā*) in the *Advaita Vedānta* is free from hostility and²⁶ contradiction as according to this philosophy non-dual Brahman alone exists. Hostility and contradiction are inherent in all dualistic systems of thought.

Gaudapāda has, no doubt, used the word ‘Buddha’ several times in the *Kārikā*. But the word does not refer to the traditional founder of Buddhism, as Prof. Das Gupta

²⁵ xx

PREFACE

²⁶ xxi

PREFACE

seems to suggest. It only means the knower of Truth. The word 'Agrayāna' in IV. 90 may be made to indicate 'Mahāyāna' only by a fanciful resemblance of words. The word really means 'Prathamatah' i.e., in the first place, otherwise one cannot get any meaning out of the *Kārikā* text in which the word occurs.

Prof. Das Gupta complains that Gaudapāda 'does not indicate his preference one way or other' regarding the theory of creation. In the *Āgama Prakarana* (*Kārikā*, 7-9) he enumerates several current theories of creation given by those who accept creation as a fact. He calls these theorists mere speculators on the process of creation (*srstichintakāh*). Those to whom creation is real are certainly at liberty to advance any theory according to their tastes. But none of these speculators proves the *reality* of creation on rational grounds. Gaudapāda is not in the least interested in these theories. He questions the reality of the *act* of creation, from the standpoint of the ultimate truth. Creation may be a fact to those who, like children, take empirical knowledge to be ultimate truth. Creation may be a fact to those who, like children, take empirical knowledge to be ultimate truth. Gaudapāda, throughout his *Kārikā* and particularly in the fourth chapter, clearly demonstrates that the category of causality cannot be applied to the non-dual *Ātman*. Absolute non-manifestation²⁷ (*ajāti*) is the only truth. Centuries before Hume and Bradley, Gaudapāda proved that causality has no basis in fact. Creation indicates an unsatisfied desire on the part of the creator. If the Ultimate Reality be complete or perfect in itself and self-satiated (*āptakāma*), then the *act* of creation can never be predicated of it. Hegel contradicts himself when he says that a logical necessity impels the evolution of the Absolute. Schelling's explanation that the evolution of the Absolute into ego and non-ego can only be understood by an *intellectual intuition*, is mysticism or mystification, but not rational truth. If there be no creation how can one explain the multiplicity of empirical experience in the universe? Gaudapāda by an inexorable logic proves that this is the *very nature* of the Effulgent Being (*Devasya esha svabhāvah*). Whatever one experiences is only non-dual Brahman. All this is verily Brahman. Non-dual Brahman alone is. Diagnosis of the headache of a headless man (*kabandha*) is ludicrous and irrelevant. If the manifested manifold had ever existed, then one would think of its origination or destruction. That we see duality is due to our ignorance of the true nature of Reality which is non-dual Brahman. Again this ignorance (*Māyā*) does not exist from the standpoint of Reality. *Māyā* is only an explanation of creation given by those who *hold* creation to be a *fact*. Therefore Gaudapāda sums up his philosophy, 'None (is) in bondage, none liberated, this is the ultimate truth' (II. 32). 'No *Jiva* is ever born. Such birth is unreal. This indeed²⁸ is the highest truth that nothing whatsoever is born' (III. 48).

²⁷ xxii

PREFACE

²⁸ xxiii

PREFACE

Gaudapāda, no doubt, says that *Ātman* is like *Ākāśa* (III. 3). But voidness is not the point of analogy. He intends to convey the idea that *Ātman*, like the *Ākāśa* is subtle, without parts and all-pervading. Gaudapāda was well aware of the fallacy of Nāgārjuna's reasoning. Void or a negation cannot be the substratum of an illusion. The illusion of the mirage, the snake or the silver must have a positive substratum in the form of the desert, the rope or the mother-o'-pearl. Śankara aptly criticises the position of the Buddhist nihilists as lacking in intelligence, for they, in spite of the very fact of cognition and experience, describe every thing, including their own experience, as mere void. Therefore the Ultimate Reality is not void or a negation. Without a positive Reality we cannot affirm our empirical experience. But this affirmation is not a *co-relative* of negation. Our relative experiences have the dual predicates of affirmation and negation. The Ultimate Reality is free from affirmation and negation, the inevitable characteristics of the relative.

The translation of the first line of the 44th *Kārikā* of the third chapter as "He should awaken the 'mind' (*citta*) into its final dissolution (*laya*)" does not convey the correct meaning. Gaudapāda uses the word '*laya*' in the sense of deep sleep or *Yogic Samādhi*. *Samādhi* is the last word of the Yoga mystics. According to Gaudapāda this is an obstacle to the realisation of truth. The seeking of pleasure in *Samādhi* shows an exhaustion²⁹ of the inquiring mind. It is because the Yogis look upon mind as separate from *Ātman*, that they seek to control it in *Samādhi*. But Gaudapāda says that the mind is the non-dual *Ātman*. Therefore there does not arise any question of controlling it. The mind and its activities (*prachāra*, Comp. III. 34) are nothing but non-dual Brahman, ever-pure, ever-free and ever-illuminated. It is only due to ignorance that one perceives the duality of the subject-object relationship in the activities of the mind. But a knower of truth perceives everywhere and in all activities only the non-dual Brahman (*Gitā*, IV. 24). Hence Gaudapāda warns the student against the trap of the *Yogic Samādhi*, as described in the line quoted above (III. 44) which really means that one should awaken the mind from the (inertia of) *laya* (*Samādhi* or deep sleep) by the repeated practice of discrimination. The *Vedāntic Samādhi* does not signify the realization of Truth with closed eyes. It means the vision of Truth with eyes open on every object. A Vedāntist thus describes the *Samādhi*, "With the disappearance of the attachment to the body and with the realization of the Supreme Self, to whatever object the mind is directed, one experiences *Samādhi*."

All *Dharmas* according to Gaudapāda, are without death or decay (IV. 10). Prof. Das Gupta, as we have already pointed out, wrongly translates *Dharma* as *appearance*. 'Appearance' is certainly attended with disappearance, *i.e.*, death and decay. For, Gaudapāda rightly defines appearance and illusion as that which³⁰ does not exist at the

²⁹ xxiv

³⁰ xxv

beginning or at the end (II. 6). Any appearance is perceived by *Atman* only so long as that particular condition of his mind which gives rise to the appearance lasts. But *Dharma* can be said to be without decay or death only if it means *Jiva* which is the same as the non-dual Brahman.

We are afraid the translation of the 24th *Kārikā* (Chapter IV) as “all experience is dependent on reasons” (*sanimitatvam*) is not correct. This *Kārikā* gives the view of the opponent (*Purvapaksha*) who asserts the reality of the external objects. The opponent says that all subjective experiences have their ‘cause’ (not ‘reason’) in external objects as otherwise there would exist no variety in experience. Further as no true explanation can be given of the pain and misery we experience, Gaudapāda refutes the view of the realists with the arguments of the Buddhist idealists in the next *Kārikā*. Gaudapāda says: If this be the contention of the opponent that external world or objects create subjective idea, we ask, What causes the external world or objects? The realist cannot point out any such cause. Hence the argument of causality based upon such experience fails. The position is summed up in the statement that the argument of so-called external cause (*viz.*, the external objects) is not valid. A knower of truth does not see any object other than ideas which, being identical with the mind, are the same as the non-dual Brahman. In IV.28 Gaudapāda refutes the Buddhist idealists (*Vijnānavādins*) as well. He quotes the views of the *Vijnānavādins*³¹ for the refutation of the realistic theory of consciousness which is, according to that school of thought, momentary, subject to birth and death and full of misery. He says that those who hold mind to be subject to birth and death, etc., are really like those who seek to trace the foot-prints of birds in the sky. The translation of this *Kārikā* (IV. 28) as “Those who.....vacuity” given by Prof. Das Gupta, does not seem to be correct.

As we have already stated, Prof. Das Gupta tries to prove that Gaudapāda has borrowed his ideas from the Buddhist philosophers. His criticism and estimate of *Kārikā* appear to be prejudiced. Gaudapāda may have “assimilated all the Buddhist *Sunyavāda* and *Vijnānavāda* teachings,” but this does not prove that he “thought that these hold good of the Ultimate Truth preached by the Upanishads.” Madhusudan Saraswati and Vāchaspati Misra may have assimilated the entire Nyāya system of thought but this does not prove that the Nyāya views hold good of the truth established in the Advaita Siddhi or Bhāmati. Every philosopher, worth the name, studies contemporary systems of thought. He may even borrow some lines of arguments from others for purposes of explanation. Śankara himself has done so. But it is a travesty of truth to call Śankara a crypto- Buddhist. (Prachchanna Bauddha), as some of the dualists have done. We have not seen anywhere in the *Kārikā* Gaudapāda saying that he is a believer in Buddha, the founder of Buddhism.

Granting³² that Gaudapāda had “the highest respect for Buddha”, every Hindu and every lover of truth cherishes a similar feeling of the highest regard for the Compassionate One. But this does not prove that they necessarily accept all that Buddha or Buddhism teaches. In fact the Hindus recognised centuries ago and even now recognise Buddha as one of the *Avatārs* of *Vishnu* like Rāma and Krishna. Gaudapāda does not certainly “incidentally suggest that the great Buddhist truth of indefinable and unspeakable *Vijnāna* or vacuity would hold good of the highest *Ātman* of the Upanishads.” To assert this is to pervert the real import of the *Kārikā*. On the other hand, Gaudapāda emphatically declares (IV. 28) that he accepts the conclusion of the Buddhist *Vijānavādins* in order to refute the realist’s contention of the reality of the external objects. But neither the *Vijānavādins* nor the *Śunyahādins* have got anything to say regarding the non-dual *Ātman*, which can be realized only through the rigorous pursuit of truth which the Advaita system alone does. Gaudapāda does not let an opportunity pass without criticising the *Mādhyamika* view of absolute nihilism. The estimate of Gaudapāda and his *Kārikā* as given by Prof. Das Gupta in his *History of Indian Philosophy*, does not indicate the high water-mark of unbiassed judgment.

Prof. Radhakrishnan gives an estimate of Gaudapāda’s philosophy in his well-known *Indian Philosophy* (Vol. II, pp. 452-465). He thinks the use³³ of some words in the *Kārikā* is peculiarly Buddhistic. We have answered this point in our criticism of Prof. Das Gupta’s remarks. It may be stated here that it is a favourite method of Gaudapāda and Śankara to put one school of thought against another and ultimately show the untenability of both. Even the conclusions of the Buddhist philosophers can be found in some place or other of the Upanishads. It only proves the fact that at that time certain philosophical terms were the common property of Indian thought in general. One cannot accuse a modern philosopher if he uses the arguments of modern science in order to refute the contentions of his opponents or establish his own position.

Prof. Radhakrishnan says that both “Bādarāyana and Śankara strongly urge that there is a genuine difference between dream experience and the waking one and that the latter is not independent of existing objects.” According to Gaudapāda there is no difference between the dream and the waking states from the standpoint of the Ultimate Reality. Thus an attempt is made to point out the difference between Gaudapāda’s system and that of Śankara. Again it is said that “in Gaudapāda the negative tendency is more prominent than the positive. In Śankara we have a more balanced outlook.” We disagree with Prof. Radhakrishnan. In his commentary on *Brahma Sutras* Śankara, no doubt, makes a distinction between the waking and the

³² xxvii

PREFACE

³³ xxviii

PREFACE

dream states. But that is done from the empirical standpoint³⁴. We have³⁵ not seen Śankara anywhere declaring the reality³⁶ of both the states, from the standpoint of Ultimate Truth. Gaudapāda also admits the two states of waking and dream on the empirical plane, in which our experiences are associated with external objects and their absence (IV. 87). But the next *Kārikā* indicates the Ultimate Reality to be that in which there is neither any object, nor the idea of experiencing it. We do not know of any difference between the thoughts of Śankara and Gaudapāda. Had it been so Śankara would not have written a commentary on the *Kārikā*. Nowhere in his explanation of the *Kārikā* does Śankara point out his disagreement with the views of Gaudapāda. It cannot be said that the views of Śankara as embodied in the commentary on the *Kārikā* are different from those expounded in the commentaries on the Upanishads, the *Brahma-Sutras* and the *Gītā*. Even the acutest critic of Śankara has not been able to point out any inconsistency in the writings of Śankara.

Sir Radhakrishnan makes the following remarks regarding the philosophy of Gaudapāda: “The general idea pervading Gaudapāda’s work, that bondage and liberation, the individual soul and the world, are all unreal, makes the caustic critic observe that the theory which has nothing better to say than that an unreal soul in trying to escape from an unreal bondage in an unreal world to accomplish an unreal supreme good, may itself be an unreality. It is one thing to say that the secret of existence, how the unchangeable reality expresses³⁷ itself in the changing universe without forfeiting its nature is a mystery, and another to dismiss the whole changing universe, as a mere mirage. If we have to play the game of life, we cannot do so with the conviction that the play is a show and all the prizes in it are mere blanks. No philosophy can consistently hold such a theory and be at rest with itself. The greatest condemnation of such a theory is that we are obliged to occupy ourselves with objects, the existence and value of which we are continually denying in theory. The fact of the world may be mysterious and inexplicable. It only shows that there is something else which includes and transcends the world; but it does not imply that the world is a dream.”

The main difference between the Advaita and other systems of thought is that the former does not find any reason for believing in the *reality* of the process of becoming whereas the latter pin their faith to evolution, creation or manifestation as *real*. Some Advaitic philosophers in order to explain the *fact* of the manifested manifold (which is perceived) adopt their theory of *Vivarta* according to which Brahman *appears*

³⁴ The original editor underlined by hand

³⁵ xxix

PREFACE

³⁶ The original editor underlined by hand

³⁷ xxx

PREFACE

as the world without forfeiting its essential nature. It is like the rope appearing as the snake. Other schools of thought give other explanations of the process of becoming and not one of these explanations can be supported by reason. Gaudapāda by an irrefutable logic disproves the reality of causation in the fourth chapter of *Kārikā*, and posits the *Ajātavāda* according³⁸ to which Brahman or Reality *has never become* the universe. No one can ever prove the apparent mystery of one becoming the many, for, the many does never really exist.

Neither Gaudapāda nor Śankara ignores those who believe in the reality of the external objects or of the manifested manifold on account of their perceiving those objects through the instrumentality of the sense organs or their attachment to the particular avocations of life (IV. 42). They are generous enough to say that any defect that may attach to the belief in the reality of the external objects is not at all serious. If these realists will only pursue truth they will see that to the non-dual *Ātman* causality or duality can never be applied (IV. 42). The generality of mankind bereft of the power of discrimination is, no doubt, satisfied with empirical experience. Let it do so. But it is the aim of the philosopher that is bent upon the discrimination of the real and the unreal to point out the truth, the Ultimate Reality even if it proves the unreality of the tinsels and baubles of sense-perception. The non-discriminating mind, no doubt, plunges headlong into the play of life taking every experience to be real and takes the prizes of such experience. But it is only a philosophic mind that sees that the so-called play is but an unreal 'shadow show' and all the prizes are mere blanks. Is that not also the conviction of all sober-minded persons, when they, in their maturity of thought, take a retrospective view of life?

There³⁹ are two ways of enjoying a theatrical show. Both spectators and those who take part in the show enjoy it. The actors identify themselves with their respective characters and take the show as real. Therefore they cannot be said to enjoy the show in reality. But the spectators on account of their detached outlook, with their knowledge of the unreality of the show, really enjoy it.

The existence of external objects depends upon the belief that they exist (IV. 75). No one has yet been able rationally to demonstrate that things exist independently of the perceiver's mind. Even the thing-in-itself of Kant is a mere hypothesis based upon the *belief* in causality. Kant by making the things-in-themselves which are beyond the categories of time, space and causality, the cause of the phenomena is inconsistent with himself. But, a mere belief in the existence of the external objects does not prove the reality of their existence. Even in common parlance it is said that all that glitters is not

³⁸ xxxi

PREFACE

³⁹ xxxii

PREFACE

gold. The 'hay, wood and stubbles' of the world, when tested by the fire of the philosopher's reasoning, are found to be unreal. It is certainly not irrational in a philosopher to pursue truth and to demonstrate that the game of life which he plays is a mere show and that 'all the prizes in it are mere blanks'. All of us, in a rare moment of discrimination and reflection, realise that 'the world is a dream'. To our utter disillusionment we ultimately discover that we occupy ourselves with objects the existence and value of which must really⁴⁰ be no more than those of appearances. A student must be disappointed if he expects Advaita Vedānta to point out to him the means of enjoying pleasures, which depend upon the subject-object relationship, which is based upon duality of existence. The only aim of Vedānta is to dehypnotise the mind which has been hypnotised into the belief that duality really exists. The only positive satisfaction guaranteed to a Vedāntist is that he will no longer be deluded by ignorance which paints the unreal or the seeming as the real. For, in the language of Śankara, the knowledge of Reality destroys one's hankering after objects which are unreal just as the knowledge of the mother-o'-pearl (mistaken for silver) removes the delusion regarding the silver. This knowledge may be chimerical to those who are still attached to the tinsels and gew-gaws of the world and the prizes it offers; but it is of supreme value to the seeker of Reality.

Sir S. Radhakrishnan seems to suggest that Śankara thinks waking experiences to be more real than the dream ones. This view may be true from the non-philosophical standpoint. The distinction between the reality of the waking and that of the dream experiences is said to depend upon the sense-organs apparently indicating reality. We create a false standard of reality in our relative plane of consciousness and thus hold one set of experiences to be more real than another. But does Śankara say anywhere that waking experiences are real from the standpoint of the Ultimate Truth? All our experiences, whether waking⁴¹ or dream, are possible if we believe the act of creation to be real. What is the view of Śankara regarding creation? When the opponent (*Purva-pakshin*) tries to find inconsistencies in the different accounts of creation given in the Vedas, Śankara says in various places, for instance, in the introduction to the fourth chapter of the *Aitareya Upanished* as follows: "Here (*i.e.*, the theories and stories of creation), the only fact intended to be conveyed is the realization of *Ātman*, the rest is but attractive figure of speech; and this is no fault. It seems to be more reasonable that the Lord, omniscient, omnipotent, did, like a magician, display all this illusion to facilitate explanation or comprehension, inasmuch as stories, although false, are easily understood by all. It is well known that there is no truth to be attained from accounts of

⁴⁰ xxxiii

⁴¹ xxxiv

creation (as they are false); and it is well established in all the Upanishads that the end attained by the conception of the unity of the Real Self is Immortality." Does it differ from the views expressed by Gaudapāda regarding creation? He also says: "Evolution or creation as described by illustrations of earth, iron, sparks of fire, etc., has another meaning, *viz.*, they are only the means to the realization of the unity of Existence. There is nothing like distinction (in it)" (III. 15).

Does Vedānta take away from man his zeal for work? Does Vedānta teach pessimism? Many a Western and Eastern critic of the philosophy of Advaita holds that it makes a man only a dreamer,⁴² a sky-gazing spectator. This is a wrong interpretation of Vedānta. Vedānta never teaches one to fly away from the world or to shut himself up in caves and forests. Many a poetic picture has been drawn of the Vedāntic seer living the life of a recluse far away from the maddening crowd of ignoble strife. But this is not true. Śankara, 'the lion of Vedānta,' Swami Vivekānanda, 'the paragon of the Vedāntists' (as Prof. James of America characterised him) of the modern times, lived in human society and made the mightiest efforts for the uplift of humanity. They dedicated their lives to the amelioration of mankind. Vedānta has nothing to do with pessimism or optimism, or any 'ism' for the matter of that. It only teaches Truth. If the realization of Truth stand as an impediment to human progress, then the charge against Vedānta as the enemy of progress may be well justified. Nothing wonderful will happen to the world if the entire mankind be converted to Hinduism, Christianity, Buddhism, or Islam or to any other religion. But assuredly something marvellous will happen if a dozen of men and women pierce the thick walls of the church, temple, synagogue and realize the Truth. Again Truth is no monopoly of a recluse or a misanthrope or a bigoted thinker. The ancient *Rishis* of the Upanishads breathed the free air of Truth, sang the song of freedom and enjoyed the truth of life. Many of their highest teachings were imparted in the crowded courts of kings. The message of the *Gītā*, the excellent *vade mecum* of Vedānta, was delivered on the battlefield, where⁴³ the grimmest realities of life were faced and battles fought. Arjuna after realizing the Vedāntic Truth did not flee away from the world, but girded his loins with fresh vigour and strength to discharge his duty (*svadharma*). After Sri Krishna had delivered his message, Arjuna said, "Destroyed is my delusion, and I have got back the memory of my real nature through Thy grace, Oh Krishna. I am now firm, my doubts are gone. I will carry out Thy word." Straightway he plunged into the terrible battle of Kurukshetra and performed his duty.

Renascence of Indian life, in its various aspects, political, social, material, æsthetic and religious, always followed the restoration of the Truth of Advaita to its pristine

⁴² xxxv

PREFACE

⁴³ xxxvi

PREFACE

glory. The Upanishads, the *Gītā*, Buddha, Śankara and Ramakrishna stand at the crest of the mighty tidal waves of India's renaissance. And all of them taught the essential truth of Vedanta in different forms.

The greatest tragedy of life is to think that no work is possible without a firm belief in duality and subject-object relationship. Men say that no work is possible without the consciousness of egoism and agency. On the other hand selfishness, sordidness, jealousy, passion, etc., which are manifested in our daily activities, are due to a belief in the reality of the subject-object relationship. The mightiest achievements that have really transformed the fate of humanity have been done by those who have had no thought of their ego. Sri Krishna says in the *Gītā*, "He who is free⁴⁴ from the notion of egoism, whose intelligence is not affected (by good or evil), though he kills these people, he kills them not, not is bound (by action)." The artist or the musician shows himself at his best when he feels himself one with his art. Sri Ramakrishna never had the idea of agency in the work of his spiritual ministrations. He used to say, "Perform your work keeping always the knowledge of Advaita in your pocket."

Is it possible to do any work which always implies the triad of perceiver, perceived and perception, if one be established in non-dual Brahman? The idea may involve a logical or psychological contradiction, but this position can be fully justified from the metaphysical standpoint. One pursuing Truth disinterestedly, when once established in Advaitic Truth, can see this world of multiplicity and at the same time know it to be the non-dual Brahman, pure, free, and ever-illuminated. A knower of Truth may move and act in the world like an ordinary man. He feels hungry and thirsty. He goes to sleep when tired. He feels compassion for the misery of others and tries his utmost to alleviate it; but at the same time he sees everywhere the non-dual Brahman alone, ever-free and ever-pure. Sri Krishna also says in the *Gītā*, "The offering is Brahman, the clarified butter is Brahman, in the fire of Brahman offered by Brahman, by seeing Brahman in actions, he reaches Brahman alone" (*Gītā*, IV. 24). We admit that this position is most difficult to be comprehended by those who are not⁴⁵ trained in Advaita. Truly says Gaudapāda, "Those few alone are known in the world as of high intellect who are firm in their conviction of the unborn and undivided Brahman. The ordinary people cannot understand them or their action" (IV. 95). He himself characterises the teachings of *Kārikā* as very deep (*atigambhiram*) and extremely difficult to be understood (*durdarsam*) (IV. 100).

The superficial critic often asks how it is possible to apply the teachings of Vedānta to our practical everyday life, if we are taught continually to think of the unreality of the

⁴⁴ xxxvii

PREFACE

⁴⁵ xxxviii

PREFACE

world. How can the truth of non-dual Brahman, as taught by the Vedānta, help one to work for individual or collective progress? Vedānta certainly does not help us to bring grist to our individual or national mill. It certainly does not tell us how to increase our capacity to enjoy the pleasures derived from material objects. But Vedānta really teaches us how to enjoy the world after realizing its true nature. To embrace the universe after realizing it as the non-dual Brahman, gives us peace that passeth all understanding. Says the seer in the *Iśa Upanishad*, “All this – whatsoever moves in the earth – should be realized as permeated by the Lord (*Ātman*). Enjoy (the world) by renunciation (of the illusory names and forms). Covet not anybody’s wealth.” Does Vedānta really ask us to negate the world? Does it really teach us to negate the existing objects? A student of the *Kārikā* will at once realize that there is nothing to be negated or added. That which exists can⁴⁶ never be non-existent. Brahman alone is existent on account of its persistence in all acts of cognition. Names, forms and relations are illusory on account of their changeability and negatability. Vedānta teaches us to realize the world as Brahman and then be one with it. Vedānta teaches us to see Brahman everywhere even in the so-called illusion. An illusion can never be real and it is perceived on account of our ignorance. A Vedāntist does not negate the world which, being Brahman, can never be negated. It only asks the student to know the real nature of the world. A knower of truth, as we have already stated, does his duty or work in the world. But the knowledge of Truth makes all the difference in his attitude towards the world. Where the ignorant person sees non-Brahman, the *Jnāni* realizes Brahman alone. A *Jnāni* just exercises his understanding, and then uses the same sense-organs in dealing with the same external objects. He sees everywhere the non-dual Brahman.

One often hears in Europe and America that Vedānta is pantheism or idealism. Many foreign critics characterise Vedānta as illusionism. The critics only look at the Vedāntic truth from the relative standpoint. From the standpoint of the Ultimate Truth Vedānta is not idealism, as it does not see, in the Platonic fashion, the duality of illusory external objects and the reality of ideas. Nor does Vedānta teach, like the Buddhist idealists, that ideas, which alone are real, have birth, death and the characteristics of misery. Vedāntic⁴⁷ truth is different from Kantian dualism which makes a distinction between noumena and phenomena. Berkley says that all external objects are but ideas in the perceivers mind and God or the cosmic mind sends these ideas. Vedānta says that God is also an idea and the plurality of ideas and their relationship cannot be proved to be real. Vedānta is not certainly pantheism as it does not recognize any God, independent of the Self, who is the universe. Vedānta denies causality from the highest standpoint and thus invalidates the process of becoming. Vedānta, like Hegel, says that Reality is thought but denies the evolution of the Absolute. Bradley says that time,

⁴⁶ xxxix

PREFACE

⁴⁷ xl

PREFACE

space, or causal relation cannot apply to the Absolute but at the same time he says that the Absolute 'somehow' becomes the manifested manifold. Gaudapāda denies the manifestation, evolution or the becoming of *Ātman*.

The conclusion of Vedānta can be summed up in four words "All this is Brahman." Only the non-dual Brahman exists. There is no phenomenal *Jiva* about whom birth and death can be predicated. If one sees such birth, etc., it is due to his ignorance of the nature of Reality. Again this ignorance is not real (IV. 58). *Jivas* are all peace from the very beginning, ever unproduced and indestructible by their very nature, and therefore, eternal and inseparable. All this is unborn and enlightened Brahman (IV. 93). The *Jivas* are ever free from any obstruction (as obstruction does not exist) being entirely pure by nature. They are⁴⁸ all-light and ever-liberated from the beginning (IV. 98). As Brahman alone exists there is nothing which can be accepted nor anything injurious which can be shunned.

The Teachings of Gaudapāda can benefit only those that are equipped with the *Sādhana Chatushtaya* or the fourfold pre-requisites of philosophical discipline, such as discrimination, non-attachment (renunciation), self-control and an irrepressible hankering after the realization of Truth. Any one who undertakes the study of the *Kārikā* in a dilettante fashion will see in it nothing but confusion and may even be misled. Gaudapāda has dealt with all the problems of philosophy following the scientific method of the modern times. The careful reader will find in the *Kārikā* the solution of such outstanding problems of philosophy as perception, idealism, causality, truth, Reality, etc. Every verse of the *Kārikā* demands profound thinking before it can be understood and appreciated. *But people will rather die than think*. The glory and value of the *Māndūkya Upanishad* has been infinitely enhanced by the *Kārikā* of Gaudapāda.

We are not aware of any other English translation of the *Māndūkya Upanishad* with the *Kārikā* and Śankara's commentary than the one by Manilal N. Dvivedi published in 1894. For the most part the translation is reliable and we have looked into it while preparing our translation. We have felt that exhaustive notes are necessary for the average reader to understand the real import of the *Kārikā* and Śankara's commentary.⁴⁹ Therefore we have tried to elucidate Gaudapāda and Śankara with copious notes.

⁴⁸ xli

⁴⁹ xlii

We are profoundly grateful to Mr V. Subrahmanya Iyer, the retired Registrar of the Mysore University, for explaining to us the abstruse philosophy of the *Kārikā*. Mr Iyer, the courageous thinker, taught us that no philosophy can live to-day in anything but a fool's paradise, unless it ventures out into the open but biting air of critical reason as natural science does. Philosophy, like science, is vitally concerned with reasoned or rationally demonstrable truth and must not depend upon mere mystic vision or tradition or authority. The seed which ripens into vision may be a gift of the gods but the labour of cultivating it so that it may bear nourishing fruit is the indispensable function of arduous scientific or rational processes of thought. Mr Subrahmanya Iyer has laid us under an additional debt of obligation by revising the entire book in its manuscript form and agreeing to stand sponsor to it in placing it before the public.

Above all, we cannot adequately express our deep sense of indebtedness to the distinguished Ruler of Mysore, His Highness the Maharaja, Sri Krishnaraja Wadiyar Bahadur IV. Not only his philosophic knowledge, but also his philosophic life, has become a household word in the State and throughout India. The days that we spent breathing the spiritual atmosphere created all around by the Temple on the Chamundi Hill, at the foot of which is situated His Highness's famous and picturesque capital, were among the happiest.⁵⁰ His great devotion to Sri Ramakrishna, the teacher of Universal Love, lends an additional charm to his life. And we felt that the best way in which we could acknowledge all that we owe to Mysore and its famous Ruler would be to bring out a work of this kind, associating it with the name of the royal Vedāntin, who is himself an ardent admirer of Sri Gaudapāda.

Vedānta Society, Providence, SWAMI NIKHILANANDA.

Rhode Island, U.S.A.,

24th June, 1932.

Aum Salutation to Brahman.⁵¹

THE MĀNDŪKYOPANISHAD.

VEDIC INVOCATION.

O Gods! Auspicious sounds may we hear with the ears. Auspicious forms may we behold with the eyes. May we, full of praise of the Highest, enjoy, in healthy body with perfect limbs, our allotted years, (may we be) the beloved of the Gods.

⁵⁰ xliii

PREFACE

⁵¹ 1

Aum Peace! Peace! Peace!

INVOCATION BY ŚANKARA.

I bow to that Brahman that (during the waking state) after having enjoyed (experienced) all gross objects by pervading the entire universe through the omnipresent rays of its immutable consciousness that embraces the entire variety of the movable and the immovable objects; that again, after having digested, as it were, — that is to say, experienced within (in the dream state) — all the variety of objects produced by desires and brought into existence by the mind, enjoys bliss in deep sleep and makes us experience through *Māyā*, the bliss; which, further, is designated, in terms of *Māyā*, as the fourth (*Turiyā*), and which is supreme, immortal and changeless.

May that *Turiyā* that, (through *Māyā*) having identified itself as the entire universe, experiences (in the waking state)⁵² the manifold gross objects of enjoyment through ignorance and attachment, that again during the dream state, experiences, being enlightened by its own light, the subtle objects of enjoyment, the objects that are brought into existence by its own internal organ, and which, lastly, in dreamless sleep withdraws all objects (subtle as well as gross) within itself and thus becomes free from all distinctions and differences, — (May this *Turiyā* that) is ever devoid of all attributes, protect us.

ŚANKARA'S INTRODUCTION TO THE UPANISHAD COMMENTRY.

With the word *Aum*, etc., begins the treatise, consisting of four¹ chapters, the quintessence² of the substance³ of the import of Vedānta.⁴ Hence⁵ no separate mention

52 2

THE MĀNDŪKYOPANISHAD

¹ *Four chapters* — i.e., the *Māndūkyaopaniṣad* with the *Kārikā* by Gaudapāda treated in four chapters: viz., the *Āgama Prakarana*, the *Vaitathya Prakarana*, the *Advaita Prakarana* and the *Alātaḡāti Prakarana*. The mere Upanishadic portion without the *Kārikā* does not present a full view of the *philosophic* system of Vedānta which seeks to interpret human knowledge as a whole (*vide* Foreword).

² *Quintessence* — It is because the *Māndūkya Śruti* confines itself only to the establishment of non-duality without controverting the doctrines of the other systems. *Māndūkyaopaniṣad* aptly describes that *Māndūkya* alone, among the Upanishads, is sufficient for liberation (the attainment of truth). Cf. ("Hindi passage omitted here")

³ *Substance* — The doctrine of the non-difference of *Jiva* and Brahman.

⁴ *Vedānta* — It literally means the last portion of the Vedas which is identical with the Upanishads. The word also signifies the essence of the Vedas. Vedāntic works usually deal with the following: the fitness of a pupil for the study of *Brahmavidya*, the qualification of the teacher, the nature of *Jiva* and Brahman, and finally the non-difference or non-duality of the two.

is made of the (mutual) relationship, the subject-matter and the object to be attained (Matters usually stated in an introduction to a study of any Vedāntic treatise). For, that which constitutes the relationship, the subject-matter and the object of the Vedāntic study is evident here. Nevertheless, that one desirous of explaining a *Prakarana* (treatise), should deal with them is the opinion of the scholastic. This treatise must be said to contain a subject-matter on account of its revealing⁶ the means (for the realization of *Ātman*) that serves the purpose, or the end to be attained. It therefore possesses, though indirectly, 'specific relationship', 'subject-matter' and 'the end to be attained'. What then, is that end⁷ in view? It is thus explained: As a man stricken with disease regains⁵³ his normal⁸ state with the removal⁹ of (the cause of) the disease, so the self labouring under mis-apprehension, owing to identification¹⁰ of itself with misery, recovers its normal¹¹ state with the cessation (of the illusion) of duality, which manifests itself as the phenomenal universe. This realization of non-duality is the end to be attained. This treatise is begun for the purpose of revealing¹² Brahman inasmuch as by

⁵ Hence, etc. — Śankara treats the *Māndūkyopaniṣad* and the *Kārikā* not as a *Sāstra* but as a *Prakarana* (treatise). A *Sāstra* though related to a particular end in view deals with varieties of topics. But a *Prakarana* is a short manual which confines itself to some essential topics of a *Sāstra*. All the arguments of the *Māndūkyopaniṣad* with *Kārikā* ultimately point to the establishment of the attributeless Brahman, thus serving the purpose of a *Prakarana* which is defined as follows: —

("Hindi passage omitted here")

The other Vedāntic texts also establish the truth of non-duality but they incidentally discuss various other philosophical doctrines.

A *Prakarana* (treatise) has four indispensable elements ("Hindi passage omitted here") literally, "what sticks to another", namely, the determination of the fitness of the student for the study of the treatise ("Hindi passage omitted here"), the subject-matter ("Hindi passage omitted here"), the mutual relationship ("Hindi passage omitted here") between the treatise and the subject-matter (which is that of the explainer and the explained) and the object to be attained by the study, i.e., its utility ("Hindi passage omitted here").

⁶ *Revealing, etc.* — Though liberation is attained through the knowledge of the non-duality of *Jiva* and Brahman and not as a result of the study of scriptures, yet the scriptures indirectly help the attainment, of this knowledge by pointing to the illusory character of duality.

⁷ *Object* — Is the knowledge something to be produced or is it ever-existent? In the former case, it would be like other effects, impermanent, and in the latter case, the means pursued would be futile. The reply is that though the Knowledge of *Ātman* is eternally existent, yet it is obscured by ignorance in the *Jiva*. The aim of *Sādhanā* is to remove this obstruction. Thus *Sādhanā* serves a useful purpose though it does not make the student attain anything new.

53 3

THE MĀNDŪKYOPANISHAD

⁸ *Normal state* — The sick man thinks that he has lost the normal state during the period of his illness.

⁹ *Removal, etc.* — This is done by means of medicine, etc.

¹⁰ *Identification, etc.* — This suffering is due to the illusion of duality, such as egoism, etc., caused by ignorance which does not exist in reality. Otherwise its destruction would be an impossibility.

¹¹ *Normal slate* — This state being in itself perfect, cannot be transcended by any other state.

¹² *Revealing, etc.* — This is done by the removal of ignorance which is the cause of the illusion of duality.

knowledge (*Vidyā*) the illusion of duality, caused by ignorance, is destroyed. This is established by such scriptural passages as: 'For where there is, as it were, duality,' 'where there exists, as it were, another, there one sees another, and one knows another. But where all this has, verily, become *Ātman* (for one), how should one see another, how should one know another?'

The first chapter, then, seeks, by dealing specifically with the Vedic texts,¹³ to indicate the (traditional) means to the realization of the essential nature of *Ātman* and is devoted to the determination¹⁴ of the meaning of *Aum*. The second chapter seeks rationally¹⁵ to demonstrate the unreality of duality; the illusion (duality) being destroyed, the knowledge of non-duality (becomes evident), as the cessation of the imagination of snake, etc., in the rope reveals the real nature of the rope. The third chapter is devoted to the rational demonstration of the truth of non-duality, lest it should, in like manner,¹⁶ be contended to be unreal. The fourth chapter is devoted to the rational refutation of the other schools of thought which are antagonistic⁵⁴ to the truth as pointed out in the Vedas and which are opposed to the knowledge of the Advaitic Reality, by pointing out their falsity on account of their own mutual¹⁷ contradiction.

CHAPTER I.⁵⁵

ĀGAMA PRAKARANA. i.e. The Scriptural Chapter)⁵⁶

(THE UPANISHADIC CHAPTER.)

I.

¹³ *Vedic texts*—The first chapter of the *Māndūkyopaniṣad*, namely, the *Āgama Prakāraṇa*, consists mainly of the Upanishadic texts. The doctrines contained therein are established rationally in the following three chapters.

¹⁴ *Determination*—This would enable the student to attain the knowledge of the self, whose real nature is revealed by the demonstration of the unreality of duality which is an illusion. *Ātman* is realized through such knowledge. Therefore the indirect result of the explanation of the real nature of *Aum* leads to the attainment of the *summum bonum*. The rational treatment will follow.

¹⁵ *Rationally*—With the disappearance of the sense of reality with regard to illusions, there spontaneously arises the knowledge of truth. Gaudapāda in the second, third and fourth chapters of the *Kārikā*, *rationally* presents the truth, presented in the first.

¹⁶ *In like manner*—There may be a doubt regarding the very existence of Reality when duality is removed. The argument followed by the author of the *Kārikā* is that the knowledge of Reality is such that it is never contradicted.

⁵⁴ 4

THE MĀNDŪKYOPANIṢHAD

¹⁷ *Mutual contradiction*—The contradictions are pointed out with a view to establishing the truth of non-dualism—a course frequently pursued both by Gaudapāda and Śāṅkara.

⁵⁵ 7

⁵⁶ The original editor inserted "i.e. The Scriptural Chapter)" by hand

INTRODUCTORY REMARKS BY ŚANKARA.

How does, again, the determination of (the meaning of) *Aum* help the realization of the essential nature of *Ātman*? It is thus¹ explained: The *Śruti*² passages such as these declare³ thus: "It⁴ is *Aum*." "This (*Aum*) is the (best)⁵ support." "Oh, Satyakāma, It⁶ is the aim which is also the higher and the lower Brahman." "Meditate⁷ on the Self as *Aum*." "*Aum*, this⁸ word is Brahman." "All⁹ this is verily *Aum*." As the rope, etc., which are the substratum of such illusions (misapprehensions) as the snake, etc., so is the non-dual *Ātman*, which is the ultimate Reality, the substratum of such imaginations as the vital¹⁰ breath (*Prāna*), etc., which are unreal. Similarly, *Aum* is the substratum of the

¹ *Thus*—The reason given here chiefly depends upon the scriptural authority, because the first chapter of this work lays emphasis on the scriptural texts.

² *Śruti passages*—For detailed explanations of these passages the reader is referred to the respective Upanishads in which they occur.

³ *Declare*—The ultimate relationship between *Aum* and Brahman is thus explained. The phenomena of the world consist of ideas or the mental states. Ideas depend upon words for their expression. The utterance of the word *Aum* (*A U M*) gives the clue to the pronunciations of all the words or sounds used by human beings. The various parts of the vocal organ used in the utterance of sounds come in contact with each other while pronouncing the word *Aum*. Therefore, *Aum* is the matrix of all sounds which in their diversified forms give rise to words used in the language. The substratum of phenomena is Brahman. The substratum of all sounds, as seen above, is *Aum*. The sounds signifying the phenomena are non-different from the phenomena as both are illusions. When the illusion disappears the substratum alone remains which, being one, admits of no difference. Hence Brahman is *Aum*.

⁴ *It is, etc.*—*Kathopanishad*, 1. 2. 15. When *Aum* is uttered with concentration there arises the consciousness of Brahman in the mind. Therefore *Aum* is the nearest symbol helping the concentration of the mind leading to the realization of Brahman. The principle of this process is known as ("Hindi passage omitted here").

⁵ *Best*—*Kathopanishad*, 1. 2. 17. This is the best symbol of Brahman like an image ("Hindi passage omitted here") of Vishnu.

⁶ *It is, etc.*—*Prasnopanishad*, 5. 2. "The knower through the support (of the *Aum*) attains to one or the other." Through the meditation of *Aum* one can realize both the *Para* (attributeless) *Brahman* and the *Apara* (associated with names and forms) *Brahman*.

⁷ *Meditate*—One, who seeks to realize the Self through "one-pointed" concentration on *Aum*, feels that the gross universe (symbolised by *A*) is absorbed into the subtle (*U*) and (*U*) into the causal (*M*) and finally the universe dependent upon causal relation is withdrawn into the transcendental which is known as *Amātrā* and which cannot be designated by any letter or sound.

⁸ *This word, etc.*—*Taittiriyaopanishad*, 1. 8. 1. *Aum* indicates that both *Saguna* and *Nirguna Brahman* have the same substratum which is the *Nirguna* (attributeless) *Brahman* or the highest Reality.

⁹ *All this is, etc.*—Both, *i.e.*, *Aum* and Brahman, are the support of everything, they form the most universal concept. Therefore the knowledge of *Aum* and Brahman is identical.

¹⁰ *Vital breath*—The non-dual Brahman, being the only existing Reality, does not admit of any other existence. Therefore *Prāna*, etc. and their effects are but imaginations which are unreal, having Brahman for their substratum,—like the illusion of snake superimposed upon a rope.

entire illusion of the world of speech having¹¹ for its (corresponding) contents such illusory objects as *Prāna*, etc., imagined in *Ātman*. And *Aum* is verily of the same¹² essential character as the *Ātman*; for it is the name for *Ātman*. All illusions, such as *Prāna*, etc., having *Ātman* for their substratum and denoted by words—which are but modifications¹³ of *Aum*—, cannot exist¹⁴ without names (which are but the modification of *Aum*). This is⁵⁷ supported by such *Śruti* passages as: “The modification¹⁵ being only a name arising from speech.” “All this related to It (Brahman) is held¹⁶ together by the cord¹⁷ of speech and strands¹⁸ of (specific) names.” “All these (are rendered possible in experience) by names,” etc.

Therefore⁵⁸ it is said:—

(“Hindi passage omitted here”)

Harih *Aum*. *Aum*, the word, is all this. A clear explanation of it (is the following). All that is past, present and future is verily *Aum*. That which is beyond the triple conception of time, is also truly *Aum*.

ŚANKARA’S COMMENTARY.

¹¹ *Having, etc.*—*Prāna*, etc., are merely modifications of speech because they cannot be conceived of without names. As again names are nothing but different manifestations of *Aum*, therefore *Prāna*, etc., have *Aum* for their substratum.

¹² *Same nature*—The name and the thing indicated by it are identical in as much as both are mental (*Kālpanika*).

¹³ *Modifications*—All sounds depend on “A” —the first letter of the alphabet and the first sound uttered by the mouth “A” is the chief constituent of *Aum*. Therefore all imaginations (*i.e.*, the objects denoted by them are identical with the sounds associated with them) cannot exist apart from *Aum*.

¹⁴ *Cannot exist, etc.*—The purpose of the *Śruti* is to show the identity of the name and the object. This can be understood from the standpoint of idealism which explains everything as mere idea or a mental state or content.

⁵⁷ 8

CHAPTER I

ĀGAMA PRAKARANA

¹⁵ *Modification*—*Chhand. Up.*, 6. 1. 4.

¹⁶ *Held with*—*i.e.*, Pervaded.

¹⁷ *Cord*—It stands for the general (“Hindi passage omitted here”).

¹⁸ *Strands*—They denote the particular (“Hindi passage omitted here”).

⁵⁸ 10

CHAPTER I

ĀGAMA PRAKARANA

Aum, the word, is all this. As all diversified objects that we see around us, indicated by names, are not different¹ from their (corresponding) names, and further as the different names are not different from *Aum*, therefore all this is verily *Aum*. As a thing is known through its name, so the highest Brahman is known through *Aum* alone. Therefore the highest Brahman is verily *Aum*. This (treatise) is the explanation of that, *tasya*, that is, of *Aum*, the word, which is of the same nature as the higher as well as the lower Brahman. *Upavyākhyānam* means clear explanation because *Aum* is the means to the knowledge of Brahman on account of its having the closest proximity to Brahman. The word '*Prastutam*' meaning 'commences' should be supplied to complete the sentence (as otherwise, it is incomplete). That⁵⁹ which is conditioned by the triple (conceptions of) time, such as past, present and future is also verily *Aum* for reasons already explained. All that is beyond the three (divisions of) time, *i.e.*, unconditioned by time, and yet known by their effects, which is called '*Avyākṛita*', the unmanifested, etc. – that also² is verily *Aum*.

II.

INTRODUCTORY REMARKS BY ŚANKARA.

Though the name and the object signified by the name are one and the same, still the explanation¹ has been given (here) by giving prominence² to the name (*Aum*). Though in the Upanishadic passage, – "*Aum*, this word, is all this" – explanation has been furnished by giving prominence³ to the name (*Aum*), the same thought is again expounded by giving prominence to the thing signified by the name. The object is to realize the knowledge of the oneness of the name and the thing signified by it. Otherwise, (the explanation) that the knowledge of the thing is dependent on the name, might suggest that the oneness of the name and the thing is to be taken only in a figurative⁴ sense. The purpose of the knowledge of the unity (of the name and the thing signified by it) is to simultaneously remove, by a single effort, (the illusion of) both the name⁶⁰ and the thing and establish (the nature of) Brahman which⁵ is other than both.

¹ *Not different* – That the name and the object denoted by it are identical is understood from the standpoint of idealism which explains everything cognized or perceived as only a form of thought.

⁵⁹ 11

CHAPTER I

ĀGAMA PRAKARANA

² *Also, etc.* – Because the effect is non-different from the cause.

¹ *Explanation* – *i.e.*, of what is intended to be taught by the Upanishadic text.

² *Prominence* – Because *Aum* is the first word of the first Upanishad. The purport of the sentence is that *Aum* is the symbol, the most universal, for *all* the phenomena of the world. Therefore prominence is given to *Aum* ("Hindi passage omitted here").

³ *Prominence* – The second Upanishad is "All this is, truly, Brahman." Hence the emphasis is on 'All this' – which is the object ("Hindi passage omitted here") signified by *Aum*.

⁴ *Figurative* – *i.e.*, the mere convention of calling a thing by a particular name.

⁶⁰ 12

Therefore the Śruti says, “The quarter (*Pādas*) are the letters of *Aum* (*Mātrā*) and the letters are the quarters.”

Therefore it says: –

(“Hindi passage omitted here”)

All this is verily Brahman. This *Ātman* is Brahman. This *Ātman* has four quarters.

ŚANKARA’S COMMENTARY.

All this is verily Brahman. All that has been said to consist merely of *Aum* (in the previous text) is Brahman. That Brahman which has been described¹ (as existing) inferentially² is now pointed out, as being directly³ perceived, by the passage, “This Self is Brahman”. The word *this*, meaning that which appears divided⁶¹ into four quarters,⁴

CHAPTER I

ĀGAMA PRAKARANA

⁵ *Which is, etc.* – The knowledge of the attributeless Brahman is possible only when the illusion of both the name and the thing signified by it is removed.

¹ *Described – i.e., by the Śruti.*

² *Inferentially – i.e., we cannot directly perceive its presence but we can infer it. It is opposed to (“Hindi passage omitted here”) which refers to the knowledge of a thing that is not directly perceived but about the existence of which one becomes absolutely certain by means of what is known as realization.*

(PRATYAKSHA)[⊕]

PRATYAKSHA is Immediate perception, generally of external objects;

³ *Directly – The word (“Hindi passage omitted here”), nowadays, is applied, especially in the Nyāya Philosophy, to the knowledge of the objects of sense-perception. But occasionally it is used, in the Upanishad and the Vedāntic text, in the sense of (“Hindi passage omitted here”). (APAROKSHA)[⊕]*

APAROKSHA is Direct perception by uniting with the thing. But both are used synonymously by some writers.

⁶¹ 13

CHAPTER I

ĀGAMA PRAKARANA

⁴ *Four quarters – Namely, Viswa (the waking state), Taijasa (dream state), Prājña (Sushupli or the state of dreamless sleep) and Turiya which is same as Brahman or Ātman. These four quarters correspond to the three Mātrās of Aum and the Amātra of Aum. A, U and M are the three Mātrās. The fourth, which is known as Amātra or without a letter, has no corresponding letter or sound. This is silence or Ātman corresponding to Turiya. The idea of sound suggests the idea of soundlessness or silence from which sound may be said to proceed.*

is pointed out as the innermost Self, with a gesture⁵ (of hand) by the passage, “This is *Ātman*”. That *Ātman* indicated by *Aum*, signifying both the higher and the lower Brahman, has⁶ four quarters (*Pādas*), not indeed, like the four feet (*Pādas*) of a cow,⁷ but like the four parts (*Pādas*) of a coin⁸ known as *Kārshāpana*. The knowledge of the fourth (*Turiya*) is attained by merging the (previous) three, such as *Viśwa*, etc., in it in⁹ the order of the previous one, in the succeeding one. Here¹⁰ the word ‘*Pāda*’ or ‘foot’ is used in¹¹ the sense of instrument. The word ‘*Pāda*’ is again used in the sense of an object when the object to be achieved is the fourth (*Turiya*).

III.⁶²

How¹ four quarters are said to be in *Ātman* is thus² explained:—

(“Hindi passage omitted here”)

The first quarter (*Pāda*) is *Vaiśvānara* whose sphere (of activity) is the waking state, who is conscious of external objects, who has seven limbs and nineteen mouths and whose experience consists of gross (material) objects.

ŚANKARA’S COMMENTARY.

Jāgaritasthāna, i.e., his sphere³ (of activity) is the waking state. *Bahishprajna*, i.e., who⁴ is aware of objects⁶³ other than himself. The meaning is that consciousness

⁵ *Gesture*—i.e., by placing the hand on the region of the heart which, in popular belief, is the seat of *Ātman*.

⁶ *Has, etc.*—The four quarters are imagined in *Ātman* to facilitate the understanding of the pupil.

⁷ *Cow*—Because cow has actually four feet which are unrelated with one another.

⁸ *Coin*—*Kārshāpana* is a coin made up of four quarters A quarter-*Kārshāpana* is merged in the half-*Kārshāpana*; the half is merged in the three-fourth-*Kārshāpana* and the threequarters ultimately is merged in the full *Kārshāpana*.

⁹ *In the, etc.*—*Viśwa* is merged in *Taijasa*, *Taijasa* in *Prājna* and finally *Prājna* is merged in *Turiya*.

¹⁰ *Here*—It is because the fourth is realized *by means* of merging the three states in it.

¹¹ *In the sense of*—It is because the attention is here drawn to the fourth which is the *object* of the enquiry.

¹ *How, etc.*—The reason for doubting is that *Ātman* is without parts.

² *Thus, etc.*—Four quarters are merely *assumed* to facilitate understanding by the unenlightened.

appears, as it were, related to outward objects on account of *Avidyā*. Similarly *Saptānga*, *i.e.*, he has seven⁵ limbs. The *Śruti* says, “Of that *Vaiśwānara* Self, the effulgent⁶ region is his head, the sun his eye, the air his vital breath, the ether (*Ākāśa*) the (middle part of his) body, the water⁷ his kidney and the earth his feet.” The *Āhavanīya* fire (one of the three fires of the *Agnihotra* sacrifice) has been described as his mouth in order to complete the imagery of the *Agnihotra* sacrifice. He is called *Saptānga* because these are the seven limbs of his body. Similarly he has nineteen mouths. These are the five⁸ organs of perception (*Buddhindriyas*); the five⁹ organs of action (*Karmendriyas*); the five¹⁰ aspects of vital breath (*Prāna*, etc.); the mind (*Manas*); the intellect (*Buddhi*); egoity (*Ahamkāra*); mind-stuff (*Chitta*). These are, as it were, the mouths, *i.e.*, the instruments by means of which he (*Vaiśwānara*) experiences (objects). He, the *Vaiśwānara*, thus constituted, experiences through the instruments enumerated above, gross objects, such as sound, etc. He is called *Vaiśwānara* because he leads all creatures of the universe in diverse ways (to¹¹ the enjoyment of various objects); or because he comprises all beings. Following the grammatical rules regarding the compound which gives the latter meaning, the word that is formed is *Viśwānara*, which is the same as *Vaiśwānara*. He is the *first quarter* because he is non-different from the totality of gross bodies (known as *Virāt*). He is called *first*¹² (quarter)⁶⁴ because the subsequent quarters are realized through him (*Vaiśwānara*).

³ *Sphere, etc.*—It is because the Self identifies itself with the experiencer in the waking state.

⁴ *Who is aware, etc.*—Consciousness (*Prājña*), really speaking, is identical with Self. It cannot be related to external objects because nothing exists outside consciousness. Owing to *Ajnāna* (ignorance), the *Buddhi Vritti* (mental modification) objectifies itself into what are called material entities, ego and non-ego. These material objects do not possess any independent existence. Both the *Vritti* and its objects are imagined in *Ātman*. From the standpoint of *Ātman* it does not experience any object external which is totally non-existent.

⁶³ 15

CHAPTER I

ĀGAMA PRAKARANA

⁵ *Seven*—This assumption is based upon scriptural authority. *Of. Chhand. Up.*, 5. 18. 2.

⁶ *Effulgent, etc.*—*i.e.*, *Dyuloka* or the sky with its luminary bodies such as the sun, the moon, the stars, etc.

⁷ *Water*—The word “*Rayi*”, meaning “*Food*” and “*wealth*”, also indicates “*water*” by which whatever is “*food*” grows, bringing in its turn “*wealth*”.

⁸ *Five organs, etc.*—namely, the organ of sight, sound, smell taste and touch.

⁹ *Five organs, etc.*—namely, hands, feet and organs of speech, generation and evacuation.

¹⁰ *Five airs or humours, etc.*—*viz.*, *Prāna*, *Apāna*, *Samāna*, *Vyāna* and *Udāna*.

¹¹ *To the enjoyment, etc.*—He makes people enjoy pleasure and pain according to their virtuous or vicious deeds.

¹² *First*—The word does not denote any priority of creation. It is called *first* because from the standpoint of *Vaiśwānara* or the waking state alone one can understand the other

(Objection)—While the subject-matter under discussion treats of the innermost Self (*Prātyak Ātmā*) as having four quarters—in the text, “This *Ātman* is Brahman”—how is it that (the external universe consisting of) the effulgent regions, etc., have been described as its limbs such as head, etc.?

(Reply)—This, however, is no¹³ mistake; because the object is to describe the entire phenomena, including those of gods (*Adhi-daiva*) as having four quarters from¹⁴ the standpoint of this *Ātman* known as the *Virāt* (i.e., the totality of the gross universe). And in¹⁵ this way alone is non-duality established by the removal of (the illusion of) the entire¹⁶ phenomena. Further, the one *Ātman* is realized as existing in all beings and all¹⁷ beings are seen as existing in *Ātman*. And, thus alone, the meaning of such *Śruti* passages as “Who sees all beings in the Self, etc.” can be said to be established. Otherwise,¹⁸ the subjective world will, verily, be, as in the case of such philosophers as the *Sāmkhyas*,¹⁹ limited by its (one’s) own body. And if that be the case, no room

states, i.e., as has been pointed out under the first Upanishad, we see *first* how from the waking state the dream state and the state of dreamless sleep are known.

64 16

CHAPTER I

ĀGAMA PRAKARANA

¹³ *No mistake*—The subjective is known as the *Adhyātma*. The *Adhidaiva* comprises the objective universe including the spheres of the sun, the moon, the stars, etc. *Adhyātma* is non-different from *Adhidaiva* because *both* these, as has already been pointed out, are but ideas imagined in *Ātman*. Hence there is no mistake in assuming *Adhidaivika* members as forming the limbs of the *Adhyātma*.

¹⁴ *From the standpoint, etc.*—The gross physical aspects of both *Adhyātma* and *Adhidaiva*, known as *Virāt* (i.e., the totality of all physical bodies), form the first quarter of the *Ātman* or Brahman. The subtle or *Sukshma* (namely, the *Apanchikrita*) aspects, known as the *Hiranyagarbha* (i.e., the totality of the subtle), form the second quarter of the *Ātman* or Brahman. The *Kāraṇa* or causal aspect known as the *Avyākṛita* (unmanifested) or the *Īśvara* comprising both the *Adhyātma* and *Adhidaiva* is the third quarter. And the transcendental (*Turiya*) which is beyond all causal relations and which is the ultimate substratum of all appearances, viz., *Virāt*, *Hiranyagarbha* and *Īśvara*, is the fourth quarter. In all these instances there is non-difference between the *Adhyātma* and *Adhidaiva*. Therefore there is no mistake in applying the limbs of *Adhidaiva* to *Adhyātma*.

¹⁵ *In this way alone*—i.e., by merging each of the three states step by step, in the *Turiya* or the transcendental.

¹⁶ *Entire, etc.*—i.e., from Brahman or the highest cosmic being to the mere blade of grass.

¹⁷ *All beings*—i.e., they are seen as mere imagination upon *Ātman*. Compare the following couplet from the *Manu Smṛiti*:

(“Hindi passage omitted here”)

¹⁸ *Otherwise*—i.e., by admitting the duality of *Adhyātma* and *Adhidaiva*.

¹⁹ *Sāmkhyas*—The *Sāmkhya* doctrine admits the plurality of souls as based upon manifoldness of experience. The *Vedāntin* explains the plurality to be due to *Avidyā*.

would be left for the Advaita which is the special feature of the *Śruti*. For, in the case of duality, there would be no difference between the Advaita and the Sāmkhya and other systems. The establishment of the identity of all with *Ātman* is sought by all the Upanishads. It is, therefore, quite reasonable to speak of the effulgent regions, etc., as seven limbs in connection with the subjective⁶⁵ (individual self, *Adhyātma*) associated with the gross body, because of its identity with the *Adhidaiva* (comprising the super-physical regions) universe from the standpoint of the *Virāt* (the totality of the gross physical universe). This is further known from such characteristic indication (of the *Śruti*), as “Thy²⁰ head shall fall”, etc.

The identity (of *Adhyātma* and *Adhidaiva*) from the standpoint of the *Virāt* indicates similar identity²¹ of the selves known as the *Hiranyagarbha* and the *Taijasa*²² as well as of the Unmanifested²³ (*Īswara*) and the *Prājna*. It is also stated in the *Madhu Brāhmana*, “This bright immortal person in this earth and that bright immortal person in the body (both are *Madhu*).” It is an established fact that the Self in deep sleep (*Prājna*) is identical with the Unmanifested (*Īswara*) because²⁴ of the absence of any distinction between them. Such being the case, it is clearly established that non-duality is realized by the disappearance (of the illusion) of all duality.

IV.⁶⁶

(“Hindi passage is omitted here”)

⁶⁵ 17

CHAPTER I ĀGAMA PRAKARANA

²⁰ *Thy head, etc.—i.e.*, if thou worshippst the effulgent region which is but a part of *Vaiśwānara* as the *Vaiśwānara* itself.

²¹ *Identity—i.e.*, in the spiritual plane.

²² *Taijasa*—The individual self while dreaming is called *Taijasa*.

²³ *Unmanifested, etc.*—The identity of *Īswara* and *Prājna*. The individual self in the state of deep sleep (*Sushupti*) is called *Prājna*

²⁴ *Because, etc.*—The *Prājna* or the causal self withdraws into itself at the time of deep sleep all distinctions of objects as well as the objects themselves experienced in waking and dream states. The *Īswara* (the cosmic soul) too at the time of dissolution withdraws into itself all distinctions experienced in the planes of *Virāt* and *Hiranyagarbha* which correspond respectively to the waking and the dream states of the subjective.

⁶⁶ 20

CHAPTER I ĀGAMA PRAKARANA

The second quarter (*Pāda*) is the *Taijasa* whose sphere (of activity) is the dream, who is conscious of internal objects, who has seven limbs and nineteen mouths and who experiences the subtle objects.

ŚANKARA'S COMMENTARY.

He is called the *Svapnasthāna* because the dream (state) is his (*Taijasa*) sphere. Waking consciousness, being associated as it is with many means,¹ and appearing² conscious of objects as if external, though (in reality) they are nothing but states³ of mind, leaves in the mind corresponding⁴ impressions. That the mind (in dream) without⁵ any of the external means, but possessed of the impressions left on it by the waking consciousness, like⁶ a piece of canvas⁷ with the pictures painted on it, experiences the dream state also as if it were like the waking, is due to its being under the influence of ignorance, desire and their action.⁸ Thus⁹ it is said, "(And when he falls

¹ *Means*—Subject-object relationship, agency, instrumentality, etc.

² *Appearing*—According to *Vedānta*, external objects, perceived by the sense-organs, have no absolute reality. They appear as real on account of *Avidyā*. Their reality cannot be proved for the simple reason that they become non-existent when their essential character is enquired into.

³ *States of mind*—External objects are nothing but mental existents produced by *Avidyā*. There are no such independent external entities as objects, and they are but creations of the mind. In fact we are not conscious of any external objects independent of the mind. We take our mental creations to be such objects. Again those who seek for the cause of these mental creations or ideas, which we think we see as external objects, are led into a logical *regressus*. This causal chain leads nowhere. It will be shown later on that the whole idea of cause and effect is unreal.

⁴ *Corresponding, etc.*—that is, like those experienced in the waking state. These impressions are subsequently reproduced in the form of dream-objects.

⁵ *Without any, etc.*—It is because in dream no other separate entity than the mind of the dreamer, is present.

⁶ *Like a piece, etc.*—Dream experiences appear as real as the experiences of the waking state.

⁷ *Like a piece of canvas, etc.*—The picture painted on a piece of canvas appears to possess various dimensions though, in reality, the picture is on a plane surface. Similarly, dream-experiences, though really states of mind, appear to be characterized by the presence of externality and internality.

⁸ *Action*—The word "*Karma*" is used in *Vedānta* in more senses than one. "*Karma*" primarily means "action". It also signifies the destiny forged by one in one's past incarnation or present: the store of tendencies, impulses, characteristics and habits, which determine one's future embodiment and environment. Another meaning of "*Karma*", often used in reference to one's caste or position in life, is ritual, the course of conduct, which one ought to follow in pursuance of the tendencies acquired in the past, with a view to work them out. The meaning of the word, here, is the tendencies generated in the mind by the activities of the waking state. *Avidyā* gives rise to *Kāma* or desire, and this, in its turn, impels a man to action.

asleep) then after having taken away with him (portion of the) impressions from the world during the waking state (destroying and building up again, he experiences dream by his own light)" (*Bṛhad*⁶⁷. *Up.*, 4. 3. 9). Similarly the *Atharvāna*, after introducing the subject with "(all the senses) become one in the highest¹⁰ *Deva*,⁶⁸ the mind," continues "There the god (mind) enjoys in dream greatness"¹¹ (*Prasna Up.*). From¹² the standpoint of the sense-organs, the mind is internal. He (the *Taijasa*) is called the *Antahprajna* or conscious of the internal because his consciousness in dream becomes aware of the mental states, which are impressions left by the previous waking state. He is called the *Taijasa* because he appears as the subject though this (dream) consciousness is without any (gross) object and is of the nature of the essence of light. The *Viśva* (the subject of the waking state) experiences consciousness associated with gross external objects; whereas, here (in the dream state), the object of experience is consciousness consisting of *Vāsanās* (the impressions of past experience). Therefore this experience is called the experience¹³ of the subtle. The rest is common (with the previous *Śruti*). This *Taijasa* is the second quarter (of *Ātman*).

V.⁶⁹

⁹ *Thus, etc.* – The causal relation between the waking and the dream states is sought to be established here on scriptural authority.

⁶⁷ In this word symbol not found in Book Antiqua font so we have inserted from Tahoma

¹⁰ *Highest, etc.* – It is because in the dream state the *Jiva* is associated with the *Upādhi* of mind.

⁶⁸ 21

CHAPTER I

ĀGAMA PRAKARANA

3

¹¹ *Greatness* – The *Jiva* in sleep, characterized by darkness, possesses the light by means of which the subject-object relationship is seen. The greatness of mind consists in the fact that, in dream it can transform itself into knowledge, act of knowing and the object of knowledge.

¹² *From the standpoint of* – From the standpoint of the waking state alone, when the sense-organs are active, one can review the dream experiences and thus come to know the internal activity of the mind which acts in the dream state independently of the sense-organs of the waking state.

¹³ *Experience of the subtle* – The experiences of waking and dream states are of the same nature; for in both the states the perceiver is aware only of his mental states which are not related to any external objects, as they are non-existent. From the standpoint of dream, dream objects are as gross and material as those experienced in the waking state. From the view-point of the waking state alone, one may infer that the dream objects are subtle, that is, composed of mere impressions of the waking state, inasmuch as in the dream state no external (that is, gross) object exists at all.

⁶⁹ 23

CHAPTER I

ĀGAMA PRAKARANA

("Hindi passage is omitted is here")

That is the state of deep sleep wherein the sleeper does not desire any objects nor does he see any dream. The third quarter (*Pāda*) is the *Prājña* whose sphere is deep sleep, in whom all (experiences) become unified, who is verily, a mass of consciousness entire, who is full of bliss and who experiences bliss, and who is the path leading to the knowledge (of the two other states).

ŚANKARA'S COMMENTARY.

The adjectival clause, *viz.*, "Wherein the sleeper," etc., is put with a view to enabling one to grasp what the⁷⁰ state of deep sleep (*Sushupri*) signifies, inasmuch as sleep characterized by¹ the absence of the knowledge of Reality is the common feature of those mental modifications which are associated with (waking, that is) perception² (of gross objects) and (dream, that is the) non-perception³ (of gross objects). Or⁴ the object of the introduction of the adjectival clause may be to distinguish the state of deep

⁷⁰ 24

CHAPTER I

ĀGAMA PRAKARANA

¹ *By, etc.*—The mere absence of desire or objects associated with waking or dream states is no characteristic of the Highest Knowledge; for, deep sleep, swoon, etc., are characterized by such absence. Therefore the Knowledge of Reality is true *Jñānam*.

² *Perception*—In the waking state one is aware of the mental modifications which are known as the perception of gross physical objects.

³ *Non-perception*—Dream experience is here designated as "non-perception", as it is *distinct* from the perception of gross objects of the waking state. In the dream state the objects of perception, which are also modifications of the mind, are but the subtle impressions left by the objects of the waking state. That the dream objects are such can only be known from the experience of the waking state.

⁴ *Or*—The commentator gives two meanings of the first sentence of the text. The first meaning lays emphasis on "*yatra*", i.e., wherein, because we are dealing here with the three states. The natural meaning of the text is that after describing the states of waking and dream the *Śruti* proceeds to describe the state of *Sushupti* or deep sleep which is said to be distinguished from the two other states in not having desire, etc., the common feature of the other two states. And such a distinction has to be made because all the three states have the common feature of the absence of knowledge of Reality. The second meaning emphasizes the word "*supta*" and explains it thus in this connection. *Jāgrat*, *Swapna* and *Sushupti* are the three states which have for their perceiver one who experiences the three states. Though the perceiver of the three states has three different appellations yet the word "*supta*" is used as the common term for them by *Śruti* in a special sense, to denote the absence of knowledge of Reality. Therefore, in this sense, though the word "*supta*" means the same as the experienter in the state of *Jāgrat* and *Swapna*, yet it is differentiated from the latter by the adjectival phrase, "Wherein the sleeper does not see, etc."

sleep (of the sleeping person) from the two previous states as sleep characterized by the absence of knowledge of Reality is the common feature of the three states. 'Wherein,' that is to say, in which state or time, the sleeping person does not see any dream, nor does he desire any desirable (object). For, in the state of deep sleep, there does not exist, as in the two other states, any desire or the dream experience whose characteristic is to take a thing for what it is not. He is called the '*Sushuptasthāna*' because his sphere is this state of deep sleep. Similarly it is called *Ekibhuta*, i.e., the state in which all experiences become unified – a state in which all objects of duality, which are nothing but forms⁵ of thought, spread over the two states (*viz.*, the waking and the dream), reach the state⁶ of indiscrimination without losing their characteristics, as the day, revealing phenomenal objects, is enveloped by the darkness of night. Therefore conscious experiences, which are nothing but forms of thought, perceived during dream and waking states, become a thick mass (of consciousness) as⁷ it were (in deep sleep); this state of deep sleep is called the '*Prajnānaghana*' (a mass⁷¹ of all consciousness unified) on account of the absence of all manifoldness (discrimination of variety). As at night, owing to the indiscrimination produced by darkness, all (percepts) become a mass (of darkness) as it were, so also in the state of deep sleep all (objects) of consciousness, verily, become a mass (of consciousness). The word '*eva*' ('verily') in the text denotes the absence⁸ of any other thing except consciousness (in deep sleep). (At the time of deep sleep) the mind is free from the miseries⁹ of the efforts made on account of the states of the mind being involved in the relationship of subject and object: therefore, it is called the *Ānandamaya*,

⁵ *Forms of thought* – Mental or thought forms arise in *Ātman*, which constitute external and internal objects.

⁶ *State of indiscrimination*. – This is known in the empirical language as the causal state. One viewing *sushupti* from the waking state takes it to be the causal state because he finds that the experiences of *jāgrat* and *swapna* merge in *sushupti*. The mind moving within the sphere of causality further takes *sushupti* to be the cause of the waking and the dream states, believing the former to be antecedent to the latter.

⁷ *As it were* – As suggested in the previous note *sushupti* is designated as the state of causal unity because the waking man looks upon it as the cause of waking and dream experiences. But even *sushupti* is also a *vritti* or an idea of the waking man, which arises in his mind on account of his seeking for a cause of the waking and dream experiences. Therefore the *unity* experienced in *sushupti* as understood by the wakeful man is not the *unity* of *Brāhmajñāna* – otherwise the re-appearance of multiplicity as real in the waking state would not be possible.

⁷¹ 25

CHAPTER I ĀGAMA PRAKARANA

⁸ *Absence, etc.* – The state of *sushupti* is characterized by the absence of objects which one perceives in the waking or dreaming state.

⁹ *Miseries of the efforts* – The perceiver in the *jāgrat* and *swapna* states who always experiences subject-object relationship, finds its absence in *sushupti*.

that is, endowed with an abundance of bliss. But this is not Bliss Itself; because it¹⁰ is not Bliss Infinite. As in common (experience) parlance, one, free from efforts, is called happy and enjoyer of bliss. As the *Prājna*¹¹ enjoys this state of deep sleep which is entirely free from all efforts, therefore it is called the '*Ānandabhuk*' (the experiencer of bliss). The *Śruti* also says, "This is its highest bliss." It is called the '*Cetomukha*' because it is the doorway¹² to the (cognition) of the two other states of consciousness known as dream and waking. Or because the *Ceta* (the perceiving entity) characterized¹³ by (empirical) consciousness (*Bodha*) is its doorway leading to the experience of dreams, etc., therefore it is called the '*Cetomukha*.' It is called *Prājna* as it is conscious of the past and the future as well as of all objects. It is called the *Prājna*, the knower *par excellence*, even in deep sleep, because¹⁴ of its having been so in the⁷² two previous states. Or it is called the *Prājna* because its peculiar feature is consciousness¹⁵ undifferentiated. In the two other states consciousness exists, no doubt, but it is (there) aware of (the experiences of) variety. The *Prājna*, thus described, is the third quarter.

VI.⁷³

("Hindi passage omitted here")

¹⁰ *It is not, etc.*—The *sushupti* is not the state of Bliss Infinite because the perceiver from the waking standpoint associates deep sleep with the *Upādhi* of the idea of the causal state.

¹¹ *Prājna*—The experiencer of *sushupti*. That the *Prājna*, in deep sleep, enjoys bliss is viewed from the waking state.

¹² *Doorway*—*Sushupti* is the doorway because it leads to the experience of the waking and dream states. The state of unified existence of *sushupti*, wherein all diversities disappear, is the invariable antecedent of the waking and dream experiences. Hence it is looked upon as the cause of the two other states

¹³ *Characterized, etc.*—It is because the consciousness, present in *sushupti*, is a necessary condition for becoming aware of the states of *jāgrat* and *swapna*. No experience is possible without consciousness.

¹⁴ *Because, etc.*—Though there are no specific states of consciousness in *sushupti* still it is known as *Prājna* or the knower *par excellence* because all previous states of consciousness experienced in *jāgrat* and *swapna* are the same as that of *sushupti*.

⁷² 26

CHAPTER I

ĀGAMA PRAKARANA

¹⁵ *Consciousness, etc.*—This consciousness, which exists as *Prājna* in deep sleep appears as particular ("Hindi passage omitted here") states of consciousness in *jāgrat* and *swapna*.

⁷³ 28

CHAPTER I

ĀGAMA PRAKARANA

This is the Lord of all; this is the knower of all; this is the controller within; this is the source of all; and this is that from which all things originate and in which they finally disappear.

SANKARA'S COMMENTARY.

This in its natural¹ state, is the Lord (*Iśwara*) of all. All, that is to say, of the entire physical and super-physical universe. He (*Iśwara*) is not something separate from the universe as others² hold. The *Śruti* also says, "O good one, *Prāna* (*Prājña* or *Iśwara*) is that in which the mind is bound." He is omniscient because he is the knower³ of all beings in their different conditions. He is the *Antaryāmin*, that is, he alone entering into all, directs everything from within. Therefore⁷⁴ He is called the origin of all because from him proceeds the universe characterized by diversity, as described before. It being so, He is verily that from which all things proceed and in which all disappear.

Here commence Gaudapāda's *Kārikās* in explanation of the *Māndukya Śruti*:—

GAUDAPADA-KARIKA.

Regarding this there are these *Slokas*.

SANKARA'S COMMENTARY.

In explanation of the foregoing (texts) there are these *Slokas*.

Gaudapāda takes up the preceding six texts of the Upanishad and comments upon them as follows:—

("Hindi passage is omitted is here")

¹ *Natural state*—*Prājña* is the natural state because in deep sleep all diversities of waking and dream states merge. This state, being free from the conditions of the waking and dream states, manifests in a marked degree Pure Consciousness.

² *Others*—The *Naiyāyikas* and others admit an extra-cosmic creator. Śankara has refuted this theory in the commentary on the *Vedānta Sutra* (2-2-37). When seeking for the cause of the universe, *Vedānta* posits *Prājña* as the material as well as the efficient cause of the universe.

³ *Knower*—The *Ātman* is the witness of the three states,—past, present and future. Knowledge of the three states implies the common knower of all.

⁷⁴ 29

1. Viśwa (the first quarter) is he the atman⁷⁵ who is all-pervading[⊕] and who experiences the external (gross) objects. Taijasa (the⁷⁶ second quarter) is he who cognizes the internal (the subtle) objects. Prājna is he who is a mass of consciousness*. It is one alone who is thus known in the three states.

ŚANKARA'S COMMENTARY.

The implication of the passage is this:—That *Ātman* is (as witness) distinct from the three states (witnessed) and that he is pure¹ and unrelated,² is established by his moving in three states, in³ succession, and also on account of the knowledge, "I am that," resulting from the experience which unites⁴ through memory. The *Śruti* also corroborates it by the illustration⁵ of the 'great fish', etc.

KARIKA.⁷⁷

⁷⁵ The original editor inserted "the atman" by hand

⊕ because he see all the worldThe original editor inserted footnote symbol by hand

⁷⁶ 30

CHAPTER I

ĀGAMA PRAKARANA

* the atman in whom everything is dissolved and from whom everything emanatesThe original editor inserted footnote symbol by hand

¹ *Pure*—The ideas of purity and impurity, weal and woe, pleasure and pain, etc., are the characteristics of the states and do not, in any way, pertain to *Ātman* who is only the witness of the three states. The *Jiva* or the reflected consciousness, which is identical with *Ātman*, falsely identifies himself with the states and considers himself to be impure, miserable, etc. *Ātman* is ever-pure.

² *Unrelated*—No relation of any kind, even that of causality exists between the three states and *Ātman* as the latter alone exists. That *Ātman* is unrelated is further known from the fact that the experiences of the waking state do not, in reality, affect *Ātman* in the dream state, nor those of the dream state affect *Ātman* in the state of deep sleep.

³ *In succession*—Though it appears that *Ātman* identifies itself with each of the three states for the time being, yet the fact that he moves from one state to another without being affected shows that he is only the witness of the three states.

⁴ *Unites, etc.*—From the standpoint of common experience we find a relationship between past, present and future. This is due to the unifying power of memory. Even this relationship between experiences is possible only if an *Ātman* is posited as the witness of them.

⁵ *Illustration, etc.*—This is taken from the *Bṛhd. Up.* As a powerful fish swims from one bank to another unimpeded by the currents of the river, as also *Ātman* moves in the three states totally unaffected by them. As no characteristics of the banks, good or bad, affect the fish, so also no experiences of the three states affect the pure nature of *Ātman*. Another illustration is that of the bird, which flies unobstructed in the sky and unattached to the surrounding lands.

⁷⁷ 31

CHAPTER I

ĀGAMA PRAKARANA

(“Hindi passage omitted here”)

2. Viśwa is he who cognizes in the right eye[⊕], Taijasa⁼ is he who cognizes in the mind within and Prājna* is he who constitutes the Ākāśa in the heart. Thus the one Ātman is (perceived as) threefold in the (one) body.

ŚANKARA’S COMMENTARY.

This verse is intended to show that the threefold experience of *Viśwa*, etc. (*Taijasa* and *Prājna*) is realised in the waking¹ state alone. *Dakshinākshi*: The means of perception (of gross objects) is the right eye. The presence of *Viśwa*, the cognizer of gross objects, is chiefly felt there. The Śruti also says, “The person that is in the right eye is known as *Indha*—the Luminous One” (*Bṛhad*⁷⁸. Up.). *Indha*, which means the effulgent one, who is the *Vaiśvānara* and also known as the *Virāt Ātman* (the totality of gross bodies), the perceiver in the sun. is the same² as the perceiver in the eye.

(Objection)—The *Hiranyagarbha* is distinct from the knower of the body (*Kshetra*) who is the cognizer, the⁷⁹ controller of the right eye, who is also the general experiencer and who is the Lord of the body.

(Reply)—No, for, in reality, such a distinction is³ not admitted. The Śruti says, “One effulgent being alone is hidden in all beings.” The *Smṛiti* also says: “Me do thou

⊕ with the sensesThe original editor inserted footnote symbol by hand

= dream experience, with from.

* formless consciousnessThe original editor inserted footnote symbol by hand

¹ *Waking state alone*—From the ordinary empirical standpoint, *Viśwa*, *Taijasa* and *Prājna* are generally related to three states. viz., waking, dream and deep sleep. But the three states are comprehended from the standpoint of the waking state alone. That dream and deep sleep are two states, having different characteristics, is known in the waking state alone. Therefore these two become known to the waking consciousness. Besides *jāgrat* (waking), in so far as it denotes the absence of the knowledge of Reality, covers the dream and sleep states as well. The three apparent cognisers known as *Viśwa*, *Taijasa* and *Prājna* are really one, because a plurality of perceivers in the same state, namely, the waking, and in the same body is an absurdity, as that would preclude the possibility of the continuity of perception as revealed through memory. Therefore the apparently three different perceivers are identical and their apparent distinction is due to their identification with the three states.

⁷⁸ In this word symbol not found in Book Antiqua font so we have inserted from Tahoma

² *Same*—It is because, as already shown, the *Adhidaiva* is identical with *Adhyātma*.

⁷⁹ 32

also know, O Arjuna, to be the *Kshetrajna* (the knower of the body) in all *Kshetras* (bodies)" (*Gitā*, 13.2). "Indivisible, yet it exists as if divided in beings" (*Gitā*, 13.16).

Though the presence of *Viśwa* is equally felt in all sense-organs without distinction yet the light eye is particularly singled⁴ out (as the chief instrument for its perception), because he (*Viśwa*) makes a greater use of the right eye[⊕] in perceiving objects. (The right eye is made here to represent all the sense-organs.) The one, who has his abode in the right eye, having perceived (external) forms, closes the eye; and then recollecting them within the mind sees⁵ the very same (external objects) as in a dream, as the manifestation of the (subtle) impressions (of memory). As⁶ is the case here (waking), so also is the case with dream. Therefore, *Taijasa*, the perceiver in the mind within, is verily the same as *Viśwa*. With the cessation of the activity known as memory,⁷ the perceiver (in the waking and dream states) is unified⁸ with *Prājna* in the *Ākāśa* of the heart and becomes⁹ verily a mass¹⁰ of consciousness, because there is, then, a cessation of mental activities. Both perception and memory are forms of thought, in

³ *Is not admitted*—The difference is only imaginary and empirical and due to the identification with different bodies. Really speaking, one *Ātman* alone manifests itself in different forms, microcosmic or macrocosmic.

⁴ *Singled out*—This assertion is based upon scriptural authority. In actual experience also one finds that the right eye is more efficient in the perception of objects than the left one.

[⊕] This is scientifically incorrect but was believed by ancient Hindu physiology. The original editor inserted footnote by hand

⁵ *Sees, etc.*—*Viśwa*, the perceiver of gross objects becomes *Taijasa* when he closes the eyes and thinks within his mind about the gross objects. Cognisers of dream and ideas (in the waking state) are identical. Both, *viz.*, ideas and dream objects, possess, for the time being, the same characteristics.

⁶ *As, etc.*—There is no difference whatever between the dream state and the state of imagination in the waking. In both the states, the perceiver cognizes the impressions of gross physical objects experienced in the preceding states. The only difference between the states of dream and imagination (in the waking state) is that dream represents a whole state whereas the reflection represents the part of a state.

⁷ *Memory*—Memory is also a form of mental activity implying subject-object relationship. The impressions of gross external objects perceived in the waking state manifest themselves in the forms of memory and dream.

⁸ *Unified*—That is, this state is characterised by the absence of subject-object relationship.

⁹ *Becomes verily, etc.*—Whenever in the waking state the mind ceases to be active, *i.e.*, whenever ideas disappear from it, the state is said to be *Sushupti*. Even memory does not function then. This state is identical with deep sleep, when subject-object relationship is absent. This state is posited from the actual experience of the change from a state which was without the dual relationship of subject and object. The experience of the three states and the transition from the one to the other proves that there is only one perceiver who is the witness of the three states and their succession.

¹⁰ *Mass of, etc.*—That, is, there is no particular cognition in that state.

the absence of which the seer⁼ remains indistinguishably¹¹ in the form of *Prāna* in the⁸⁰ heart alone. For, the *Śruti*¹² also says, “*Prāna* alone withdraws all these within.” *Taijasa* is identical¹³ with *Hiranyagarbha* on account of its existence being realised in mind. Mind is the characteristic indication¹⁴ (of both). This is supported by such scriptural passages as “This *Purusha* (*Hiranyagarbha*) is all mind,” etc.

(Objection)—The *Prāna* (vital breath) of a deep sleeper is manifested.¹⁵ The sense-organs (at the time of deep sleep) are merged in it. How, then, can it (*Prāna*) be said to be unmanifested?

(Reply)—This is no mistake, for the unmanifested¹⁶ (*Avyākṛita*) is characterised by the absence (of the knowledge) of time and space. Though *Prāna*, in the case of a person who identifies himself with (particular) *Prāna*, appears to be manifested (during the time of waking and dream), yet even in the case of those who (thus) identify themselves with individualized *Prāna*, the *Prāna*, during deep sleep, loses (such) particular identification, which is due to its limitation by the body, and is verily the same as the unmanifested. As in the case of those who identify themselves with individualized *Prānas*, the *Prāna*, at¹⁷ the time of death, ceases to be the manifested, so

⁼ that which you call the seer in the waking state becomes indistinguishable during sleep
The original editor inserted footnote here by hand

¹¹ *Indistinguishably*—i.e., in unmanifested form.

⁸⁰ 33

CHAPTER I ĀGAMA PRAKARANA

In this page, few of the symbol not found in Book Antiqua font so we have inserted from Tahoma font.

¹² *Śruti*—See *Bṛhd. Up.*

¹³ *Identical*—That *Viśwa* and *Virāt* as well as *Prājna* (deep sleep) and *Īśvara* (unmanifested) are identical, has been already shown. Now it is pointed out that *Hiranyagarbha* is identical with *Taijasa*. *Hiranyagarbha* and *Taijasa* are only what are termed as the cosmic mind and the individual mind respectively. Really speaking, macrocosm and microcosm, both being mere forms of thought, are identical. Therefore the perceivers, *Hiranyagarbha* and *Taijasa* are identical because they are also mere forms of thought. Their different appellations are due to their identification with different *Upādhis* (adjuncts) namely, the thought of macrocosm and microcosm.

¹⁴ *Indication*—Both are formed of the some stuff or the mind.

¹⁵ *Manifested*—The manifestation of the activities of the *Prāna* of a deep sleeper is witnessed by on-lookers.

¹⁶ *Unmanifested*—The characteristics of manifestedness and unmanifestedness of *Prāna* are predicated of it from the standpoint of waking and sleep states respectively.

¹⁷ *At the time of death*—This illustration is given on the basis of the scriptural authority. Comp. *Bṛhd. Up.*, 4.4.2.

also in the case of those who think of themselves as identified with the individualized *Prānas*, the *Prāna* attains to the condition like the unmanifested, in the state of deep sleep. This *Prāna* (of deep sleep) further contains the seed (cause) of (future) creation^{18⊕} (as is the case with the *Avyākṛita*). The cognizer of the two⁸¹ states—deep sleep and *Avyākṛita*—is also one¹⁹ (*viz.*, the Pure Consciousness). It (one in deep sleep) is identical²⁰ with the (apparently) different cognizers identifying themselves with the conditioned (in the states of waking and dream), and therefore such attributes as “unified,” “mass of all consciousness,” etc., as described above, are reasonably applicable to it (one in deep sleep). Other²¹ reason, already stated, supports it. How does, indeed, the word *Prāna*²² apply to the *Avyākṛita* (unmanifested)? It is supported by the *Śruti* passage, “Oh, good one, the mind is tied to the *Prāna*.”

(Objection)—In that *Śruti* passage, the word *Prāna* indicates *Sat* (Existence), *i.e.*, the *Brahman*, (not the *Avyākṛita*) which is the subject-matter under discussion, as the text commences with the passage, “All this was *Sat* in the beginning.”

(Reply)—This is no mistake, for (in that passage) the *Sat* is admitted to be that which contains within it the seed²³ or cause (of creation). Though *Sat*, *i.e.*, *Brahman*, is indicated in that passage by the word ‘*Prāna*’, yet the *Brahman* that is indicated by the words *Sat* and *Prāna* (in that connection) is not the one who is free from its attribute of being the seed or cause that creates all²⁴ beings. For if in that *Śruti* passage, *Brahman*, devoid of the causal relation (*i.e.*, the Absolute) were sought to be described, then the *Śruti* would have used such expressions as “Not this, Not this”, “Wherefrom speech turns back”, “That is something other than both the known and the unknown”, etc.⁸² The *Smṛiti* also declares, “It is neither *Sat* (existence) nor *Asat* (non-existence)” (*Gitā*). If

¹⁸ *Creation*—Both the states of *Avyākṛita* and deep sleep (here called *Prāna*) are followed by a state in which names and forms are manifest. On account of the identity of effects, the causes are also said to be identical.

⊕ from the waking standpoint only
⁸¹ 34

CHAPTER I
 ĀGAMA PRAKARANA

¹⁹ *One*—The identity of deep sleep and *Avyākṛita* is further demonstrated from the identity of their common cognizer, *viz.*, Pure Consciousness.

²⁰ *Identical*—The meaning is that the perceiver of the three states is one and the same.

²¹ *Other, etc.*—*viz.*, the identity of *Adhyātma* and *Adhidaiva*.

²² *Prāna*—The contention of the objector is that the ordinary meaning of *Prāna* is vital breath having five aspects, *viz.*, *Prāna*, *Apāna*, *Samāna*, *Vyāna* and *Udāna*.

²³ *Seed*—That is, the *Saguna Brahman*.

²⁴ *All, etc.*—Both animate and inanimate.

CHAPTER I
 ĀGAMA PRAKARANA

by the text were meant the (Absolute) devoid of causal relation then the coming back, to the relative plane of consciousness, of those who were in deep sleep and unified with *Sat* at the time of *Pralaya* (cosmic dissolution), could²⁵ not happen. Further, (in that case) the liberated souls would again come back to the relative plane of consciousness; for, the absence of seed or cause (capable of giving birth to the world of names and forms) would be the common²⁶ feature of both.

Further, in the absence of the seed²⁷ (cause, *i.e.*, at the time of *Sushupti* and *Pralaya*) which can be destroyed by Knowledge (alone), Knowledge itself becomes futile. Therefore the word *Sat* (the text of the *Chhândogya Upanishad*, the passage under discussion) in that aspect in which causality is attributed to it, is indicated by *Prāna*, and accordingly has been described in all the *Śrutis* as the cause.²⁸ It is for this reason also that the Absolute *Brahman*, dissociated from its causal attribute, has been indicated in such *Śruti* passages as “It is beyond the unmanifested which is higher than the manifested”, “He is causeless and is the substratum of the external (effect) and the internal (cause)”, “Wherefrom words come back...”, “Not this, not this”, etc. That which is designated as *Prājna* (when it is viewed as the cause of the phenomenal world) will be described as *Turiya* separately when it is not viewed as the cause, and when it is free from all phenomenal relationship (such as that of the body, etc.) *i.e.*, in its

²⁵ *Could not, etc.*—For, after the realisation of the Absolute *Brahman* return to the plane of ignorance is not possible. But the person who goes into the *Sushupti* or the *Avyākṛita* state without attaining *Jnānam* again returns to the plane of ignorance. It is the *Knowledge of Brahman* alone which is the condition of liberation but not mere absence of duality *without knowledge*, which can be experienced in deep sleep, swoon or trance.

²⁶ *Common feature*—If Existence free from causal relation. *i.e.*, the *Absolute Brahman*, be the meaning of *Sat* in the Scriptural passage under discussion, then the reverting of the deep sleeper, who has yet attained to *Jnānam*, to the dual plane of consciousness would not be possible. And if a Person, after realising the *Absolute Brahman*, is it to come back to the state of duality, then *Jnānam* or liberation would be impermanent. The meaning is this: At the time of *Pralaya* when the Created beings become unified with *sat* r Existence they do not become really the *Absolute Brahman*. They remain only in a seed or potential condition and therefore they reappear at the time of creation. Similarly, an ignorant person who goes into deep sleep retains in a latent form, all his previous impressions of duality and gets them back after coming down from the state of *Sushupti*. But a *Jnāni*, once realising his identity with *Absolute Brahman*, never comes back to the sense (of the reality) of dual existence.

²⁷ *Seed*—The causal standpoint comprises false apprehension and non-apprehension as well as their effects. The *Naiyāyikas*[®] affirm this causal standpoint, popularly known as the cosmic ignorance, to be a *Padārtha* or independent category which arises in the absence of the contact of the sense-organ with its object. Therefore *Ajnānam*, according to them, is a negation or *Abhāva*. But according to *Vedānta*, *Ajnānam* is not purely a negation (characterising the *Āvarana* aspect), but a negation continued with an affirmation or creation (*Vikshepa* aspect). It is not an independent category but dependent upon present consciousness and comprehended by it. This ignorance is destroyed by the knowledge of truth.

[®] The doctrines of the *Naiyāyikas* are irrational and imagined; they will not bear deep enquiry.

²⁸ *Cause*—It is because a causal explanation is necessary.

absolutely⁸³ Real aspect. The causal Condition is also verily experienced in this body from such²⁹ cognition of the man who is awakened from the deep sleep, as “I did not know anything (at the time of deep sleep)”. Therefore it is said that (one) *Ātman* is perceived as threefold³⁰ in the (one) body.

(“Hindi⁸⁴ passage omitted here”)

3. *Viśwa*⁸⁵ always experiences the gross (object) *Taijasa* the subtle and *Prājna* the blissful. Know these to be the threefold experiences.

(“Hindi passage omitted here”)

4. The gross (object) satisfies *Viśwa*, the subtle the *Taijasa* and the blissful the *Prājna*. Know these to be the threefold satisfaction.

ŚANKARA’S COMMENTARY.

Verses 3 and 4 have already been explained.

(“Hindi passage omitted here”)

5. He who knows both the experiencer and the objects of experience that have been described (to be associated) with the three states, is not affected though experiencing the objects (thereof).

⁸³ 36

CHAPTER I

ĀGAMA PRAKARANA

²⁹ *Such cognition*—The experience of the absence of knowledge in *Sushupti* is possible only for a man who is awakened from deep sleep. From the perception in the waking state of a change involving names and forms, he thinks of the previous state of deep sleep as devoid of them. Therefore the knowledge of deep sleep is possible only in the waking state. This shows that *Sushupti* is knowable only in *Jāgrat* consciousness.

³⁰ *As threefold*—The meaning is this: That the *Ātman* is the witness of the three states is known from the perception of the change of one state into another. The *Ātman* is the witness not only of the three states but also of their cognizer, *viz.*, *Viśwa*, *Taijasa* and *Prājna*. In this body and in the *Jāgrat* state alone, the three states as well as their cognizers are perceived.

⁸⁴ 39

CHAPTER I

ĀGAMA PRAKARANA

⁸⁵ 40

CHAPTER I

ĀGAMA PRAKARANA

ŚANKARA'S COMMENTARY.

In the three states, namely, waking, etc., the one¹ and the same object of experience appears in threefold forms as the gross, the subtle and the blissful. Further, the experiencer (of the three states) known (differently) as *Viśwa*, *Taijasa* and *Prājna* has been described as one on account of the unity² of consciousness implied in such³ cognition as 'I am that' (common to all conditions), as well as from the absence⁴ of any distinction in respect of the perceiver. He who knows the two (experiencer and the objects of experience), appearing as many in⁸⁶ the form of subject and objects of experience, though enjoying them, is⁵ not affected thereby; because⁶ all objects (of experience) are experienced by one subject alone. As (the heat of the) fire⁷ does not increase or decrease by consuming wood, etc., so also nothing⁸ is added to or taken away (from the knowingness or awareness of the *Ātman*) by its experience of that which is its object.

¹ *One and the same, etc.*—It is because the experiences of the three states are only the different forms of thought or ideas.

² *Unity of, etc.*—That the experiencer of the three states is one and identical is also perceived in the waking consciousness.

³ *Such cognition, etc.*—This cognition takes the following form: I, who now have been perceiving objects in the waking state, had seen forms (ideas) in dream and experienced nothing in deep sleep.

⁴ *Absence, etc.*—There is nothing to suggest that the experiencers of the three states are different.

⁸⁶ 41

CHAPTER I

ĀGAMA PRAKARANA

⁵ *Is not, etc.*—He who knows that the three states are one and that their perceivers are also one, is not affected by the experiences of the states, nor does he identify himself with the (apparently separate) perceivers thereof. He is not affected because he clearly perceives that objects which appeared as real in the waking and dream states disappear again in the deep sleep. Therefore he is convinced of the unreality of dream and waking experiences. As a witness, he views unaffected the cropping up of these ideas of experience (in dream and waking) and also their disappearance (in *Sushupti*).

⁶ *Because—i.e.,* it is because one *Ātman* in three forms alternately perceives the emergence and disappearance of the experiencer and all objects of experience. Hence he knows them to be unreal.

⁷ *Does not, etc.*—The principle of heat remains the same irrespective of the quantity of wood it consumes.

⁸ *Nothing, etc.*—The Self or *Ātman*, when it knows that it is the witness of the three states, is not subject to any modification by the experience of the objects thereof, because he knows these objects (including their perceivers) as mere ("Hindi passage omitted here") or his own thoughts, and hence unreal. An imaginary tiger or the one seen in dream cannot harm its perceiver.

("Hindi⁸⁷ passage omitted here")

6. It is thoroughly established that the coming into effect can be predicated only of all positive entities that exist. The Prāna manifests all; the Purusha creates the conscious beings (the Jivas) in their manifold form separately.

ŚANKARA'S COMMENTARY.

The manifestation can be predicated of positive¹ entities comprehended as the different forms of *Viśwa*, *Taijasa* and *Prājna*—whose existence, of the nature of illusory names and forms caused by an innate *Avidyā* (ignorance), cannot be denied. This is thus explained later on: "Neither in reality nor in illusion can the son of a barren woman be said to be born." For, if things could come out of non-entity, Brahman whose existence is inferred from experience² will itself be rendered a non-entity because of the absence of means of comprehension. That the snake (in the rope) appearing as such on account of an illusory cause (*Māyā*) which itself is the effect of ignorance (*Avidyā*), pre-exists in the form of the rope is a matter of common experience. For by no one is the illusion of the rope-snake or the mirage, etc., ever perceived without a substratum. As before the illusory³ appearance of the snake, its existence was certainly there in the rope, so also all⁴ positive⁸⁸ entities before their manifestation certainly exist in the form of a cause, *i.e.*, *Prāna*. The *Śruti* also declares this in such passages as: "All this (the phenomenal universe) was verily Brahman at the beginning" and "All this existed, at the beginning as *Ātman*." *Prāna* manifests all. As the rays proceed from the sun, so also all different centres of consciousness (*i.e.*, the *Jivas*) which are like the

⁸⁷ 42

CHAPTER I ĀGAMA PRAKARANA

¹ *Positive, etc.*—*Kārikās* from 6 to 9 give different views of the manifestation. The *Kārikā* under discussion points out that the manifested universe is not non-existent like the son of a barren woman. It has an empirical existence. The object of this is only to show that no causal relation can be predicated of Brahman as *Prājna* unless we admit the positive existence of the world. The detailed discussion about causality will be found in the body of the *Kārikā*.

² *Will itself*—Those who depend upon causality to prove the existence of Brahman cannot but believe in the existence of the manifested objects through which alone they infer Brahman as the cause of all.

³ *Illusory*—*Vedānta* makes a distinction between *Avidyā* and *Māyā*, from the causal standpoint. *Māyā* is associated with *Īśvara* and it presents the variety in the universe. Comp. *Vedānta Sutra*, 1.4.3 and 2.1.14.

⁴ *All*—It means here only the inanimate objects as the manifestation of the inanimate is ascribed to the *Purusha*.

⁸⁸ 43

CHAPTER I ĀGAMA PRAKARANA

(many) reflections of the same sun in the water and which are manifested differently as *Viśwa*, *Taijasa* and *Prājna*, comprising various physical forms of gods, animals, etc., proceed from the *Purusha*⁵. The *Purusha* manifests all these entities called as living beings, which are different from inanimate objects, but of the same nature as itself (*Purusha*), like fire and its sparks and like the sun with its reflections in water. *Prāna*, the causal self, manifests all other entities like the spider producing the web. There are such scriptural passages in its support as, "The sparks from the fire, etc."

("Hindi⁸⁹ passage omitted here")

7. Those who think of (the process of) creation believe it to be the manifestation of the superhuman power of God; while others look upon it as of the same nature as dream and illusion.

ŚANKARA'S COMMENTARY.

Creation is the manifestation of the superhuman power of God¹; thus think those who reflect on (the process of) creation. But² those who intently think³ of the Ultimate Reality find no interest in (the theory of) creation. It (that no interest should be attached to the act of creation) is also supported by such *Śruti* passages as, "*Indra* (the great god) assumed diverse forms through *Māyā*". The juggler throws the thread up in the sky, climbs by it with his arms, disappears from⁹⁰ the sight (of the spectators), engages himself in a fight (in the sky) in which his limbs, having been severed, fall to the ground and he rises up again. The on-looker, though witnessing the performance, does not evince any interest in the thought in regard to the reality of the jugglery performed by

⁵ *Purusha*—It is indicated by the text as well as the commentary that there are two manifestors, namely, the *Purusha* and the *Prāna*. The *Purusha* manifests the *Jivas* and *Prāna* the inanimate objects. From the empirical standpoint we see two kinds of manifestations, viz., the sentient and the insentient. Therefore we naturally ascribe these to two manifestors, viz., *Purusha* and *Prāna*. (The general principle of causality is that the like produces the like.) But, in reality, *Prāna* is identical with *Purusha*. Brahman is looked upon as the manifestor of the universe; when he manifests the insentient objects he is said to be *Prāna*, and when he manifests the sentient beings he is called *Purusha*.

⁸⁹ 44

CHAPTER I ĀGAMA PRAKARANA

¹ *God*—He is naturally the Personal God. This is the theistic theory of creation.

² *But*—The seekers after God as creator may be either those who hold that creation is real or those who hold that creation is illusory. In the latter case Śankara compares the seekers after truth to those who are interested in the magician and not in the magical feats.

³ *Intently think*—i.e., still pursuing the law of causation. Those who uphold the *Māyā* theory of the world see the illusion and infer *Turiya* as the Transcendental Cause.

⁹⁰ 45

CHAPTER I ĀGAMA PRAKARANA

the juggler. Similarly there is a real juggler who is other than the rope and the one that climbs up the rope. The manifestation of deep sleep, dream and waking is analogous to the throwing up of the rope by the juggler (in the above illustration) and the (empirical selves known as) *Prājna*, *Viśwa* and *Taijasa*, related to the three states, are similar to the juggler, who appears to have climbed up the rope. As he, the juggler, remains on the ground unseen (by the on-lookers) having veiled himself, as it were, by his illusion, so also is the truth about the Highest Reality known as *Turiya*.⁴ Therefore those noble souls seeking *Moksha* evince interest in the contemplation of this (the *Turiya*) but not in the creation which is futile.⁵ The word, '*Svapnamāyāsarupa*' – meaning, alike dream and illusion—is intended to show that all⁶ these (false) notions (regarding manifestation) belong only to those who imagine the process of creation or manifestation.

("Hindi⁹¹ passage omitted here")

8. *Those who affirm (the existence of the) manifested objects attribute this is manifestation to the mere will of God. while those who look upon time as real declare time to be the manifestor of all beings.*

ŚANKARA'S COMMENTARY.

The manifestation proceeds from the mere will of God because His will in reality cannot¹ but achieve its purpose. Such objects as pot, etc., are but² the (manifestation of the) will (of the potter). They can never be anything external or unrelated to such will. Some say manifestation proceeds from time.

⁴ *Turiya*—The text contemplates two alternative theories of creation ((“Hindi passage omitted here”)) namely, (i) creation is real in so far as it is mere manifestation of God’s real power, (ii) creation being manifested as an illusion by God ((“Hindi passage omitted here”)) Both the alternative theories lay emphasis on the act of creation and this is pointed out by Śankara in his commentary. Śankara indicates in his commentary that those who seek the Highest Reality ((“Hindi passage omitted here”)) are not interested in any theory of creation.

⁵ *Futile*—The truth about the Highest Reality can be realised only by the highest Knowledge and not by any thought bestowed upon creation.

⁶ *All these, etc.*—Because *Māyā* is also admitted to be a fact by the *Māyāvādins*, their theory does not also convoy the highest truth.

⁹¹ 46

CHAPTER I ĀGAMA PRAKARANA

¹ *Cannot, etc.*—It is because they look upon the world as real, therefore they affirm that God whose will manifests the world cannot but be real.

² *But*—The potter, first of all, conceives in his mind the name and form of the object and then creates it.

("Hindi⁹² passage omitted here")

9. Others think that the manifestation is for the purpose of enjoyment (of God) while still others attribute it to mere diversion (on the part of God). But it is the very nature of the Effulgent Being (Ātman) (for), what other desire is possible for Him whose desire is always in the state of fulfilment?

ŚANKARA'S COMMENTARY.

Others think that the purpose of manifestation is only the enjoyment (by God of the objects so created), that creation is merely a diversion of God. These two theories are refuted (by the author) by the single assertion that it is the very¹ nature of the Effulgent (Brahman). Thus taking this standpoint (the nature of the Effulgent Being) all² the theories (of creation) herein (stated) are refuted³ for the reason indicated by:

⁹² 47

CHAPTER I

ĀGAMA PRAKARANA

¹ *Very nature*—According to Gaudapāda, what others see as the created universe, is nothing but the very nature or essence of Brahman. Brahman alone exists. What others designate as the universe of names and forms—subject to birth, change, death, etc.—is nothing but the non-dual Brahman. That one sees the world of duality instead of the non-dual Brahman and seeks its cause is due to *Avidyā* or ignorance.

² *All the, etc.*—The following theories of creation have been stated in the preceding *Slokas* of the *Kārikā*.

- (i) Creation is the manifestation of the divine power of God (K.6).
- (ii) Creation is the manifestation of the nature of dream or illusion (K. 6).
- (iii) Creation is the manifestation of the Divine Will which cannot be fulfilled (K. 7).
- (iv) Creation is the manifestation which proceeds from "time". *Īśvara* is indifferent about it (K. 7).

The above four theories of creation may be classed as cosmological. The following two theories which may be designated as teleological are given in *Kārikā* 9:

- (v) Creation is for the purpose of the enjoyment of God.
- (vi) Creation is an act of God's sport.

Now all these theories are refuted by the simple statement that Brahman, whose desires are always in a state of fulfilment, cannot create the world for any purpose whatsoever. No causal theory can explain the relation of the appearance of the world to Brahman. The assumption of will, desire, enjoyment, diversion, etc., as the causes of creation is due to *Avidyā* or ignorance of the human mind regarding the real nature ("Hindi passage omitted here") of Brahman. It only reveals the ignorance ("Hindi passage omitted here") of the human mind in regard to the origin of the world which is one of the objects displaying God's superhuman powers. Those who look upon *the act of creation as real* and then explain it as of the same nature as dream and illusion, forget that dream and illusion are, after all, unreal and hence they cannot explain the supposed reality of the act of creation. Therefore, manifestation is not an act of creation. No *will* can be the *cause* of creation because a will implies an effort at gratifying some unsatiated desire. Brahman is Bliss ("Hindi passage omitted here") which means the absence of all wants. Therefore the Divine Will cannot be the cause of the universe. The human mind, subject to *Māyā*, ascribes will, diversion, etc., as the cause of creation. This ascription is itself *Māyā*. Therefore it stands to reason that if anybody sees creation, it is only due to *Māyā*. Therefore all theories regarding creation are

“What could be the desire for manifestation on the part of Brahman whose desires are ever in a state of fulfilment?” For the rope, etc., to appear as snake, no⁴ other reason can be assigned than *Avidyā*.*

ŚANKARA’S⁹³ INTRODUCTION TO UPANISHAD.

The fourth¹ quarter which now comes in order (for explanation) has to be described. This is done in the words of the text: “Not conscious of the internal object.” It (*Turiya*) does not admit of description or indication by means of words, for all uses (affirmative or negative) of language fail to express it. Therefore *Turiya* is sought² to be indicated by the negation of all attributes (characteristics).

(Objection) – Then it becomes mere void or *Śunya*.

(Reply) – No,³ because it is impossible for false imagination to exist without⁴ a substratum. The illusion of silver, a snake, a man or mirage, etc., cannot be conceived

in fact (“Hindi passage omitted here”), that is, due to the ignorance of the mind that sees it. Viewed from the relative standpoint this *Māyā* inheres either in Brahman or in the perceiver. Assigning a substratum for *Māyā* depends upon one’s standpoint. Viewed from the *Avidyā* standpoint *Māyā* has its locus in Brahman.

³ *Refuted, etc.* – The two theories implied by the first line of the *Kārikā* are refuted simply because “enjoyment” and “diversion” cannot be proved to be the object of creation. Creation or manifestation implies some adventitious or external factor, which idea is refuted by the statement of the Scripture that “It is the very nature of the Effulgent Brahman.”

⁴ *No other reason* – Comp. the Scriptural passage, (“Hindi passage omitted here”) – which means that it is the *Ātman* that appears as *Ākāśā*. The appearance is due to *Māyā* and no external cause.

* Because you do not know you ask the question “Why did God create the world?”. Thus it is only ignorance which assumes purposive causation. The original editor inserted footnote by hand

⁹³ 49

CHAPTER I ĀGAMA PRAKARANA

¹ *Fourth quarter* – The “fourth” is not the *fourth state* or *condition* in which *Ātman* is to be viewed. *Turiya* which is indicated here as the “fourth” comes in only for consideration after the three states have been considered. *Ātman* itself does not admit of any condition or state. Waking, dream and deep sleep are its three states or quarters and *Turiya*, as will be seen later on, is present in all these three. *Turiya* is designated here as the *fourth* because in the preceding texts, threequarters of *Ātman* have been explained. It has occupied the “fourth” place in respect of explanations.

² *Sought to be, etc.* – It is because it cannot be directly pointed out like other objects of perception.

³ *No, etc.* – The contention of the opponent is this: You say that *Turiya* is not void (“Hindi passage omitted here”) as the illusion (“Hindi passage omitted here”) of *Prāna*, etc., cannot subsist without a substratum which is *Turiya*. In that case *Turiya* is not non-indicatable as it can be indicated as

as existing without the (corresponding) substratum of the mother-of-pearl, rope, stump or desert, etc.

(Objection)⁹⁴—If that be the case, *Turiya* ought to be indicatable by words and not by the negation of all attributes. For, it is the substratum of all imaginations such as, *Prāna*, etc., in the same way as jars, etc., which being the substratum of water, etc., are indicated as such by words.

(Reply)—The idea of *Prāna*, etc., (supposed to exist in *Turiya*) is unreal like the false idea of silver, etc., in the mother-of-pearl, etc. A relation⁵ between real and unreal cannot be expressed by words because such relation is, itself, non-existent. *Turiya*

the substratum of *Prāna*, etc. Therefore it must be such as can be indicated. But you say that it is arrived at by more negation and therefore non-indicatable by words. If *Turiya* is indicatable as a substratum, then it becomes indicatable by that which is superimposed upon it as is the case with a pot which is indicatable by the water in it. In that case you contradict yourself as you have already said that Brahman is unindicatable by any word.

To this our reply is:—

We would like to ask you if (i) your idea of indicatability of Brahman as the substratum is that of illusory super-imposition, or (ii) is that of real superimposition.

Einstein

It cannot be thereby illusory superimposition because the super-imposition, in that case, would not appear as existing as it does.

From the standpoint of the empirical reality of the appearance which is experienced by the ignorant persons, we say that *Turiya* is indicatable by the illusory ideas that are superimposed upon it. And if you admit the ideas ((“Hindi passage omitted here”))* of *Prāna*, etc., as unreal, then there is no disagreement between us.

* *Vikalpa*

Again this indicatability of *Turiya* as a substratum cannot be (due to) real superimposition or the superimposition of reality. For, as the idea of silver that is superimposed upon the mother-of-pearl is unreal, so also the idea of *Prāna*, etc., that is superimposed upon *Turiya* is equally unreal. There cannot be any relationship between a real substratum and the unreal form superimposed on it.

Therefore the conclusion is that if one takes his stand upon the causal or relative plane, then *Turiya* may be indicated as a substratum of the illusory ideas of *Prāna*, etc. But from the standpoint of Truth, *Turiya* cannot be indicated by any word which implies relationship. And *Śruti* also denies all relationship in Brahman.

⁴ *Without, etc.*—No illusion can be dissociated from the idea of existence. The first impression that one gets of an illusion is that it exists and later on its existence is traced to a positive substratum.

⁹⁴ 50

CHAPTER I

ĀGAMA PRAKARANA

⁵ *Relation*—Indicatability by words is possible in the following instances only: (i) Possessive case, (ii) conventional meaning of a word, (iii) generic or specific property, (iv) activity, (v) attribute and substance. But none of these applies to *Turiya* because it is one without a second and also it is without any attribute. Hence *Turiya* cannot be indicated by any word.

cannot be the object of any other instrument of knowledge (such as direct perception) like the cow, etc., because of its unique nature, owing to the absence of *Upādhis*. *Ātman* cannot have anything like a generic property, like the cow, etc., because it is devoid of all *Upādhis* or attributes; it has neither generic nor specific characteristics because it is one, without a second. It cannot be known by any activity (proceeding from it) as in the case of a cook; because it is devoid of all actions. It cannot be described by attributes such as blue, etc., because it is without any attribute. Therefore it follows that *Turiya* cannot be indicated by any name.

(Objection) – Then it (*Turiya*) would be like the “horns of a hare” and hence one’s pursuit of it must be futile.⁶

(Reply) – No, the knowledge of *Turiya* as identical with Self (*Ātman*) destroys the hankering after objects⁷ which are non-self just as the knowledge of mother-of-pearl (mistaken⁹⁵ for silver) removes the desire for (illusory) silver. For, once the identity of *Turiya* and Self is realised there is no possibility of one’s being deluded⁸ by ignorance, desire and the like misapprehensions (which are the effects of ignorance) and there is no reason for *Turiya* not being known as identical with the Self. For all the Upanishads point out to this end only as is evident from the following: “That thou art” “This *Ātman* is Brahman”, “That is real and that is *Ātman*”, “The Brahman which is directly and immediately cognized”, “He is both without and within, as well as causeless”, “All this is verily *Ātman*”, etc. This very *Ātman* has been described as constituting the Highest Reality and its opposite⁹ and as having four quarters. Its unreal (illusory) form has been described as due to ignorance, like the illusion of snake in the rope, having for its characteristics the three quarters and being of the same nature as the seed¹⁰ and the sprout. Now is described (in the following *Śruti*) *Turiya* which is not of the nature of

⁶ *Futile* – It is because no benefit can accrue from the knowledge of something which is as unreal as the “mare’s nest”.

⁷ *Objects* – Such as the illusory worldly objects to which the ignorant are attached.

⁹⁵ 51

CHAPTER I

ĀGAMA PRAKARANA

⁸ *Deluded* – Delusion is the cause of all human misery.

⁹ *Its opposite* – i.e., the illusory objects. As a matter of fact, only Brahman exists and He is the One and All. Nothing called unreal ever exists. What appears to the ignorant as unreal or illusory is also Brahman from the highest Advaitic standpoint. Therefore Brahman comprises everything.

¹⁰ *Seed and sprout* – The three states are characterised by the relation of cause and effect as the seed and the sprout are.

cause but which is of the nature of the Highest Reality corresponding to the rope—by negating¹¹ the three states, enumerated above, which correspond to the snake,¹² etc.

VII.⁹⁶

(“Hindi passage omitted here”)

*Turiya*⁹⁷ is not that which is conscious of the internal (subjective) world, nor that which is conscious of the external (objective) world, nor that which is conscious of both, nor that which is a mass all sentiency, nor that which is simple consciousness, nor that which is insentient. (It is) unseen (by any sense organ), not related to anything, incomprehensible (by the mind) uninferable, unthinkable, indescribable, essentially of the nature of Consciousness constituting the Self alone, negation of all phenomena, the Peaceful, all Bliss and the Non-dual. This is what is known as the fourth (*Turiya*). This is the *Ātman* and it has to be realised.

ŚANKARA’S COMMENTARY.

(Objection)—The object was to describe *Ātman* as having four quarters. By the very descriptions of the three quarters, the fourth is established as being other than the three characterised by the “conscious of the subjective” etc. Therefore the negation (of attributes relating to the three quarters) for the purpose of indicating *Turiya* implied in the statement, “*Turiya* is that which is not conscious of the subjective” etc., is futile.

(Reply)—No. As the nature of the rope is¹ realised by the negation of the (illusory) appearances of the snake, etc., so also it is intended to establish the very Self,

¹¹ *Negating, etc.*—The student, at first, by the process of negation separates Brahman from the superimposition and then realises that what has been negated as superimposition is, in fact, the very nature of Brahman. This is the highest Advaitic realisation.

¹² *Snake, etc.*—The rope is often mistaken for a snake or a garland or a stick, or a streak of water or a fissure in the ground.

⁹⁶ 53

CHAPTER I
ĀGAMA PRAKARANA

4

⁹⁷ 54

CHAPTER I
ĀGAMA PRAKARANA

¹ *Is realised*—The rope did not cease to be the rope when it appeared as the snake. The rope, again, is seen in its true nature when the snake idea is removed. Similarly, *Ātman* appears as *Viśva*, *Taijasa* and *Prājna* in the three states. And the same *Ātman* is realised as *Turiya* when the *upādhis*, namely the states, are negated. *Turiya* is not a separate entity nor is it a fourth state

which subsists in the three states, as *Turiya*. This⁹⁸ is done in the same way as (the great Vedic statement) “Thou art that”. If *Turiya* were, in fact, anything different³ from *Ātman* subsisting in the three states, then, the teachings of the Scriptures would have no meaning on⁴ account of the absence of any instrument of knowledge (regarding *Turiya*). Or, the other (inevitable) alternative would be to declare absolute nihilism (“Hindi passage omitted here”) to be the ultimate Truth. Like the (same) rope mistaken as snake, garland, etc., when the same *Ātman* is mistaken as *Antahprajna* (conscious of the subjective) etc., in the three states associated with different characteristics, the knowledge, resulting from the negation of such attributes as the conscious of the subjective, etc., is the means of establishing the absolute absence of the unreal phenomena of the world(imagined) in *Ātman*. As a matter of fact, the two⁵ results,

succeeding the three other states. The real nature of *Turiya* cannot be realised without the negation of the *upādhis* of the three states.

⁹⁸ 55

CHAPTER I

ĀGAMA PRAKARANA

² *This is, etc.*—The real significance of “That thou art”, is *Turiya* and it is realised when the contrary qualities, known as the *upādhis*, indicated by the words “That” and “thou” are eliminated. Similarly, the Scripture by the negative process, removes the *upādhis* of the *Ātman* when associated with the three states and this reveals its eternal identity with *Turiya*.

³ *Different*—From the relative or causal standpoint, the *Ātman* associated with any of the three states is, no doubt, different from *Turiya*. But from the standpoint of *Turiya* there is no difference whatsoever between it and the *Ātman* associated with the three states. As a matter of fact, it is *Turiya* as the witness (“Hindi passage omitted here”) that is revealed out by the three states.

⁴ *On account of*—Ignorant person, for whom Scripture is prescribed for the attainment of Knowledge, moves in the relative plane of the three states. To him the Scripture suggests the examination of the three states in order to arrive at the Knowledge of *Turiya*. If *Turiya* were something totally separate from and essentially unconnected with the three states and if the three states were not the means of realising *Turiya*, then no other instrument of Knowledge would be left for the realisation of *Turiya*. It cannot be contended that one can get the Knowledge of *Turiya* from the Scripture. Because the Scripture also teaches about *Turiya* by the method of repudiation (“Hindi passage omitted here”) of the superimposed attributes (“Hindi passage omitted here”) *i.e.*, by negating the *upādhis* which were superimposed upon *Turiya*. If *Turiya* were something totally different from the three states, then no scriptural teaching would be effective in establishing it. If *Turiya* cannot be established through the examination of the *Ātman* qualified by the three states, by following the scriptural method of negation, then one is faced with the only alternative that the Ultimate Reality is total non-existence (“Hindi passage omitted here”) because no other reality remains after the negation of the *upādhis* of the three states if the existence of *Turiya* be denied.

⁵ *Two results*—The instrument of Knowledge (“Hindi passage omitted here”) by means of which we become aware of the result of the negation of the *upādhis*, namely, the three states, reveals the relationless *Turiya*. It is like the seeing of the real rope (which is never absent) with the cessation of the illusory idea of the snake. It must be carefully noted that the realisation of

namely, the negation of (superimposed) attributes and the disappearance of the unreal phenomena happen at the same time. Therefore no additional⁶ instrument of knowledge or no other⁷ effort is to be made or sought after for the realisation of *Turiya*. With the cessation of the idea of the snake, etc., in the rope, the real nature of the rope becomes revealed and this happens simultaneously with the knowledge of the distinction between the rope and the snake. But those who say that the knowledge, in addition to the removal of the darkness (that envelopes the jar), enables⁸ one to know the jar, may as well affirm⁹ that the act of cutting (a tree), in addition to its undoing the relation of the members of the body intended to be cut, also functions (in other ways) in⁹⁹ other parts of the body. As the act of cutting intended to divide the tree into two is said to be complete with the severance of the parts (of the tree) so also the knowledge employed to perceive the jar covered by the darkness (that envelopes it) attains its purpose when it results in removing the darkness, though that is not the object intended to be produced. In such case the knowledge of the jar, which is invariably¹⁰ connected with the removal of the darkness, is not the result accomplished by the instrument of knowledge. Likewise, the knowledge, which is (here) the same as that which results from the negation of predicates, directed towards the discrimination of such attributes

Turiya is not the result of the *Pramāna* by means of which we become aware of the negation of the attributes of *Ātman*, viz., the three states. The two results are simultaneous—and not successive in time as the language seems to imply. It is because no new entity known as *Turiya* is discovered (or comes into existence) after the negation of *upādhis*. *Turiya* is always present. Therefore there is no possibility of taking *Turiya* as the result of the negation of the *upādhis*, viz., the three states. *Turiya* being characterised by non-duality there is no subject-object relationship in *Turiya* in which case alone an instrument of Knowledge would have a meaning.

⁶ *Additional instrument, etc.*—No instrument of Knowledge can establish *Turiya* on account of its non-relational and non-dual nature. Even the function of the *Śruti* which indicates *Turiya* is only to negate what is unreal, relative and non-Brahman.

⁷ *Other effort*—Even contemplation, etc., which are the essential features of *Yoga* cannot establish *Turiya*, because it cannot be *proved* that *Yogic* contemplation can yield such Knowledge. Therefore the realisation of *Turiya* cannot be characterised as the result of any particular instrument of Knowledge or of any *Yogic* practice.

⁸ *Enables, etc.*—This means that the instrument of Knowledge, besides removing the darkness enveloping the Jar, also yields another positive result that is the manifestation of the Jar.

⁹ *Affirm*—This means that the act of cutting, besides severing the parts to which it is directed also functions in other ways. But this is absurd because we have no knowledge of any other effect on the tree produced by the act of cutting.

⁹⁹ 56

CHAPTER I

ĀGAMA PRAKARANA

¹⁰ *Invariably, etc.*—It is because the Jar always exists even when it is enveloped in darkness.

as “the conscious of the subjective” etc., superimposed upon *Ātman*, cannot¹¹ function with regard to *Turiya* in addition to its act of negating of such attributes as “the conscious of the subjective” which is not the object intended to be produced. For, with the negation of the attributes such as conscious of the subjective, etc., is¹² accomplished simultaneously the cessation of the distinction between the knower, the known and the knowledge. Thus it will be said later on, “Duality cannot exist when Gnosis, the highest Truth (non-duality), is realised.” The knowledge cannot exist even for a moment immediately after the moment of the cessation of duality. If it should remain, there would¹³ follow what is known as *regressus ad infinitum*; and consequently duality will never cease. Therefore it is established that the cessation of such unreal attributes as “conscious of the subjective” etc., superimposed¹⁰⁰ upon *Ātman* is¹⁴ simultaneous with the manifestation of the Knowledge which, in itself, is the means (*pramāna*) for the negation of duality.

By the statement that it (*Turiya*) is “not conscious of the subjective” is indicated that it is not “*Taijasa*”. Similarly by the statement that it is “not conscious of the objective” it is denied that it (*Turiya*) is *Viśva*. By saying that it is “not conscious of either”, it is denied that *Turiya* is any intermediate state between¹⁵ the waking and the dream states. By the statement that *Turiya* is “not a mass all sentiency”, it is denied that

¹¹ *Cannot function*—It is because *Turiya* is Knowledge itself. Hence no instrument of Knowledge can act upon it. *Turiya* does not stand in need of any demonstration or proof because it is ever-existent. The instrument of Knowledge only removed the superimpositions falsely attributed to *Ātman*. The instrument of Knowledge (perception) continues to act upon an object till the object is revealed (as Brahman).

¹² *Is accomplished*—The instrument of Knowledge, invariably connected with its employer and an object, can act only in the plane of duality. With the negation of duality, the instrument of Knowledge itself becomes ineffective, for it cannot function the next moment. The idea of time is also annihilated with the destruction of duality. When the non-dual *Turiya* is realised, all ideas of the instrument of Knowledge, the employer and the object with their distinction are destroyed. Only Brahman is.

¹³ *Would follow, etc.*—It is because a second instrument of Knowledge would be required to negate the residual Knowledge or instrument and a third would be necessary to negate the second and so on *ad infinitum*. An argument ending in a *regressus* is not allowed in logical discussion.

¹⁰⁰ 57

CHAPTER I

ĀGAMA PRAKARANA

¹⁴ *Is simultaneous*—Here *Pramāna* is the *Jñānam* that results from the negation of attributes. And through this instrument of Knowledge alone we know that all relative ideas have been negated. Simultaneously with this assurance, *Turiya* is realised.

¹⁵ *Intermediate, etc.*—It is the state when one experiences something like a “day dream” that is, he half sees the one and half sees the other.

it is the condition of deep sleep – which is held to be a causal¹⁶ condition on account of one's inability to distinguish the truth from error (in deep sleep). By saying that it is "not simple consciousness", it is implied that *Turiya* cannot¹⁷ simultaneously cognize the entire world of consciousness (by a single act of consciousness). And lastly by the statement that it is "not unconsciousness", it is implied that *Turiya* is not insentient or of the nature of matter.

(Objection) – How,¹⁸ again, do such attributes as "conscious of the subjective," etc., which are (directly) perceived to subsist in *Ātman* become non-existent only by an act of negation as the snake, etc. (perceived) in the rope, etc., become non-existent (by means of an act of negation)?

(Reply) – Though¹⁹ the states (waking and dream) are really of the essence of consciousness itself, and as such are non-different from each other (from the point of

¹⁶ *Causal condition* – By seeing the manifestation in the waking state one naturally infers that the preceding state, that is *Sushupti*, is the cause of both the waking and dream experiences. In *Sushupti*, specific states of consciousness, which manifest themselves as different objects in dream and waking states, remain in a state of indistinguishability. In deep sleep, no distinctions are perceived.

¹⁷ *Cannot, etc.* – By this are denied such attributes as omniscience, etc., associated with *Īswara*.

¹⁸ *How, etc.* – The contention of the objector is this: That the idea of the snake, etc., in the rope is an illusion is a matter of common experience. When the error is pointed out, the idea of the snake disappears. Therefore the idea of such a snake can be said to be non-existent. But this is not the case with the attributes of *Ātman* which are sought to be negated. Such attributes are directly perceived by everyone and do not vanish even though they are negated. Therefore the phenomena of the three states cannot be said to be non-existent on the analogy of the rope and the snake.

¹⁹ *Though, etc.* – The reply is that the attributes, *viz.*, the three states, can be demonstrated to be non-existent (unreal) by the act of negation. The illustration of the snake and the rope is quite opposite. The ideas of the snake, the water-line, etc., for which the rope is mistaken are first pointed out to be illusion because they are subject to change. Therefore, such objects as are indicated by the ideas are non-existent. Similarly it is a matter of common experience that the states of *Jāgrat*, *Swapna* and *Sushupti* are subject to change. Therefore they are negatable. In any one state the two other states are negated. Besides, in the state of waking one can realise the three states as following one another. Therefore the three states partake of the nature of unreality as distinguished from Reality which is never subject to any change. Now, what is Reality? From the examination of the three states it becomes clear that though the states are changing and negatable, the consciousness which is present therein is constant and invariable. Change of one state to another cannot affect the unchanging nature of Consciousness itself. Therefore pure Consciousness is real. Hence it follows that by constantly examining the changeable and negatable character of the attributes, *viz.*, the three states, one can realise their non-existent or unreal nature. The fallacy of the contention of the objector is due to the partial examination of Reality in only one state in which case the changeable nature of the attributes

view of the substratum), yet one state is seen to¹⁰¹ change²⁰ into another as do the appearances of the snake, water line, etc., having for their substratum the rope, etc. But the consciousness itself is real because it never changes.

(Objection) – Consciousness is seen to change (disappear) in deep sleep.

(Reply) – No, the state of deep sleep is a matter of experience.²¹ For the *Śruti* says, “Knowledge of the Knower is never absent.”

Hence it (*Turiya*) is “unseen”²²; and because it is unseen therefore it is “incomprehensible”.²³ *Turiya* cannot be apprehended by the organs of action. *Alakshanam* means “uninferable”,²⁴ because there is no *Linga* (common characteristic) for its inference. Therefore *Turiya* is “unthinkable”²⁵ and hence “indescribable”²⁶ (by words). It is “essentially”²⁷ of the nature of consciousness consisting of Self.” *Turiya* should be known by spotting that consciousness that never changes in the three states,

cannot be realised. But the examination of the three states at once demonstrates their changeable and negatable nature and points out that consciousness itself which is the substratum of the changing attributes is the only Reality.

¹⁰¹ 58

CHAPTER I

ĀGAMA PRAKARANA

²⁰ *Change* – That is, no one is aware of consciousness in deep sleep.

²¹ *Experience* – Consciousness cannot be dissociated from the state of deep sleep. *Sushupti* is experienced from the *Jāgrat* state, that is to say, *Turiya* in *Jāgrat* state knows that it experienced deep sleep. Otherwise *Sushupti* would have never been known to exist at all.

²² *Unseen* – It cannot be recognised by any organ of perception. It is because *Turiya* is the negation of all the attributes. It cannot be made the object of any sense-organ.

²³ *Incomprehensible* – It cannot come within the cognizance of senses; therefore *Turiya* cannot serve any purpose (“Hindi passage omitted here”).

²⁴ *Uninferable* – “Existence, Knowledge and Infinity,” by which Brahman is described in the *Taittiriya Upanishad* are not to be considered to be real and positive attributes for the purpose of drawing an inference about Brahman. They only serve a negative purpose indicating that Brahman is other than non-truth, non-consciousness and non-infinity. Besides, inference requires a common feature which always presupposes more objects than one. But Brahman is one and without a second; therefore no inference is possible regarding Brahman.

²⁵ *Unthinkable* – It is because the predicates by which we can think about an entity have been totally eliminated from *Turiya*.

²⁶ *Indescribable* – *Turiya* cannot be described by words because it is unthinkable. That which one thinks in mind, is expressed by words.

²⁷ *Essentially, etc.* – The elimination of all the attributes may make *Turiya* appear as a void to the unwary student. Therefore it is described as a positive existence which can be realised by spotting it as the changeless and the constant factor in the three states. The states, no doubt, do change but there is a unity of the subject implied in the conscious experience of “I am that perceiver” common to all the three conditions.

viz., waking, etc., and whose nature is that of a Unitary Self. Or,²⁸ the phrase may signify that the knowledge of the one *Ātman* alone is the means for realising *Turiya*, and therefore *Turiya* is the essence of this consciousness of Self or *Ātman*. The *Śruti* also says, "It should be meditated* upon as *Ātman*." Several attributes, such as the "conscious of the subjective" etc., associated with the manifestation (such as, *Viśwa*, etc.) in each of the states have already been negated. Now by describing *Turiya* as "the cessation of illusion", the attributes which characterise the three states, *viz.*, waking,¹⁰² etc., are negated. Hence it is "ever²⁹ Peaceful" *i.e.*, without any manifestation of change—and "all³⁰ bliss". As it is non-dual, *i.e.*, devoid of illusory ideas of distinction, therefore it is called "*Turiya*", the "Fourth",³¹ because it is totally distinct (in character) from the three quarters which are mere appearances. "This, indeed, is the *Ātman* and it should be known," is intended to show that the meaning of the Vedic statement, "That thou art", points to the relationless *Ātman* (*Turiya*) which is like the rope (in the illustration) different from the snake, line on the ground, stick, etc., which are mere appearances. That *Ātman* which has been described in such *Śruti* passages as "unseen, but the seer", "the consciousness of the seer is never absent", etc., should be known. (The incomprehensible) *Turiya* "should be known", and this³² is said so only from the standpoint of the previously unknown condition, for *duality* cannot exist when the Highest Truth is known.

Here¹⁰³ appear the following *slokas*:—

²⁸ Or—The alternative meaning is that through consciousness of Self alone, which forms the basis of the three states, we can demonstrate *Turiya* which transcends all the states, or in other words, because there is Pure Consciousness, changeless and constant, known as *Turiya*, therefore we are aware of self-consciousness in the three states.

* *thought*The original editor inserted footnote "thought" by hand

102 59

CHAPTER I

ĀGAMA PRAKARANA

²⁹ *Ever-peaceful*—Free from attachment of love and hate, *i.e.*, changeless and immutable.

³⁰ *All Bliss*—Pure and embodiment of the highest Bliss.

³¹ *Fourth*—This does not signify any numerical relationship with the three other states narrated previously. *Turiya* is called the "*fourth*" because it occupies the "fourth" place in order of explanation of Brahman of which the three states have previously been dealt with.

³² *This is, etc.*—The statement that "It should be known", cannot be properly made with regard to the non-dual *Ātman* which is incomprehensible, etc. This objection is, no doubt, valid from the standpoint of *Turiya* where there cannot be a separate knower of *Ātman*. But *Turiya* is certainly unknown from the standpoint of any of the three states, and from that dual standpoint it is perfectly legitimate to speak of Brahman as something "to be known".

103 65

CHAPTER I

ĀGAMA PRAKARANA

("Hindi passage omitted here")

10. *In it which is indicated as the changeless and the Supreme Lord, there is a cassation of all miseries. It is the one without a second, among all entities. It is known as the Turiya (Fourth), effulgent and all-pervading.*

ŚANKARA'S COMMENTARY.

In (the Knowledge of) *Isāna*, meaning the *Turiya Ātman* there is a cessation¹ of all miseries characterised by the three states, *viz.*, *Prājna*,² *Taijasa* and *Viśwa*. The word '*Isāna*' is explained as '*Prabhu*' *i.e.*, the one who brings about the cessation of miseries. It is because misery is destroyed by one's Knowledge³ of it (*Turiya*). '*Avyaya*' means that which is not subject to any change, *i.e.*, which does not deviate from its own nature. How? It is so because *Turiya* is non-dual, all⁴ other entities being illusory (unreal) like the idea of the snake, etc., imagined in the rope. It is he who is recognised⁵ as the *Deva* (on account of his effulgent nature), the *Turiya*, the Fourth, the *Vibhu*,⁶ that is the all-pervading one.

("Hindi¹⁰⁴ passage omitted here")

11. *Viśwa and Taijasa are conditioned by cause and effect. But Prājna is conditioned by cause alone. These two (cause and effect) do not exist in Turiya.*

¹ *Cessation*—The three states are said to be in the *Ātman* because we, as *Turiya*, cognize them. Therefore all misery as well as its cause associated with the three states, are imagined by us to subsist in *Turiya*. It is because we do not realise we identify ourselves with the states that we suffer from various kinds of miseries. But a complete cessation of miseries ensues if we realise the *Ātman* as *Turiya* and thus witness the appearance and disappearance of the ideas, *viz.*, the states without identifying ourselves with them.

² *Prājna*—The state of *Sushupti*, devoid of the Knowledge of *Turiya* on the part of the sleeper, is characterised as unhappiness.

³ *Knowledge*—Though *Turiya* is constant in all the states, yet we suffer from misery because we are not aware of the existence of the *Turiya*. It is only the Knowledge of *Turiya* that can destroy misery.

⁴ *All other, etc*—Though *Viśwa*, etc., are perceived, they are really illusory like the ideas of the snake, etc., in the rope. *Turiya* alone is real. Every part of *Viśwa*, *Taijasa* and *Prājna* is nothing but *Turiya* as every part of the illusory snake is the rope. Therefore from the highest standpoint only *Turiya* is.

⁵ *Recognised*—That is *Turiya*, as such, is known from the realisation of the wise.

⁶ *Vibhu*—*Turiya* is called *Vibhu* because it pervades all the three states.

ŚANKARA'S COMMENTARY.

The generic¹ and specific² characters of *Viśwa*, etc., are described with a view to determining the real nature of *Turiya*. 'Kārya' or effect is that which is done, *i.e.*, which has the characteristic of result. 'Kāraṇa' or the cause is that which acts, *i.e.*, it is the state in which the effect remains latent. Both *Viśwa* and¹⁰⁵ *Taijasa*, described above, are known as being conditioned by cause and effect,³ characterised by both non-apprehension and mis-apprehension of Reality. But *Prājna* is conditioned by cause alone. Cause, characterised by the non-apprehension of Reality, is the condition of *Prājna*. Therefore these two, cause and effect, *i.e.*, non-apprehension and mis-apprehension of Reality, do not exist, *i.e.*, are not possible in *Turiya*.

("Hindi passage omitted here")

12. *Prājna does not know anything of the self or the non-self, nor truth, nor untruth. But Turiya is ever existent and ever all-seeing.*

ŚANKARA'S¹⁰⁶ COMMENTARY.

How is it that *Prājna* is conditioned by cause? And how is it, again, that the two conditions of non-apprehension and mis-apprehension of Reality do not exist in *Turiya*? It is because *Prājna* does not, like *Viśwa* and *Taijasa*, perceive anything of the duality¹,

¹ *Generic*—The generic or the common characteristic of *Viśwa* and *Taijasa* is that they are, both, characterised by the conditions of cause and effect.

² *Specific*—The special characteristic of *Prājna* is that it is characterised by the causal conditions alone.

¹⁰⁵ 67

CHAPTER I

ĀGAMA PRAKARANA

³ *Cause and effect*—Causal state is that in which we do not know ("Hindi passage omitted here") the Truth. From it follows the result ("Hindi passage omitted here") which is the mis-apprehension of Truth ("Hindi passage omitted here") It is because one does not know the rope ("Hindi passage omitted here") one mistakes it for the snake ("Hindi passage omitted here"). *Prājna* or the state of non-apprehension as such is said to be the cause of the *Viśwa* and *Taijasa* or the states of misapprehension. In dream and waking states there are both non-apprehension and mis-apprehension of Reality. But in deep sleep, there is only non-apprehension. As a matter of fact these two conditions, mis-apprehension and non-apprehension, cannot be experienced separately. They have been differently classified only to facilitate understanding.

¹⁰⁶ 68

CHAPTER I

ĀGAMA PRAKARANA

¹ *Duality*—This dual world is true from empirical standpoint *Prājna* does not perceive it.

external to and other² than itself and born³ of the cause known as *Avidyā*; therefore⁴ it is conditioned by darkness characterised by non-apprehension of Reality which is the cause of mis-apprehension. As *Turiya* exists always, ever all-seeing, on account of the absence of anything other than *Turiya*, it is never associated with the causal condition characterised by non-apprehension of Reality. Consequently mis-apprehension of Reality which is the result of non-apprehension is not found in *Turiya*. For, it is not possible to find in the sun, whose nature is to be ever-luminous, anything contrary to light, viz., darkness, or any other light different from itself. The *Śruti* also says: "The Knowledge of the seer is never absent." Or the phrase may be explained thus: *Turiya* may be designated as ever all-seeing because it subsists in all, in dream and waking states and all the seers that cognise them (in those states) are *Turiya* alone. This is also borne out by the following *Śruti* passage, "There is no seer other than this."

("Hindi¹⁰⁷ passage omitted here")

13. *The non-cognition of duality is common to both Prājna and Turiya. (But) Prājna is associated with sleep in the form of cause and this (sleep) does not exist in Turiya.*

ŚANKARA'S COMMENTARY.

This *sloka* is meant to remove a doubt that has arisen incidentally. The doubt is this: How is it that it is *Prājna* alone and not *Turiya* which is bound by the condition of cause, since the non-cognition of duality is the common feature of both? This doubt is thus removed¹: The meaning of the phrase *Bijanidrāyuta* is: *Nidrā* or sleep is characterised by the absence of the Knowledge of Reality. This is the cause which gives

² *Other than, etc.*—*Prājna* does not see the external world or the non-self. Therefore it does not see itself. Ego can be cognized only in relation to the non-ego.

³ *Born, etc.*—That is untruth. It is because *Prājna* does not see the unreal external world produced by *Avidyā*, therefore it is not aware of mis-apprehension.

⁴ *Therefore*—It is because it is in the seers and the things seen in both the states, it is ever all-seeing.

¹⁰⁷ 69

CHAPTER I

ĀGAMA PRAKARANA

¹ *Removed*—The contention that *Turiya* and *Prājna* are both characterised by the condition of cause on account of the common feature of the non-perception of duality in both the cases, is due to a wrong inference based upon insufficient data. The *Prājna* is thought to be the causal state because it is the immediately preceding condition of the manifestations of the waking state, etc. But this does not apply to *Turiya* because it is not the immediately preceding condition of any state. *Turiya* is not a state which is antecedent or subsequent to any other state. It is the sub-stratum of all the states. *Turiya* is non-dual, changeless and pure consciousness itself. Hence it cannot be said to produce anything. Therefore causal condition cannot obtain in the case of *Turiya*. *Turiya* associated with causal condition would be the same as the *Prājna*.

rise to the cognition of varieties. *Prājna* is associated with this sleep which is the cause. It is because *Turiya* is ever all-seeing, therefore the sleep characterised by the absence of the Knowledge of Reality does not exist in *Turiya*. Therefore the bondage in the form of causal condition does not exist in *Turiya*.

(“Hindi¹⁰⁸ passage omitted here”)

14. *The first two (Viśwa and Taijasa) are associated with the conditions of dream and sleep; Prājna is the condition of sleep without dream. Those who have known the truth see neither sleep nor dream in Turiya.*

ŚANKARA’S COMMENTARY.

Svapna or dream is the mis-apprehension¹ of duality like that of the snake in the rope. *Nidrā* or sleep has already been defined as darkness characterised by the absence of the Knowledge of Reality. *Viśwa* and *Taijasa* are associated with these, *viz.*, the conditions of dream and sleep. Therefore they have been described as conditioned by the characteristics of cause and effect. But *Prājna* is associated with sleep alone without dream; therefore it is described as conditioned by cause only. The Knower of Brahman does not see them (dream and sleep) in *Turiya*,² as it would be inconsistent like seeing darkness in the Sun. Therefore³ *Turiya* has been described as not associated with the conditions of cause and effect.

(“Hindi¹⁰⁹ passage omitted here”)

15. *Svapna or dream is the wrong cognition of Reality. Nidrā or sleep is the state in which one does not know what Reality is. When the erroneous knowledge in these two disappears, Turiya is realized.*

ŚANKARA’S COMMENTARY.

When is one established in *Turiya*? It is thus replied: During the states of dream and waking when one wrongly cognizes Reality like the perception of the snake in the

108 70

CHAPTER I
ĀGAMA PRAKARANA

¹ *Mis-apprehension – i.e.*, when one, then, thinks of *Ātman* as endowed with body, etc.

² *Turiya – Ajnāna* and its effects cannot exist in *Turiya* which is Pure Knowledge.

³ *Therefore –* It is because there is no *Nidrā* or sleep in *Turiya*.

109 71

CHAPTER I
ĀGAMA PRAKARANA

place of the rope, he is said to be experiencing dream¹. *Nidrā* or sleep,² characterised by the ignorance of Reality, is the common feature of the three states. *Viśva* and *Taijasa*, on account of their having the common features of *Svapna* (dream) and *Nidrā* (sleep), form a single class. That *Nidrā* (sleep) which is characterised by the predominance of wrong apprehension (of Reality) constitutes the state of inversion which is *Svapna* (dream). But in the third state, *Nidrā* (sleep), alone, characterised by the non-apprehension of Reality is the only inversion. (This forms the second or the other class implied in the text which speaks only of dream and sleep as covering the three states.) Therefore when these two¹¹⁰ classes of the nature of effect and cause, characterised by the mis-apprehension and non-apprehension respectively (of Reality), disappear by the destruction of the inversion characterised by effect and cause, by the knowledge of the nature of the highest Reality, then one realises *Turiya* which is the goal. Then one does not find in *Turiya* this condition, the characteristics of which are these two (effect and cause), and one thus becomes firm in the Highest Reality which is *Turiya*.

("Hindi passage omitted here")

16. *When the Jiva or the individual soul sleeping (i.e., not knowing the Reality) under the influence of the beginningless Māyā, is awakened, it, then, realises (in itself) the non-duality, beginningless and dreamless.*

ŚANKARA'S COMMENTARY.

One who is called the *Jiva*,¹ the individual soul, (whose characteristic is to be) subject² to the law of transmigration,¹¹¹ sleeping³ under the influence of *Māyā* which is

¹ *Dream – Svapna* includes dream and waking states, ordinarily so called, as in both the states there is a wrong apprehension of Reality. The inversion (absence of the Knowledge of Reality) which is the characteristic of sleep is found in dream and waking also. In other words, this is the common characteristic of all the three states.

² *Nidrā – Nidrā* includes the three states of waking, dream and sleep, ordinarily so-called, as all the three states are characterised by the absence of the Knowledge of Reality. The inversion, characteristic of *Nidrā*, is the non-apprehension of Reality and this is the only feature of *Prājna*. But *Svapna* (dream) including the waking state also is characterised by both non-apprehension and mis-apprehension of Reality.

¹¹⁰ 72

CHAPTER I

ĀGAMA PRAKARANA

¹ *Jiva*—It is the *Paramātman* or the Supreme Self who is thought to appear as world-bound on account of his assuming the characteristics of the *Jiva*, i.e., binding himself with the chain of cause and effect.

² *Subject, etc.*—i.e., world-bound.

¹¹¹ 73

CHAPTER I

active from time without⁴ beginning and which has the double characteristics of non-apprehending (on account of its being of the nature of the cause) and mis-apprehending Reality, experiences such dreams as, “This is my father, this is my son, this is my grandson, this is my property and these are my animals, I am their master, I am happy, I am miserable, I have suffered loss on account of this, I have gained on this account.” ...When the *Jiva* remains asleep experiencing these dreams in the two states,⁵ he is then thus awakened⁶ by the gracious teacher who has himself realised the Reality indicated by *Vedānta*: “Thou art not this, of the nature of cause and effect, but That thou art.” When the *Jiva* is thus awakened from sleep, he, then, realises his real nature. What is his nature? It (Self) is birthless, because it is beyond cause and effect and because it has none of the characteristics⁷ such as birth, etc., which are (inevitably) associated with all (relative) existence. It is birthless, *i.e.*, it is devoid of all changes associated with the object of (relative) existence including the conditions of cause and effect. It is *Anidram* (sleepless) because there does not exist in it *Nidrā* (sleep), the cause, of the nature of the darkness of *Avidyā*, which produces the changes called birth, etc. *Turiya* is free from *Svapna* (dream) because it is free from *Nidrā* (sleep) which is the cause of misapprehension of Reality (dream). It is because the Self is free from sleep and dream therefore the *Jiva*, then,⁸ realises himself as the *Turiya Ātman*, birthless and non-dual.

(“Hindi¹¹² passage omitted here”)

17. *If the perceived manifold were real then certainly it would disappear. This duality (that is cognized) is mere illusion (Māyā). Non-duality is (alone) the Supreme Reality.*

ĀGAMA PRAKARANA

³ *Sleeping*—Sleep or ignorance is the common characteristic of the three states. See *Kārikā* 15.

⁴ *Time without, etc.*—*Māyā* is said to be *Anādi* or beginningless from the standpoint of the relative, because it is something for which we cannot think of a cause. From the Absolute standpoint, *Māyā* does not exist.

⁵ *Two states*—This covers the three states of waking, dream and deep sleep. See commentary of the previous *Kārikā*.

⁶ *Awakened*—Awakening or realisation of Knowledge is possible only for one who is asleep, *i.e.*, who is ignorant.

⁷ *Characteristics*—All entities of relative existence possess six characteristics, such as birth, duration, growth, change, decay and death. Brahman is free from them.

⁸ *Then*—That is to say, when he is taught by the *Guru* what his real nature is. For the realisation of the Supreme Reality a competent teacher is absolutely necessary who alone is capable of dispelling the doubts that crop up in the mind of the student during the period of his inquiry into Truth.

¹¹² 74

CHAPTER I

ĀGAMA PRAKARANA

If¹ the knowledge of non-duality (*Turiya*) be possible after the disappearance of the perceived manifold, how could non-duality be said to exist (always) while the perceptual¹¹³ manifold remains? This is explained thus: This would have been true if the manifold *really* existed.² This manifold being only a false imagination, like the snake in the rope, does not *really* exist. There is no doubt that it would (certainly) disappear if it *really* existed.³ The snake imagined in the rope, through false conception, does not *really* exist and therefore does not disappear⁴ through correct understanding. Nor, similarly, does the illusion of the vision conjured up by the magician exist and then disappear as though a veil thrown over the eyes of the spectators (by the magician) is removed. Similar is this duality of the cognized universe called the phenomenal or manifold, (“Hindi passage omitted here”) a mere illusion. Non-duality *Turiya* like the rope and the magician (in the illustrations) is alone the Supreme Reality.⁵ Therefore the

¹ *If*—This is the contention of the opponent: Your assertion that there is anything like the non-dual *Turiya* cannot be a fact: for, a second entity known as the manifold universe does exist, and perceived. But if you say that the realisation of the non-dual *Turiya* is not inconsistent with that of the dual manifold, because *Turiya* can be realised as such only by the destruction of the manifested manifold, then, so long as the manifold is there as reality and does not disappear, *Turiya* cannot be established as the eternally existent non-duality.

¹¹³ 75

CHAPTER I

ĀGAMA PRAKARANA

² *Existed*—The manifold does not exist in the sense of a separate Reality. If it had any such existence then alone could it obstruct the eternally non-dual nature of the *Turiya* by the appearance (of the manifold). If anyone says that the manifold disappears it is only because he believes in its reality. But this is not the Truth, because the appearance of the manifold is only an illusion and not a reality.

³ *Really existed*—People say that duality disappears only because they believe in its reality. But really duality does not exist, therefore it does not disappear. If any one believes in the reality of such illusory appearance then can one believe in the reality of the disappearance.

⁴ *Does not disappear*—The rope is mistaken for an illusory snake. There is no real snake. When one is pointed out the real rope, no such thing as a snake *actually* disappears, for no such thing as a *real* snake existed. It is the illusion due to ignorance that makes one see the snake which disappears but no *real* snake. The illusion disappears because it is not a reality. That which is liable to be negated cannot be said really to exist at all.

⁵ *Supreme Reality*—That is, it is never absent. If one contends that *Turiya* does not exist when the manifold is seen, we reply that the manifold is nothing but Brahman; only the illusion which manifests the manifold as separate from Brahman comes and goes but the manifold, having for its sub-stratum Brahman, always exists.

This *Kārikā* deals with the crux of the *Vedānta* Philosophy. *Vedānta* says that non-duality (*Turiya*) alone is real and ever-existent. But the opponent points out to him the fact of the existence of the universe which incontestably proves duality. If this universe be real, then non-

fact is that there is no such thing as the manifold about which appearance or disappearance can be predicated.

(“Hindi¹¹⁴ passage omitted here”)

18. *If anyone had ever imagined the manifold ideas (such for instance as the teacher, the taught and the scripture), they might disappear. This explanation is for the purpose of teaching. Duality (implied in explanation) ceases to exist when the highest truth is known.*

ŚANKARA’S COMMENTARY.

(Objection)—How¹ could (duality implied in) ideas such as the teacher, the taught and the scripture disappear?

(Reply)—This is thus explained: If² such ideas had ever been imagined by someone then they might be supposed to disappear. As the manifold is like the illusion

duality (*Turiya*) cannot be a fact. If non-duality is realised only after the disappearance of the objective universe, then non-duality cannot certainly exist so long as the universe exists.

Vedānta shows its boldest genius in answering this question. It at once states that non-dual Brahman alone exists. Whatever is, is nothing but Brahman. The manifold is Brahman. As Brahman, it always exists and never undergoes any change. If a man realises the universe as Brahman, then he is never subject to any illusion regarding its reality. The difference between a *Jñāni* and an *Ajñāni* is that a wise man sees the universe as Brahman and therefore never sees in it any appearance or disappearance. But the ignorant person believes in the reality of the universe as apart from Brahman and therefore talks about its disappearance. What really disappears is the illusion that the manifold exists as something other than Brahman. The universe as Brahman does not appear and disappear. It always is. The meaning of the disappearance of the universe really means the disappearance of one’s *notion* of the illusion, (*i.e.*, the existence of the universe as something other than Brahman). It is like the illusion conjured up by the magician, which comes and goes without affecting the real nature of the magician. When the real nature of the rope is pointed out, what disappears is only the illusion which presented the rope as other than it is. The on-looker, after his error is pointed out, realises that what he considered as snake is really the rope. It is illusion which made the rope appear as other than what it is. Knowledge removes this illusion. This illusion is unsubstantial and unreal, hence its appearance and disappearance cannot affect the nature of Reality.

114 77

CHAPTER I

ĀGAMA PRAKARANA

¹ *How could, etc.*—If even the idea of teacher, etc., existed, non-duality could not be established. If such ideas be meant for the purpose of *inferring Turiya*, as the smoke is thought of for inferring fire, then duality cannot be refuted. For, the experience of smoke and fire, as existing together, does not demonstrate non-duality.

² *If, etc.*—Such ideas as teacher, student and scripture have their applicability till one realises the highest truth of non-duality (*Turiya*). Such ideas, possible only from the standpoint of ignorance, cannot contradict *Turiya* because they are unreal and negatable by knowledge. The analogy of the smoke and fire is not appropriate. Brahman cannot be logically inferred from the world like the fire from the smoke. For, fire and smoke are objective realities of the

(conjured up by the magician or) of the snake in the rope, so³ also are the ideas of the teacher, etc. These¹¹⁵ ideas, namely, the ideas of teacher, taught, and scripture are for⁴ the purpose of teaching which are (therefore appear) true till one realises the highest Truth. But duality does not exist when one, as a result of the teaching, attains to knowledge, *i.e.*, realises the highest Reality.

VIII.¹¹⁶

("Hindi passage omitted here")

The same *Ātman* (which has been described above as having four quarters) is, again, *Aum*, from the point of view of the syllables ("Hindi passage omitted here") The *Aum* with parts is viewed from the standpoint of sounds (letters, ("Hindi passage omitted here"):). The quarters are the letters (parts) and the letters are the quarters. The letters here are *A*, *U* and *M*.

same order and seen to exist together by a perceiver. That is not so with Brahman and the world. But the seeing of an object implies the seer. So Brahman may only be indicated.

³ *So also, etc.*—The entire manifold is an illusion, it is not a reality. It appears as real till one attains to the highest knowledge. The idea of the teacher, etc., is a part of this manifold. Hence such ideas have no absolute reality. The appearance is also due to the non-apprehension of Reality.

¹¹⁵ 78

CHAPTER I

ĀGAMA PRAKARANA

⁴ *For the purpose of*—If one sees duality and seeks an explanation, one of the explanations offered is that ideas are imagined for the purpose of attaining the Truth.

It has been seen in the previous *Kārikā* that the manifold is Brahman. As the wave is non-different from water, so also the world is non-different from Brahman. The idea that what we see is not Brahman and has got such attributes as birth, changeability, destruction, etc., is illusion which being negated enables one to realise the Highest Truth. Similarly various ideas one has with regard to the manifold, are non-different from Brahman. Even the so-called illusion of the manifold universe has no existence other than that of Brahman. As the wind that arises from the air, disappears in the air and is identical with the air, so also the manifold is non-different from Brahman. As in dream, the objects that are experienced as the elephant, etc., with their names and forms are nothing but the mindstuff, so also in the state of ignorance what are experienced as the objects with their distinctive names and forms are nothing but Brahman. As in the same dream the idea that I have seen an elephant is non-different from the mindstuff which creates the elephant, so also the idea that there is a distinction between the teacher, etc., is not separate from Brahman. The cognition of ideas as teacher, etc., as separate from *Brahman* is due to one's still persisting in the relative plane, and this is explained as being useful for the realisation of Truth, but after the enlightenment these ideas are realised as non-different from *Brahman*. The highest Truth is that the manifold as well as various thoughts associated with it are identical with *Brahman*. The non-duality (*Turiya*) alone is.

¹¹⁶ 79

CHAPTER I

ĀGAMA PRAKARANA

ŚANKARA'S COMMENTARY.

In the word *Aum* prominence is given to that which is indicated by several names. The word *Aum* which has¹¹⁷ been explained before as *Ātman* having four quarters is again the same *Ātman* described here from the standpoint of syllable where prominence is given to the name. What is, again, that syllable? It is thus replied: *Aum*. It is that word *Aum* which being divided into parts, is viewed from the standpoint of letters. How? Those which constitute the quarters of the *Ātman* are¹ the letters of *Aum*. What are they? The letters are *A*, *U* and *M*.

IX

("Hindi passage omitted here")

He¹¹⁸ who is *Vaiśwānara*, having for its sphere of activity the waking state, is *A*, the first letter (of *Aum*) on account of its all-pervasiveness or on account of being the first (these being the common features of both). One who knows this attains to the fulfilment of all desires and becomes the first (of all).

ŚANKARA'S COMMENTARY.

Points of specific resemblance between them are thus pointed out. That which is *Vaiśwānara*, whose sphere of activity is the waking state, is the first letter of *Aum*. What is the common feature between them? It is thus explained: The first point of

¹¹⁷ 80

CHAPTER I

ĀGAMA PRAKARANA

In the first Upanishad it is said, "*Aum*, the word, is all this." The word *Aum* is the name ("Hindi passage omitted here") which indicates everything ("Hindi passage omitted here") past, present, future and all that which is beyond even the conception of time. Thus *Aum* is the name for Brahman. The second Upanishad declares that Brahman is the *Ātman*. The *Ātman* with its four quarters has been explained in the following Upanishads. Therefore all these explanations are of *Aum* from the standpoint of *Ātman* where prominence is given to that which is indicated by names. Now the same *Aum* is explained from the standpoint of the word itself, that is the name which indicates *Ātman* or the Supreme Reality.

The highest truth as explained above by the process of the refutation of the erroneous superimposition can be grasped only by the students of sharp or middling intelligence. But those ordinary students who cannot enter upon philosophical reflection regarding the Supreme Reality as given in the previous texts, are advised to concentrate on *Aum* as the symbol of the Ultimate Reality.

¹ *Are, etc.* — It is because the quarters and the letters are identical.

¹¹⁸ 81

CHAPTER I

ĀGAMA PRAKARANA

resemblance is pervasiveness.¹ All sounds are pervaded² by A. This is corroborated by the Śruti passage, “The sound A is the whole of speech.” Similarly the entire universe is pervaded by *Vaiśwānara* as is evident from such Śruti passages as, “The effulgent Heaven is the head of this, the *Vaiśwānara Ātman*,” etc. The identity of the name and the object, indicated by the name, has already been described. The word ‘*Ādimat*’ means that this has a beginning. As³ the letter A is with a beginning, so also is *Vaiśwānara*. *Vaiśwānara* is identical with A on account of this common feature. The knower of this identity gets the following result⁴: One who knows this, *i.e.*, the identity described above, has all his desires fulfilled and becomes the first of the great.

Χ119

(“Hindi passage omitted here”)

Taijasa, whose sphere of activity is the dream state, is U (“Hindi passage omitted here”) the second letter (of *Aum*) on account of superiority* or on account of being in between the two. He who knows this attains to a superior knowledge, is treated equally by all alike⁼ and finds no one in his line who is not a knower of Brahman.⁺

ŚANKARA’S COMMENTARY.

He who is *Taijasa* having for its sphere of activity the dream state is U (“Hindi passage omitted here”), the second letter of *Aum*. What is the point of resemblance? It

¹ *Pervasiveness*—A (“Hindi passage omitted here”) pervades all sounds. It is present in all sounds. No articulate sound can be produced without opening the mouth and the sound that is thus produced is A (“Hindi passage omitted here”).

² *Pervaded, etc.*—It has been already stated that the knowledge of all other states are possible only from the waking state. The three states constitute our entire experience of the universe. Therefore the waking state pervades the whole of the universe.

³ *As, etc.*—This is the second point of resemblance. A is the first of all sounds or letters. Therefore A has a beginning because no other sound or letter precedes A. Similarly from our common experience it is known that the states of dream and deep sleep are preceded by the waking state which is therefore the first of the three states.

⁴ *Result*—The enumeration of the merits is for the purpose of inducing students to understand the meaning of *Aum*.

119 82

CHAPTER I

ĀGAMA PRAKARANA

* because he knows the world to be mental or because my the versus after the A.The original editor inserted footnote by hand

= They are all ideas to himThe original editor inserted footnote by hand

+ He tries to teach his son the TruthThe original editor inserted footnote by hand

is thus replied: The¹²⁰ one common feature is superiority. The letter *U* is, as it were, 'superior'¹ to *A*; similarly *Taijasa*² is superior to *Viśwa*. Another common feature is: the letter *U* ("Hindi passage omitted here") is in between the letters *A* ("Hindi passage omitted here") and *M* ("Hindi passage omitted here"). Similarly *Taijasa* is in between *Viśwa* and *Prājna*¹²¹. Therefore this condition of being in the middle is the common feature. Now is described the result of this knowledge. The knowledge (of the knower of this identity) is always on the increase, *i.e.*, his power of knowing increases considerably. He is regarded in the same way by all, *i.e.*, his enemies, like his friends, do not envy him[⊕]. Further, in his family not one is born who is not a knower of Brahman.

XI

("Hindi passage omitted here")

Prājna whose sphere is deep sleep is *M* ("Hindi passage omitted here") the third part (letter) of *Aum*, because it is both the measure and that wherein all become one. One who knows this (identity of *Prājna* and *M*) is able to measure all (realise the real nature of¹²² the world) and also comprehends all within himself.

ŚANKARA'S COMMENTARY.

One who is *Prājna* associated with deep sleep is *M* ("Hindi passage omitted here"), the third sound (letter) of *Aum*. What is the common feature? It is thus explained. Here this is the common feature: The word *Miti* in the text means "measure". As barley is measured by *prastha* (a kind of measure), so also *Viśwa* and

¹²⁰ 83

CHAPTER I

ĀGAMA PRAKARANA

¹ *Superior*—As a matter of fact, *A* being the first of all sounds is superior to all letters. But *U* coming after *A* may be said to be superior to *A* in an indirect way.

² *Taijasa*—*Taijasa* is superior to *Viśwa* as it is associated with ideas (in dream state) whereas *Viśwa* is associated with gross objects (in the waking state). In dream alone one realises the world as states of mind ("Hindi passage omitted here"), which knowledge brings the student nearer to truth.

¹²¹ In this word symbol not found in Book Antiqua font so we have inserted from Tahoma

[⊕] This is put in to induce people or take to the truth search. The original editor inserted footnote "This is put in to induce people or take to the truth search." by hand

¹²² 84

CHAPTER I

ĀGAMA PRAKARANA

Taijasa are, as it were, measured¹ by *Prājna* during their evolution (“Hindi passage omitted here”) and involution (“Hindi passage omitted here”) by their appearance from and disappearance into *Prājna* (deep sleep). Similarly² after once finishing the utterance of *Aum* when it is re-uttered, the sounds (letters) *A* and *U*, as it were, merge into and emerge from *M*. Another common feature is described by the word “*Apiteh*” which means “becoming one”. When the word *Aum* is uttered the sounds (letters) *A* and *U* become³ one, as it were, in the last sound (letter) *M*. Similarly, *Viśwa* and *Taijasa* become one (merge themselves) in *Prājna* in deep sleep. Therefore, *Prājna* and the sound *M* are identical on account of this common basis that underlies them both. Now is described the merit of this knowledge. (One who knows this identity) comprehends all this, *i.e.*, the real⁴ nature of the universe. Further he realises himself as the *Ātman*, the cause of the universe, *i.e.*, *Iśwara*. The enumeration of these secondary⁵ merits is for the purpose of extolling the principal means (of knowledge).

Here¹²³ appear the following *slokas*: –

(“Hindi passage omitted here”)

19. When the identity of *Viśwa* and the sound (letter) *A* is intended to be described, the conspicuous ground is the circumstance of each being the first (in their respective position); another reason for this identity is also the fact of the all-pervasiveness of each.

ŚANKARA’S COMMENTARY.

¹ *Measured* – Both the waking and dream states appear (during their evolution) from and disappear (at the time of their involution) into deep sleep. Therefore *Prājna* is, as it were, the container in which *Viśwa* and *Taijasa* are contained. The nature of *Viśwa* and *Taijasa* (non-apprehension of Reality) is known from the nature of *Prājna* – because it is the cause of the two other states. Therefore *Prājna* is here described as the measure of the two other states.

² *Similarly* – When the word ‘*AUM*’ is uttered quickly several times, the sound actually heard is *Maum* and not *Aum*, in which case it may be said that the sounds *A* and *U* emerge out of and merge into *M*.

³ *Become one* – *i.e.*, merge themselves.

⁴ *Real Nature* – That is, the universe experienced in the dream and waking states is of the same stuff as the *Prājna*.

⁵ *Secondary merits* – The enumeration of these secondary merits is for the satisfaction of those that still move in the causal plane.

¹²³ 85

CHAPTER I

ĀGAMA PRAKARANA

When the Śruti intends to describe Viśwa as of the same nature as A (“Hindi passage omitted here”), then the most prominent ground is seen to be the fact of each being the first, as described in the Upanishad discussed above. “Mātrāsampratipath” in the text means the identity of Viśwa and¹²⁴ A. Another prominent reason for such identity is their all-pervasiveness.

(“Hindi passage omitted here”)

20. *The clear¹²⁵ ground of realising Taijasa as of the same nature as U is the common feature of “Superiority”. Similarly another plain reason of such identity is their being in “the middle”.*

ŚANKARA’S COMMENTARY.

When *Taijasa* is intended to be described as ‘U’, the reason of their being ‘Superior’ (in respective cases) is seen to be quite clear. Their being in ‘the middle’ is also another plain ground. All these explanations are as before.

(“Hindi passage omitted here”)

21. *Of the identity of Prājna and M (“Hindi passage omitted here”) the clear reason is the common feature, i.e., they both are the ‘measure’. The other reason for such identity is another common feature, namely, all become one in both Prājna and M.¹²⁶*

ŚANKARA’S COMMENTARY.

Regarding the identity of *Prājna* and *U* the plain common features are that both of them are the ‘measure’ as well as that wherein all merge.

(“Hindi¹²⁷ passage omitted here”)

22. *He who knows without doubt, what are the ‘common features’ in the three states, is worshipped and adored by all beings and he is also the greatest sage.*

¹²⁴ 86

CHAPTER I

ĀGAMA PRAKARANA

¹²⁵ The original editor changed “clean” to “clear” by hand

¹²⁶ The original editor strike out and replaced “U” to “M” by hand

¹²⁷ 87

CHAPTER I

ĀGAMA PRAKARANA

ŚANKARA'S COMMENTARY.

One who knows positively, *i.e.*, without a shadow of doubt, the common¹ features that are found in the three states, is worshipped and adored in the world. He is a knower² of Brahman.

("Hindi passage omitted here")

23. The sound (letter) *A* helps its worshipper to attain to *Viśwa*, *U* to *Taijasa*, and *M* to *Prājna*. In the "Soundless" there is no attainment.

ŚANKARA'S¹²⁸ COMMENTARY.

Having identified the quarters of *Ātman* with the sounds (letters) of *Aum*, on account of the common features stated above, he who realises the nature of the sound *Aum*, described above, and meditates upon it, attains to *Viśwa* through the help of *A*. The meaning is that he who meditates on *Aum* having¹ for his support *A* becomes *Vaiśvānara*.² Similarly, the meditator of *U* becomes *Taijasa*.³ Again the sound *M* leads its meditator to *Prājna*.⁴ But when *M* too disappears, causality⁵ itself is negated and

¹ *Common features*—That is, the three quarters of *Ātman*, *viz.*, *Viśwa*, *Taijasa* and *Prājna* associated with waking, dream and deep sleep states are identical with the three sounds (letters) of *Aum*, *viz.*, *A*, *U* and *M* respectively for reasons stated above.

² *Knower, etc.*—The knower of this identity is highly extolled for this reason: From the standpoint of *Ātman*, *Viśwa* merges in *Taijasa* and *Taijasa* in *Prājna*; similarly from the standpoint of *Aum* the sound *A* merges in *U* and *U* merges in *M*. The quarters of *Ātman* are identical with the sound of *M*. He who knows this identity also knows that the entire universe of the dream and waking experiences emerges from and merges into *Prājna*. This *Prājna* is Brahman though it appears as the causal self ("Hindi passage omitted here") to those whose mind still moves in the plane of causality. It is only the knower of Brahman that knows *Prājna* also as *Turiya*.

128 88

CHAPTER I

ĀGAMA PRAKARANA

¹ *Having, etc.*—*i.e.*, one who meditates on *Aum* laying emphasis upon *A* or the waking experiences, realises the entire universe experienced in the waking state as comprehended in the sound *A*.

² *Vaiśvānara*—*Vaiśvānara* is the macrocosmic aspect of *Viśwa* and the same as *Virāt*.

³ *Taijasa*—*i.e.*, the *Hiranyagarbha*. One who meditates upon *Aumkāra* laying emphasis upon *U*, realises the world as forms of thought like one experienced in dream. Such worshipper attains to *Hiranyagarbha* who is the cosmic mind.

⁴ *Prājna*—That is, *Īśvara*. *Prājna* is the cause of the experiences of the waking and dream states as well as it is that wherein all these finally disappear. *Īśvara* is also he who is the cause of the Universe as well as that of its final disappearance. The meditator on *M* merges *A* in *U* and *U* in *M*. That is, he merges the gross universe of the waking state in the world of ideas experienced in dream and finally realises the dream as becoming one the state of deep sleep.

therefore about such *Aum*, which thus becomes soundless,⁶ no⁷ attainment can be predicated.

* when it merges in it.

XII¹²⁹

("Hindi passage omitted here")

That which has no parts (soundless), incomprehensible (by the aid of the senses), the cessation of all phenomena, all bliss and non-dual *Aum*, is the fourth and verily the same as the *Ātman*. He who knows this merges his self in the Self.

ŚANKARA'S COMMENTARY.

The ("Hindi passage omitted here") (soundless¹) is that which has no parts (sounds, etc., or letters). This partless *Aum* which is the fourth, is nothing but Pure *Ātman*. It is incomprehensible, because both speech and mind which correspond to the name² and the object disappear or cease; the name and the object (that is indicated by the name) which are only forms of speech and mind cease or disappear (in the partless *Aum*). It is the cessation³ of the (illusion of) phenomena and all⁴ bliss and therefore

⁵ *Causality*—It is the idea of causality which makes a man think that he realises the same world after *Sushupti* which he had seen before going to sleep.

⁶ *Soundless*—*i.e.*, it cannot be identified with any of the sounds or their corresponding states.

⁷ *No, etc.*—Because soundless *Aum* is the same as *Turiya Brahman*.

129 89

CHAPTER I

ĀGAMA PRAKARANA

¹ *Soundless*—It is because *Amātra Aum* cannot be expressed by any sound. It is relationless and therefore it cannot be properly described as the substratum of three other sounds. Sound points out, by contrast, the soundless *Aum*. All sounds must, at some time or other, merge in soundlessness. This *Amātra Aum* is identical with *Turiya Ātman* as described in a previous text (Upanishad 7).

² *Name, etc.*—Name is but a form of speech or sound. All objects are again forms of mind. Both the name and the object are therefore mere ideas ("Hindi passage omitted here"). They disappear with the disappearance of the mind at the dawn of knowledge. Therefore soundless *Aum*, like *Turiya*, cannot be expressed by a name or pointed out as an object. Therefore it is incomprehensible.

³ *Cessation*—As the rope is realised when the illusion of snake disappears, similarly partless (soundless) *Aum* is realised when the illusion of duality vanishes.

⁴ *All bliss*—This is a state of infinite and eternal bliss because no illusion which is the cause of misery exists there.

identical with non-duality⁵. *Aum*, as⁶ thus understood, has three sounds which are the same as the three quarters and therefore *Aum* is identical⁷ with *Ātman*. He who knows this merges⁸ his self in the Self which is the highest Reality. Those who know Brahman, *i.e.*, those who realise the highest Reality¹³⁰ merge into Self, because in their case the notion of the causality which corresponds to the third quarter (of *Ātman*) is destroyed (burnt). They⁹ are not born again, because *Turiya* is not a cause. For, the illusory snake which has merged in the rope on the discrimination of the snake from the rope, does not reappear⁺ as before, to those who know the distinction between them, by any effort¹⁰ of the mind (due to the previous impressions). To the men of dull and mediocre intellect who still consider themselves as students of philosophy, who having renounced the world, tread on the path of virtue and who know the common features between the sounds (“Hindi passage omitted here”) and the quarters (or parts) as

Fourth—Amātra is called fourth because it occupies the fourth place in order of explanation of *Aum*, of which three other states have previously been dealt with. Fourth does not signify any numerical relationship with the three aspects of *Aum* described previously.

⁵ *Non-duality*—From the standpoint of the relative world, the soundless state is the substratum of all illusory appearances. One can speak of duality* only in the relative world.

*as a reality.

⁶ *As thus, etc.—i.e.*, with reference to the identity of the sounds and quarters as explained above.

⁷ *Identical with*—Three quarters, *viz.*, *Viśwa*, *Taijasa* and *Prājna* are imagined to subsist in *Ātman*. *Viśwa* merges in *Taijasa*, *Taijasa* in *Prājna* and finally *Prājna* which is looked upon as the cause of the two preceding states merges in *Turiya Ātman*. Similarly the three sounds, *A*, *U*, and *M* ultimately merge in the soundless *Aum*. In soundless *Aum*, the three sounds become identical with it as the three states are identical with *Turiya* from the absolute standpoint. Therefore *Turiya Ātman* is the same as soundless *Aum*.

⁸ *Merges*—That is, the knower realises himself as *Turiya*.

130 90

CHAPTER I

ĀGAMA PRAKARANA

⁹ *They are, etc.*—It may be contended that like a man coming back to the realm of duality having experienced deep sleep, the knower of Self who has identified himself with *Turiya* may also come back to the illusory universe, for *Prājna* and *Turiya* are identical having a common feature of the perception of non-duality. This contention is without ground, because *Turiya* is not a cause. Hence it cannot give rise to the world of illusory experience. Unlike *Prājna* it is beyond all relations of cause and effect. Therefore one who has identified himself with *Turiya* can never see the illusion of the manifold.⁺

⁺ will not see others as different from self. The original editor inserted footnote by hand

¹⁰ *Effort of mind*—All efforts of mind are nothing but ideas. Our so-called illusory experiences and their opposite in the relative plane are nothing but ideas (“Hindi passage omitted here”). To a man who has realised ideas as non-different from Brahman, no illusion which is of the nature of existence separate from Brahman, is possible

described above,—to them *Aum*, if meditated upon in a proper way, becomes a great¹¹ help to the realisation of Brahman. The same is indicated in the *Kārikā* later on thus: “The three inferior stages of life, etc.....” (*Mānd. Kārikā, Advaita Chapter, 16.*)

(Here¹³¹ ends the *Māndūkya Upanishad* with the Commentary of Śankara.)

The following verses explain the foregoing Upanishadic texts:—

(“Hindi passage omitted here”)

24. (*The meaning of*) *Aumkāra* should be known quarter by quarter. There is no doubt that quarters are the same as the sounds (letters). Having grasped the (meaning of) *Aumkāra* nothing else should be thought of.

ŚANKARA’S COMMENTARY.

Here are, as before, the following verses:—

Aumkāra should be known along with the quarters; for the quarters¹ are identical with sounds (letters) because of their common features described before. Having² thus understood *Aumkāra*, no other object, seen or unseen, should be thought of; for the knower of *Aumkāra* has all his desires fulfilled.

(“Hindi¹³² passage omitted here”)

25. *The mind should be unified with (the sacred syllable) Aum. (For) Aum is Brahman, the ever-fearless. He who is always unified with Aum knows no fear whatever.*

ŚANKARA’S COMMENTARY.

The word *Yunjita* means to unify, *i.e.*, to absorb. The mind should be absorbed in *Aum*, which is of the nature of the Supreme Reality, as explained before. The *Aum* is

¹¹ *Great help*—Those students who cannot at once think of soundless *Aum* or *Turiya Ātman* proceed step by step and ultimately realise the highest Truth.

¹³¹ 92

CHAPTER I

ĀGAMA PRAKARANA

¹ *Quarters*—It is because the quarters of *Ātman* are identified with the sounds (letters) of *Aum*. Therefore *Aum* should be meditated upon as *Ātman*.

² *Having, etc.*—That is, by realising *Aum* as Brahman.

¹³² 93

CHAPTER I

ĀGAMA PRAKARANA

Brahman, the ever-fearless. He who is always unified with *Aum* knows no fear whatever; for the *Śruti* says, "The knower of Brahman is not afraid of anything."

He who is proficient or perfect, in the knowledge of *Aum*, acquired by an enquiry into its parts, *i.e.*, he who has unified himself with the soundless (partless) *Aum* by merging the three sounds in it, has annihilated the entire dualistic illusion and thereby attained to the supreme goal. But those who cannot do so and those who always depend upon the teachings of others for acquiring knowledge, should meditate upon *Aum* in the manner described in the *Śruti*.

("Hindi passage omitted here")

26. (*The sacred syllable*) *Aum* is verily the Lower Brahman, and it is also admitted to be the Supreme Brahman. *Aum* is without beginning (cause), unique, without anything outside itself, unrelated to any effect and changeless.

ŚANKARA'S¹³³ COMMENTARY.

Aum is both the Lower¹ Brahman and the Supreme *Turiya*. When from the highest standpoint, the sounds and quarters disappear (in the soundless *Aum*) it is verily the same as the Supreme Brahman. It is without cause because no cause can be predicated of it. It is unique because nothing else, belonging to any other species separate from it, exists. Similarly nothing else exists outside it. It is also not related to any effect (because it is not the cause of anything). It is without cause and exists everywhere, both inside and outside, like salt in the water of the ocean.

("Hindi passage omitted here")

27. *Aum* is verily the beginning, middle and end of all. Knowing *Aum* as such, one, without doubt, attains immediately to that (the Supreme Reality).

ŚANKARA'S COMMENTARY.

133 94

¹ *Lower Brahman*—That is, the Brahman which is looked upon as the cause of the universe. The dull and mediocre intellect should meditate upon *AUM* as described in the first line of *kārikā*. The second line describes the soundless aspect of *AUM* or the *Turiya Ātman* which can be understood only by one possessing the keenest intellect.

*Aum*¹ is the beginning, middle and end of all; that is, everything originates from *Aum*, is sustained by it and ultimately merges in it. As² the magician, etc. (without undergoing any change in themselves) stand in relation to the illusory elephant, (the illusion of) snake-rope,¹³⁴ the mirage and the dream, etc., so also is the sacred syllable *Aum* to the manifested manifold such as *Ākāśa* (ether) etc. The meaning is that he who knows thus, the *Aum*, *Ātman*, which, like the magician, etc., does not undergo any change, at³ once becomes unified with it.

("Hindi passage omitted here")

28. Know *Aum* to be *Īśvara*, ever present in the mind of all; the man of discrimination realising *Aum* as all-pervading, does not grieve.

ŚANKARA'S COMMENTARY.

Know *Aum* as the *Īśvara* present in the mind, which is the seat¹ of memory and perception, of all things.¹³⁵ The man of discrimination realising *Aumkāra* as all-pervading² like the sky, *i.e.*, knowing it as the *Ātman*, not bound by the law of

¹ *Aum*.—When a cause, etc., of the universe is sought, *Aum* is pointed out as such. This is in accordance with the *Parināmvāda*.

² *As the magician, etc.*—This is from the standpoint of the *Vivartavāda*. The magician, the rope, the desert, etc., appear as the elephant, the snake, the mirage, etc., without undergoing any change in themselves. Similarly *Aum* also, from the relative standpoint, appears to have become the entire manifested manifold without undergoing any change in itself. But from the standpoint of soundless *Aum*, there is no manifested manifold. It is not the cause of anything nor does it appear in any way other than itself. *Aum* is inferred as is a juggler ("Hindi passage omitted here") by those who see the fact of creation and explain it as *Māyā*. Therefore, the idea of the juggler is also an illusion and it lasts as long as we look upon the manifold as *Māyā*. It vanishes as soon as the *Māyā* or illusion disappears.

¹³⁴ 95

CHAPTER I

ĀGAMA PRAKARANA

³ *At once*—*Jñāna* or knowledge is alone the cause of *Mukti* which does not depend upon anything else. The moment we know the real nature of *Aum*, we become unified with it.

¹ *Seat, etc.*—The knowledge of past and present consists of ideas in the mind of the perceiver. From the recollection of the past one forms the idea of the future.

¹³⁵ 96

CHAPTER I

ĀGAMA PRAKARANA

² *All pervading*—From the highest standpoint *Aum* is not confined to any particular space. It is beyond the limitation of time, space, etc. Therefore the knower of the all-pervading *Aum* transcends grief which is the outcome of limitation. *Aum* is called all-pervading because whatever we perceive or cognize is in consciousness.

transmigration, does not grieve; for, there is no cause³ of misery for him. The Scriptures also abound in such passages as, “The knower of *Ātman* goes beyond grief.”

(“Hindi passage omitted here”)

29. *One who has known Aum which is soundless and of infinite sounds and which is ever-peaceful on account of negation of duality is the (real) sage and none other*

ŚANKARA’S COMMENTARY.

*Amātra*¹ or soundless *Aum* signifies *Turiya*. *Mātrā* means “measure”; that which has infinite measure or magnitude is called *Anantamātrā*. That is to say, it is not possible to determine its extension or measure by pointing to this or that. It is ever-peaceful on account of its being the negation of all duality. He who knows *Aum*, as explained above, is the (real) sage because¹³⁶ he has realised the nature of the Supreme Reality. No² one else, though he may be an expert in the knowledge of the Scriptures, is a sage.

Here ends the first chapter of Gaudapāda’s *Kārikā* with the Commentary of Śankara.

Aum¹³⁷ Salutation to Brahman.

CHAPTER II.

ILLUSION.

(“Hindi passage omitted here”)

1. *The wise declare the unreality of all the objects seen in the dream, they all being located within (the body) and on account of their being in a confined space.*

ŚANKARA’S COMMENTARY.

³ *Cause of misery*. – One can go beyond grief only by realising the highest Truth by *Viveka* or discrimination of real and unreal.

¹ *Amātra* – It is because there is no sound or part beyond the AUM, *i.e.*, the soundless and partless quarter (*Amātra*) is not indicated by any letter.

¹³⁶ 97

CHAPTER I

ĀGAMA PRAKARANA

² *No, etc.* – Book-learning without the direct realisation of Truth is of no value.

¹³⁷ 98

Aum. It has been already said, “Duality does not exist when (true) knowledge arises” and this is borne out by such *Śruti* passages as, “It (*Ātman*) is verily one and without a second”, etc. This is all based merely on the authority¹ of the *Sruti*. It² is also equally possible to determine the unreality (illusoriness) of duality through pure reasoning and for this purpose is begun the second chapter which commences with the words, *Vaitathyam* (unreality) etc. The word, *Vaitathyam* signifies the fact of its being unreal.¹³⁸ Of what is this (unreality) predicated? Of all objects, both internal³ and external,⁴ perceived in the dream. It is thus declared by the wise, *i.e.*, those who are experts in the use of the means (*prāmāṇas*) of arriving at true knowledge. The reason of this unreality is stated thus: For, the objects perceived are found to be located¹³⁹ within the body. All these entities such as a mountain, an elephant, etc., perceived in the dream are cognized there⁵ (*i.e.* within) and not outside the body. Therefore they must be regarded as unreal.

(Objection)—This (“being within”) is no valid reason. A jar and other things on account of their being perceived within a cover, such as a cloth, etc., (cannot be called unreal).

(Reply)—On account of their being confined in a limited space, that is, within the body (where dream objects are cognized). It is not possible for the mountain, the

¹ *Authority of the Śruti.*—The subject-matter, namely, the illusoriness of duality, has been proved in the first chapter solely on scriptural authority.

² *It is, etc.*—Śankara contends that the illusoriness of the duality can be proved by reasoning also *independently of Śruti*. The Scripture, no doubt, convinces those who believe in its authority. But the metaphysics of *Vedānta* can hold its ground against those who do not believe in the authority of the *Vedās*, *e.g.*, the *Buddhist*, the *Jains*, the *Chārvākas* and others. All fair discussions are based on reason which is the common platform for all. It betrays ignorance of higher *Vedānta* to say that the reasoning employed in the *Vedānta* philosophy to arrive at the ultimate Truth is always subservient to scriptural authority. The second chapter of the *Kārikā* establishes the unreality of duality through reasoning independent of scriptural authority.

¹³⁸ The original editor changed “unreal or false.” To “unreal.” By hand

³ *Internal*—*i.e.*, such ideas as these of happiness, misery, etc.

⁴ *External*—*e.g.*, a pot, a mountain, etc. This distinction between internal ideas and external objects is made here from the dream standpoint. But from the waking standpoint all dream experiences are internal.

¹³⁹ 99

CHAPTER II ILLUSION

⁵ *There*—*i.e.*, within the body. The dream is an activity of the mind and according to the common-sense view, mind is within the body. Therefore objects seen in dream are said to exist within the body.

elephant, etc., to exist in the limited space (within the nerves⁶ of the body) which are within the body. A mountain does not or cannot exist inside⁷ a body.

(“Hindi¹⁴⁰ passage omitted here”)

2. *On account of the shortness of time it is not possible for the dreamer to go out of the body and see (the dream objects). Nor does the dreamer, when he wakes up, find himself in the place (seen in his dream).*

ŚANKARA’S COMMENTARY.

That all that is perceived to exist in dream is located in a limited space, is not a fact. For, a man sleeping in the east, often finds himself, as it were, experiencing dreams in the north. Anticipating this objection (of the opponent) it is said:—The dreamer does not go to another region outside his body where he experiences dream. For, it is found that as soon as a man falls asleep he experiences dream objects, as¹ it were, at a place which is hundreds of *Yojanas*² away from his body and which can be reached only in the course of a month. The long period of time which is necessary to¹⁴¹ go to that region (where dream objects are perceived) and again to come back (to the place where the sleeper lies) is not found to be an actual fact. Hence on account of the shortness of time the experiencer of the dream does not go to another region. Moreover, the dreamer when he wakes up, does not find himself in the place where he experiences the dream. Had the man (really) gone to another place while dreaming and cognized (or perceived) the dream-objects there, then he would have certainly woke up there alone. But this does not happen. Though a man goes to sleep at night, he feels as

⁶ *Nerves*—It is said in the Scriptures that the mind moves about during the time of sleep along some nerves and this produces the dream experiences.

⁷ *Inside, etc.*—If a mountain cannot exist within a body, it is still more impossible for it to exist within a nerve, which is an old world view.

¹⁴⁰ 100

CHAPTER II ILLUSION

¹ *As it were*—The dream experiences, though they appear to be real to the dreamer, are not really so.

The experiences of dream are unreal on account of the absence of the appropriate time and place with which such experiences are associated. And this unreality can be known from the waking condition alone. The unreality of dream-experiences is proved here from the standpoint of time and space. Even those who believe in the reality of time and space cannot but admit the illusoriness of dream-experiences.

² *Yojana*—It is a measure of distance of eight or nine miles.

¹⁴¹ 101

CHAPTER II ILLUSION

though he were seeing objects in the day-time and meeting many persons. (If that meeting were real) he ought to have been met by those persons (whom he himself met during the dream). But this does not happen, for if it did, they would have said, "We met you there to-day. "But this does not happen. Therefore one does not (really) go to another region in dream.

("Hindi passage omitted here")

3. Following¹⁴² reason, (as indicated above) Śruti declares the non-existence of the chariots, etc. (perceived in dream). Therefore it is said (by the wise) that Śruti itself declares the illusoriness (of the dream-experiences) established (by reason).

ŚANKARA'S COMMENTARY.

For this reason also the objects perceived to exist in dream are illusory. For, the absence of the chariots, etc., (perceived in dream) is stated by Śruti, in such passages as "There¹ exists neither chariot, etc.", its assertion being based on reason.² In the opinion of the wise, i.e., the knowers of Brahman, the illusoriness (of the dream objects) has been established on the ground of their being perceived within the contracted space in the body. The Śruti only reiterates it in order to establish the self-luminosity^{3*} (of Ātman) in dream.

("Hindi passage omitted here")

4. Different objects cognised in dream (are illusory) on account of their being perceived to exist¹⁴³. For the important¹⁴⁴ same reason, the objects seen in the waking state are

¹⁴² 102

In this page, few of the symbol not found in Book Antiqua font so we have inserted from Tahoma font.

¹ There, etc. — Comp. *Bṛhd. Up.*, 4.3.10.

² Reason — The reason, as adduced in the previous *Kārikā*, is the absence of the appropriate time and space for the real existence of such dream objects.

³ Self-luminosity — Comp. *Bṛhd. Up.*, 4.3.14. Mere examination of the waking experiences cannot prove that Ātman is self-luminous. For, it may be contended that various activities, associated with the waking state, are due to the functioning of the sense-organs under the influence, as the Śruti says, of the various luminous deities as the sun, the fire, etc. But in sleep various activities are experienced by the dreamer and these activities, in the absence of the functionings of the sense-organs, are due to the self-luminosity of Ātman.

* and self-creativityThe original editor inserted footnote by hand

¹⁴³ The original editor added underlined by hand

illusory. The nature of objects is the same in the waking state and dream. The only difference is the limitation of space (associated with dream objects).

ŚANKARA'S COMMENTARY.⁺

The proposition to be established (*Pratijñā*) is the illusoriness of objects that *are perceived* in the waking state. "Being perceived" is the "ground" (*hetu*) for the inference. They are like the objects that *are perceived* in dream, is the illustration ("Hindi passage omitted here"). As the objects perceived to exist in dream are illusory so also are the objects perceived in the waking state. The common feature of "being perceived" is the relation (*Upanaya*) between the illustration given and the proposition taken for consideration. Therefore the illusoriness is admitted of objects that are perceived to exist in the waking state. This is what is known as the reiteration (*Nigamanam*) of the proposition or the conclusion. The objects perceived to exist in the dream are different¹ from those perceived in the waking state in respect of their being perceived in a limited space within the body. The fact of *being seen* and the (consequent) illusoriness are common to both.

("Hindi¹⁴⁵ passage omitted here")

5. *The thoughtful persons speak of the sameness of the waking and dream states on account of similarity of objects (perceived in both the states) on grounds already described.*

ŚANKARA'S COMMENTARY.

The identity¹ (of the experiences) of the dream and waking states is declared by the wise on account of the reason, already stated, *i.e.*, the experience of objects (in both

¹⁴⁴ The original editor inserted "important" by hand

⁺ this argument is purely logical to suit the mentality of professional logicians. The original editor inserted footnote by hand

¹ *Different*—This difference is noted only from the waking condition. No inappropriateness of space is noticed during the dream.

Sankara's commentary on the *Kārikā* is in the form of a syllogism.

¹⁴⁵ 104

CHAPTER II
ILLUSION

¹ *Identity*—Sometimes experience is said to be of three kinds: *Pāramārthika*, *Prāthibhāsika* and *Vyavahārika*, making the last two different from each other. Gaudapāda does not make any distinction between the dream ("Hindi passage omitted here") and waking ("Hindi passage omitted here") experiences. Comp. *Kārikā* 14 (1st chapter).

the states) is associated with subject-object² relationship. This *Kārikā* enunciates the conclusion that has already been arrived at in the previous inferences by the wise.

("Hindi passage omitted here")

6. *That which is non-real¹⁴⁶ at the beginning and in the end, is necessarily so (non-real) in the middle. The¹⁴⁷ objects are like the illusions we see, still they are regarded as if real.*

ŚANKARA'S COMMENTARY.

The objects perceived to exist in the waking state are unreal for this reason also,¹ *i.e.*, they do not exist either at the beginning or in the end. Such objects (of experience) as mirage, etc., do not exist either at the beginning or in the end. Therefore they do not (really) exist in the middle also. This is the decided² opinion of the world. The different objects perceived to exist in the waking state are also of the same³ nature. Though they (the objects of experience) are of the same nature as the illusory objects, such as mirage, etc., on account of their non-existence at the beginning and in the end, still they are regarded as real by the ignorant, that is, the persons who do not know *Ātman*.

("Hindi¹⁴⁸ passage omitted here")

² *Subject-object*—The two factors, namely, the seer and the seen, are equally present in both the waking and the dream states.

The dream and the waking experiences are identical because both are characterised by the same condition, *viz.*, the characteristic of "being perceived. "Therefore they, both, are unreal. The reason of "being seen", as already described, is a matter of common experience.

¹⁴⁶ The original editor changed "non-existent" to "non-real" by hand

¹⁴⁷ 105

CHAPTER II ILLUSION

¹ *Also*—This is the reason for the illusoriness of the waking objects.

² *Decided, etc.*—The reason for the illusoriness of the objects perceived to be real is that such (illusory) existence is not perceived at the beginning or in the end. If it be contended that the perceived object exists at the beginning as the cause, it will be shown later on that this causal conception is itself illusory.

³ *Same, etc.—i.e.*, illusory. According to Gaudapāda, illusory objects are those which have no existence at the beginning and in the end. This is exactly the characteristic of objects perceived to exist outside of us. Changeability is the characteristic of all perceived objects. Change implies non-existence at the beginning and in the end. As all perceived objects are of this nature, therefore they are called illusory.

In this *Kārikā* emphasis is laid on the non-reality of the perceived objects at the beginning and in the end. The ego is the perceiver (*Dra*)* all objects seen. The ego does not change as it is the witness of all changes. The perceived objects are known to be illusory or unreal in comparison with the perceiver.

* So long as the man does not enquire, the ego remains the perceiver

¹⁴⁸ 106

CHAPTER II

7. *The serving a purpose (as means to an end), of them (the objects of waking experience) is contradicted (opposed) in dream. Therefore they are undoubtedly admitted to be illusory on account of their (both waking and dream) being with a beginning and an end.*

ŚANKARA'S COMMENTARY.

(Objection) – The assertion that the objects perceived to exist in the waking state are illusory like those of the dream state is illogical. It is because the objects of the waking experience, such as food, drink or vehicles, etc., are seen to serve some purpose, that is, they appease hunger and thirst as well as do the work of carrying a man to and fro. But this is not the case with the objects perceived in dream. Therefore the conclusion that the objects perceived in the waking state are unreal like those seen in dream is mere fancy.

(Reply) – It is not so.

(Objection) – Why?

(Reply) – It is because the serving as means to some end or purpose which is found in respect of food, drink, etc., (in the waking state) is contradicted in dream. A man, in the waking state, eats and drinks and feels appeased and free from thirst. But as soon as he goes into sleep, he finds himself (in dream) afflicted¹⁴⁹ with hunger and thirst as if he were without food and drink for days and nights. And the contrary also happens to be equally true. A man satiated with food and drink in dream finds himself, when awakened, quite hungry and thirsty. Therefore the objects perceived in the waking state are contradicted in dream. Hence, we think that the illusoriness of the objects perceived in the waking state like those of dream need not be doubted. Therefore¹ both

ILLUSION

¹⁴⁹ 107

CHAPTER II

ILLUSION

¹ *Therefore* – Therefore the original assertion that the objects seen in the waking and dream states are illusory on account of their being characterised by a beginning and an end need not be doubted.

The test of reality is thought by some to be “what works” (as the *Arthakriyākāryavādins*⁺ hold). As the dream objects do not work in the waking state therefore they are unreal. The *Vedāntin* says that dream objects are means to dream ends as the waking ones are to waking ends. A sense of causal relation is present in the dream mind as in the waking mind. But what is considered logical sequence in the waking mind. But what is considered logical sequence in the waking state is not thought to be such in the dream. Each has its own notion of propriety and each is stultified by the other in spite of its appearing to be real.

⁺ ancient Indian Pragmatists

these objects are undoubtedly admitted to be illusory on account of their common feature of having a beginning and an end.

(“Hindi passage omitted here”)

8. *The objects (perceived by the dreamer), not usually met with (in the waking state) undoubtedly, owe their existence to the (peculiar) condition in which the cognizer, that is, his mind, works for the time being, as in the case of¹⁵⁰ those residing in heaven. The dreamer associating himself (with the dream conditions) experiences those (objects), even as the one, well-instructed here (goes from one place to another and sees objects belonging to those places).*

ŚANKARA’S COMMENTARY.

(Objection)—The assertion about the illusoriness of objects perceived in the waking state on account of their similarity to those perceived in the dream state is not true.

(Reply)—Why?

(Objection)—The illustration does not agree with the thing to be illustrated.

(Reply)—How?

(Objection)—Those objects that are cognized in the waking state are not seen in dream.

(Reply)—What then are they (dream experiences)?

(Objection)—A man perceives in dream objects which are never usually seen in the waking state. He finds himself (in dream) to be with eight hands and seated on an elephant with four tusks. Similarly various other unusual (abnormal) objects are seen in the dream. These (dream objects) are not like other illusory objects. They are, without doubt, real (in themselves). Therefore the illustration does not agree. Hence, the statement that the waking experiences are unreal like those of dream is not correct.

(Reply)—No, your conclusion is not correct. You think that the objects perceived in dream are extraordinary (not like those usually seen in the waking state),¹⁵¹ but these

¹⁵⁰ 108

CHAPTER II
ILLUSION

¹⁵¹ 109

CHAPTER II

are not absolutely real in themselves. What, then, is their nature? They¹ are only peculiar to the circumstances of the perceiver associated with those (dream) conditions, *i.e.*, of the dreamer associated with the dream-conditions. As² the denizens of heaven, such as Indra, etc., have the characteristics of being endowed with a thousand eyes, etc. (on account of the very condition of their existence in heaven), so also there are the (peculiar) unusual (abnormal) features of the dreamer (on account of the peculiar condition of the dream state). These³ (dream experiences) are not absolutely real like the absolute reality of the perceiver. The dreamer associated with the (dream) conditions, while in the dream state, sees all these abnormal or peculiar objects which are but the imaginations of his own mind. It is like the case of a man, in the waking experience, who is well-instructed regarding the route to be taken to reach another country, and who while going to that country sees on the way objects belonging to that locality. Hence as⁴ perception of snake in the rope and the mirage in the desert which are due to the (mental) conditions of the perceiver are unreal, so also the objects, transcending the limits of the waking experience, perceived in dream, are unreal on account of their being due to the (peculiar) condition of the dream state itself. Therefore the illustration of dream is not incorrect.

ILLUSION

¹ *They are, etc.*—The dream experiences have no causal relation with the waking experience. A causal relation between two objects of waking experiences, as will be seen later on, cannot be proved to be true. The objects of our experiences, whether in dream or waking state, are but the creations of the mind (“Hindi passage omitted here”) and it is due to ignorance that we relate them causally. In dream, mind is associated with those experiences which are realized as creations of dream.

² *As, etc.*—It is only some particular forms of thought which create heaven, etc., with their peculiar denizens. They are not absolutely real but are only our imaginations. The moments we imagine heaven, we imagine it also to be peopled with Indra, etc., in as much as in our mind Indra, etc., are ever associated with heaven.

³ *These, etc.*—The experiences of dream are not real because of their changing nature. But the perceiver of dream is real because it is unchangeable and witnessing the changes. Even the so-called sentient beings we perceive in dream are insentient because they are also objects of perception (drayam) (“Hindi passage omitted here”) and they appear and disappear.

⁴ *As, etc.*—The illusory perception of mirage, etc., is due to the peculiar mental conditions that create them last. The objects perceived to be real in the waking state, the illusions experienced in that state and the objects perceived in the dream state have the same nature, *i.e.*, they are all seen (“Hindi passage omitted here”) and as such they are all forms of thought (“Hindi passage omitted here”). Hence they are all illusory. No reality can be attached to any of them.

It has been said before that both the dream and waking experiences are alike in nature. But a line of demarcation is sought to be drawn between them, contending that the dream percepts being most of them queer, fantastic and even unnatural, the like of them do not find a place in the world of the wakeful man. But such percepts, however grotesque or abnormal, appear perfectly normal to the dreamer. The dreamer evidently has his own notion of space, distance and from. But his standards have no applicability to the wakeful man. And the notions of the latter in regard to space, etc., have no place in the dreamer’s world, thought for each everything is normal and real.

("Hindi¹⁵² passage omitted here")

* This¹⁵³ verse is extremely important

("Hindi passage omitted here")

9-10. *In dream, also, what is imagined within by the mind is illusory and what is cognized outside (by the mind) appears to be real. But (in truth) both these are known to be unreal. Similarly, in the waking state, also, what is imagined within by the mind is illusory; and what is experienced outside (by the mind) appears to be real. But in fact, both should be rationally held to be unreal.*

ŚANKARA'S COMMENTARY.

Having refuted the contention of the opponent that there exists no similarity between objects of the waking state and the abnormal (unusual) objects seen in dream, (the text proceeds to point out) the truth of the objects of waking state being (unreal) like those of dream. In the dream state also those which are mere modifications of the mind, cognized within, are illusory. For, such internal objects vanish the moment after they are cognized. In that very dream such objects as pot, etc., cognized by the mind and perceived by the sense-organs, eyes, etc., as existing outside, are¹ held to be real. Thus, though all the dream experiences are, without doubt, known² to be unreal, yet they arrange themselves as³ real and unreal. Both kinds of objects (in dream), imagined

¹⁵² 110

CHAPTER II
ILLUSION

¹⁵³ 111

CHAPTER II
ILLUSION

¹ *Are held to be real* – That is, by the subject in the dream.

² *Known, etc.* – We know the illusoriness of the dream experiences from the waking state.

³ *As, etc.* – *i.e.*, at the time of dreaming.

This is another ground for proving the similarity of the dream and the waking states and the consequent unreality of the latter. It may be contended that in the waking state we make a distinction between "real" and "unreal" and that the latter corresponds to all dream objects. To this the reply of the *Vedāntist* is: In dreams also we make a distinction between "real" and "unreal". We see unreal objects in dream and feel surprised when the picture wears off, which impression we consider unreal in dream itself. Therefore there exists a sense of distinction between the "real" and the "unreal" in the one state as in the other. For, while the dream lasts, to the dreamer not only are dream objects real but also is the dream state a waking one. The whole of dream experiences is known to be illusory only from the waking standpoint. Similarly the whole of waking experiences, including its so-called subjective imaginations and objective realities, is equally unreal from the standpoint of true knowledge.

by the mind internally and externally, are found to be unreal. Similarly (in the waking experience) objects known as real and imaginary (mental) should be rationally held to be¹⁵⁴ unreal. Objects, internal and external, are creations of the mind (whether they be in the dream or in the waking state).¹⁵⁵ Other things have already been explained.

("Hindi passage omitted here")

11. *If the objects cognized in both the conditions (of dream and of waking) be illusory, who cognizes all these (illusory objects) and who again imagines them?*

ŚANKARA'S COMMENTARY.

The opponent asks, "If the objects, cognized in the waking and dream states, be devoid of reality, who¹⁵⁶¹ is the cognizer of these, — objects imagined by the mind, both inside (subjective) and outside (objective)? Who is, again, their imaginer?" In short, what is the support (sub-stratum) of memory and knowledge? If² you say none, then we shall be led to the conclusion that there is nothing like *Ātman* or Self.

("Hindi passage omitted here")

12. *Ātman, the self-luminous, through the power of his own Māyā, imagines in himself by himself (all the objects that the subject experiences within or without). He alone is the cognizer of the objects (so created). This is the decision of the Vedānta.*

ŚANKARA'S COMMENTARY.

¹⁵⁴ 112

CHAPTER II
ILLUSION

¹⁵⁵ The original editor added underlined by hand

¹⁵⁶ 113

CHAPTER II
ILLUSION

¹ *Who, etc.* — It is the subject (or the ego) who, remembering his past experiences, has similar experiences in the present. We can infer a subject only from the facts of memory and experience. If experience and memory be unreal, the subject also would be unreal or non-existent.

² *If, etc.* — If the Self (*Ātman*) and the objective world be unreal, then all categories of experience, *viz.*, knower, known and knowledge become mere illusion. That is the same as believing in absolute nihilism in which the existence of even *Ātman* or Self is denied. But this contention is invalid. One cannot deny the existence of *Ātman*. For, one who refutes *Ātman*, takes the position of *Ātman*. Therefore the theory of the non-existence of *Ātman* cannot be admitted.

The self-luminous¹ *Ātman* himself,² by³ his own *Māyā*, imagines⁴ in⁵ himself the different⁶ objects, to be described hereafter. It is like the imagining of the snake,¹⁵⁷ etc., in the rope, etc. He⁷ himself cognizes them, as⁸ he has imagined them. There⁹ is no other substratum of knowledge and memory. The aim of Vedānta is to declare that knowledge and memory are not without support as the Buddhistic nihilists maintain.

This¹⁵⁸ illusory *Jiva*, *Īśwara* and the world last as long as the ignorance (*Māyā*) lasts Solipsism cannot be laid against Vedānta. For, according to Vedānta, the ego is not the creator of the non-ego. They come into existence together. One cannot exist without the other. From the relative standpoint both ego and non-ego are the products of mentation of *Īśwara* or the cosmic mind.

(“Hindi passage omitted here”)

¹ *Self-luminous*—The self-luminosity of *Ātman* is⁺ predicated from the relative standpoint. Objects, otherwise insentient, appear sentient on account of the conscious *Ātman* pervading everywhere.

+ evident from dream experience and

² *Himself*—There is no extra-cosmic creator of the universe who, like the potter, is separate from his creation.

³ *By his own Māyā*—When one looks upon the creation as a fact and seeks its cause, *Māyā* or ignorance is pointed out as such cause. The *Māyā* inheres in Brahman as viewed from the same causal standpoint. It is like the ignorance which, inhering in the perceiver, makes him see his own mind appearing as various dream objects The causal ignorance which makes *Ātman* appear as the manifested manifold, is here called *Māyā*.

⁴ *Imagines*—There is no actual creation. It is an imagination due to the ignorance of the perceiver.

⁵ *In himself*—From the causal standpoint *Ātman* is both the material and the efficient cause of the universe. There is no inert matter or anything else, separate from *Ātman*, which he has fashioned into the universe.

⁶ *Different objects*—All perceived objects consisting of the ego and the non-ego.

157 114

CHAPTER II ILLUSION

⁷ *He himself*—*Ātman* creates this world with his own *Māyā* and then he himself being reflected in *Buddhi* (mind), appears as *Jiva* who perceives the objects.

⁸ *As he, etc.*—Agency, etc., associated with *Ātman*, are not absolutely real. It is because the *Ātman* imagines himself, owing to *Māyā*, as an agent, that he is looked upon as the subject.

⁹ *There is, etc.*—Knowledge and memory, categories of relative perception, inhere in the *Ātman* (Self from the subjective standpoint) and in the creator (Brahman from the objective standpoint). Brahman and *Ātman* are identical.

158 115

CHAPTER II ILLUSION

13. *The Lord (Ātman), with his mind turned outward, variously imagines the diverse objects (such as sound, etc.), which are already in his mind (in the form of Vāsanās or Sankalpas or desires). The Ātman again (with his mind turned within), imagines in his mind various (objects of) ideas.*

ŚANKARA'S COMMENTARY.

How does he imagine the ideas? It is described thus:—The word “*Vikaroti*” means creates or imagines, *i.e.*, manifests in multiple forms. Lord, *i.e.*, *Ātman*, with¹ his mind turned outward, imagines in diverse forms various objects, perceived in the (outside) world, such as sound, etc., as well as other objects,² and also various objects permanent (such as earth, etc.), and impermanent,³ *i.e.*, which exist only for the moment, *i.e.*, as long as that imagination lasts—all being of the nature of subtle ideas (*Vāsanās*) in his mind and not yet fully manifested. Similarly, turning his mind within, the Lord imagines various ideas which are subjective. “*Prabhu*” in the text means the Lord (*Īswara*), *i.e.*, the *Ātman*.

(“Hindi¹⁵⁹ passage omitted here”)

14. *Those that are cognized within only as long as the thought of them lasts, as well as those that are perceived by the senses and that conform to two points of time, are all mere imagination. There is no other ground for differentiating the one from the other.*

ŚANKARA'S COMMENTARY.

¹ *With his, etc.*—The distinction of objects as internal and external is due to the association of the two organs of perception, namely, mind and sense-organs. When mind alone is concerned we cognize internal objects, when sense-organs are associated with mind we perceive external objects; or in other words, the *Ātman* with the association of sense-organs externalises the internal ideas, *i.e.*, makes them appear as gross physical objects. This division of externality and internality is not real.

² *Other, etc.*—Such as heavenly worlds, etc., mentioned in the scriptures.

³ *Impermanent*—Such as lightning, etc.

As a potter or a weaver, in order to produce a pot or a cloth, first of all, imagines these in his mind and subsequently manifests them outside, associating them with appropriate names and forms; so also the great Lord, first of all, conceives in his mind, as an idea, the external world to be and then projects it outside associating it with suitable names and forms.

The world that is seen extended in time and space, with its permanent and impermanent objects as well as the various ideas which are distinguished from matter, are all nothing but the ideas in the mind of the Creator, *i.e.*, *Ātman*. This *Ātman* or the causal Self creates by his imagination the ego and the non-ego as well as their mutual relationship.

¹⁵⁹ 116

A¹ doubt is raised as to the statement that everything is mere imagination of mind like the dream. For,¹⁶⁰ the imagination of mind, such as desire, etc., determined² by mind, is different from objects³ perceived to exist outside, on account of the latter being determined by two points in time. This objection is not valid. "Objects perceived to exist within, only as long as the thought about them lasts," signify those (subjective) ideas which⁴ are only determined by mind; *i.e.*, such objects have no other time to determine them except that wherein the idea in the mind exists (when imagining such ideas). The meaning is that such (subjective) ideas are experienced at the time when they are imagined. "Objects related to two points of time" signify those external objects which are cognizable by others at some other point of time and which cognize the latter in their turn. Therefore such objects are said to be mutually limited by one another. As for example, when it is said that he remains⁵ till the cow is milked, the statement means, "The cow is milked as long as he remains and he remains as long as the cow is milked." A⁶ similar instance is the following: "It is like that, that is like this." In this way, the

¹ *A doubt – i.e.*, the imaginary objects exist only as long as the mind that imagines them lasts. They have no existence beyond that time. But the external objects that are perceived in the waking state exist at other times also even when the mind does not imagine them. Therefore external objects cannot be proved to be illusory by the mere illustration of dream experiences.

¹⁶⁰ 117

CHAPTER II ILLUSION

6

² *Determined, etc.*—The mental imagination has no corresponding reality existing outside. Such imaginary idea, as the objective illusion of the snake in the rope, created within by the mind, is of the nature of mind and is perceived to exist within the mind alone. Such ideas exist only as long as the perceiving mind exists. They cannot be proved to exist by any other instrument of knowledge.

³ *Objects, etc.*—But the different external objects are mutually cognized by one another from different points in time. The consciousness that such object exists does not depend upon the perceiving mind alone. Therefore such objects cannot be of the same nature as dream or imaginary objects.

⁴ *Which are, etc.*—*i.e.*, external objects are perceived by other minds existing previous to or subsequent to the present perceiving mind.

⁵ *He remains, etc.*—The two external objects of cognition, *e.g.*, the milking of a cow and the remaining of a man are mutually related to each other in two points in time. *And a man may exist independently of the milking of the cow. Those objects that are in this manner mutually cognized are said to answer to two points in time.

* The cow may exist independently of whether it be milked by a man or not,

⁶ *A similar instance*—As long as a pot serves a purpose, so long it is said to exist. Here also the time is the limiting factor. Thus all objects that are perceived to exist outside are

objects perceived to exist outside mutually determine one another. Therefore they are known as "*Dvayakālāh*," that is, related to two points in time. Ideas perceived within and existing as long as the mind that cognizes them lasts, as well as the external objects related to two points in time, are all mere imaginations.⁷ The⁸ peculiar characteristic of being related to two points in time of the objects that are perceived to exist outside is not due¹⁶¹ to any other cause except their being imagined by the mind. Therefore the illustration of dream well applies here.

("Hindi¹⁶² passage omitted here")

15. *Those that exist within the mind (as mere subjective imaginations) and are known as the unmanifested as well as those that exist without in a manifested form (as perceived objects), – all are mere imaginations, the difference lying only in the sense-organs (by means of which the latter are cognized).*

ŚANKARA'S COMMENTARY.

Though¹ the objects perceived within, as mere mental impressions, are unmanifested, and though² the objects perceived outside through the sense-organs

determined by the present or any other time. They are independent of the mind of the perceiver. They are, rather, dependent upon the time in which they exist.

⁷ *Imaginations* – That a thing exists independent of the perceiving mind is also an idea. That the world existed before I was born or will continue to exist after I die or that many things exist at present of which I am not conscious, – these are all mere ideas in my mind at the present time. Past, present and future are nothing but ideas present in the mind at the moment.

⁸ *The peculiar, etc.* – This can be better understood from the analogy of the dream. A man may dream for five minutes in which time he may see objects existing during as many years. Different objects perceived in dream answering to different points in time are but the imagination of the dreamer who only dreams for a few moments. Similarly in the waking state a man, by mere force of imagination, sees objects conforming to different points in time extending hundreds of years. Though from the waking standpoint dream objects are known to be illusory, yet they are perceived to be actually existing at the time of dream. Similarly it is quite reasonable to believe in the illusory nature of the waking experience from the standpoint of truth. There is no difference between the objects perceived in dream and waking states on account of their possessing a common feature, namely, "capability of being seen".

¹⁶¹ 118

CHAPTER II

ILLUSION

¹⁶² 119

CHAPTER II

ILLUSION

¹ *Though, etc.* – Objects perceived within the mind are mere products of imagination. The characteristic of such objects is their unmanifestedness. Therefore they are known as "ideas" in contradistinction to "gross" objects perceived outside.

such¹⁶³ as eyes, etc., are known as manifested (gross entities), yet the distinction³ is not due to anything substantial in the nature of the (two kinds of) objects. For, such distinction is seen in dreams as well. What is, then, the cause of this distinction? It⁴ is only due to the difference in the use of sense-organs (by means of which these objects are perceived). Hence, it is established that the objects perceived in the waking state are as much imagination of the mind as those seen in the dream.

(“Hindi¹⁶⁴ passage omitted here”)

16. *First of all, is imagined the Jiva (the embodied being) and then are imagined the various entities, objective and subjective, that are perceived. As is (one’s) knowledge so is (one’s) memory of it.*

ŚANKARA’S COMMENTARY.

What is the source of the imagination of various objects, subjective¹ and objective,² that are perceived and appear to be related to one another as cause and effect? It is thus explained:—The *Jiva* is of the nature of cause and effect and is further characterised by such ideas as “I do this, I am happy and miserable.” Such *Jiva* is, at

² *Though, etc.*—Those perceived to exist outside and cognized by different sense-organs are known as gross manifested objects and as such they are distinguished from ideas in the mind.

¹⁶³ 120

CHAPTER II ILLUSION

³ *The distinction, etc.*—This distinction between the gross objects and the subtle ideas is not due to anything substantial or real in the very nature of the objects. They belong to one and the same class, *i.e.*, both these are mere forms of thought or the imagined ideas of the perceiver. Though there is this distinction of manifestedness and unmanifestedness, yet one cannot be less illusory than the other. For, we see the same distinction in dream experiences as well, yet the whole of dream is illusory or imagination of the mind.

⁴ *It is, etc.*—This distinction is due to the following reason. Ideas are cognized within the mind. External objects are perceived by sense-organs such as the eyes, etc. The distinction regarding the nature of perceived objects is due to the nature of the organs by means of which they are perceived. In spite of this difference ideas and physical objects do not admit of any distinction as regards their real nature. In dreams also there are sense-organs of the dream. There is therefore no real difference.

¹⁶⁴ 121

CHAPTER II ILLUSION

¹ *Subjective*—Such as, pain and pleasure, knowledge, attachment, etc.

² *Objective*—Such as, various objects perceived outside of us. These objects appear to cause various subjective feelings in us, which, in their turn, seem to create external objects. Therefore, subjective and objective entities appear to be mutually related as cause and effect.

first, imagined³ in the *Ātman*⁴ which is pure and devoid of any such characteristics, like⁵ the imagination of snake in the rope. Then for the knowledge of the *Jiva* are imagined⁶ various existent entities, both subjective and objective, such as *Prāna*, etc., constituting different ideas such as the agent, action and the result (of action). What is the cause of this imagination? It is thus explained: It, the *Jiva*, who is the product of imagination and competent to effect further imagination, has its memory determined by its own inherent knowledge. That is to say, its knowledge is always followed by a memory, similar to that knowledge. Hence,⁷ from the knowledge of the idea of cause results the knowledge of the idea of the effect. Then follows the memory of both cause and¹⁶⁵ effect. This memory is followed by its knowledge which results in the various states of knowledge characterised by action, actor and the effect. These are followed by their memory, which, in its turn, is followed by the states of knowledge. In this way are imagined various objects, subjective and objective, which are perceived and seen to be related to one another as cause and effect.

(“Hindi¹⁶⁶ passage omitted here”)

³ *Imagined*—The *Ātman* itself imagines the idea of a *Jiva* through the power of *Māyā*.

⁴ *Ātman*—*Ātman*, pure and unrelated, appears as the substratum of all ideas.

⁵ *Like, etc.*—No illusory superimposition is possible without a real substratum. This is the reply to the Buddhistic nihilism.

⁶ *Imagined*—That is to say, by the *Jiva* itself through the power of *Māyā* which is postulated from the causal standpoint.

⁷ *Hence, etc.*—It is seen from common experience that the idea of food and drink is followed by the idea of satisfaction. One is not possible in the absence of the other. Following this method of agreement and difference we imagine thus: From the idea of knowledge of food, etc., which is the cause, follows the idea of the knowledge of satisfaction which is the effect. Next day, we get the memory of this cause and effect experienced on the previous day. Then we have the idea of a duty which may be described as a result of the previous experience. Accordingly we begin the act of cooking, etc., with the help of rice, fuel, etc. After eating the food thus prepared, we derive certain definite states of knowledge characterised by the idea of satisfaction, etc.

This satisfaction inheres in us as the memory which stimulates us, next day, to similar action. We perform the action which is followed by an identical result. Thus ideas succeed one another and appear to be related as cause and effect. That these ideas need not have any counterpart in the gross physical world of the waking state can be understood by the analysis of the dream experiences. As a matter of fact, it cannot be rationally proved that even, in the waking state, an idea can produce a corresponding effect in the world perceived to exist outside of us.

¹⁶⁵ 122

¹⁶⁶ 123

17. *As the rope, whose nature is not really known, is imagined in the dark to be a snake, a water-line, etc., so also is the Ātman imagined (in various ways).*

ŚANKARA'S COMMENTARY.

It has been said that the imagination of *Jiva* (the *Jiva*-idea) is the source of all (other) imaginations (ideas). What is the cause of this *Jiva*-idea? It is thus explained by an illustration:—It is found in the common experience that a rope, not known as such, is imagined, in hazy darkness, as snake, water-line, stick or any one of the many similar things. All this is due to the previous absence of knowledge regarding the real nature of the rope. If previously the rope had been known in its real nature, then the imagination of snake, etc., would not have been possible, as in the case of one's own fingers.

Similarly, *Ātman* has been variously imagined as *Jiva*, *Prāna* and so forth¹ because it is not known in its own nature, *i.e.*, pure² essence of knowledge itself, the¹⁶⁷ non-dual *Ātman*, quite distinct from such phenomenal characteristics indicated by the relation of cause and effect, etc., which are productive of misery. This is the unmistakable verdict of all the Upanishads.

("Hindi passage omitted here")

18. *When the real nature of the rope is ascertained all illusions about it disappear and there arises the conviction that it is the one (unchanged) rope and nothing else; even so is the nature of the conviction regarding Ātman.*

ŚANKARA'S COMMENTARY.

When it is determined that it is nothing but the rope alone, then all illusions regarding the rope disappear and the (non-dual) knowledge that there exists nothing else but the rope, becomes firmly established. Similar is the knowledge,—like the light of the sun—produced by the negative scriptural statements which deny all phenomenal attributes (in *Ātman*),—statements like "Not this", "Not this", etc., leading to the knowledge of the real nature of *Ātman*, as: "All this is verily *Ātman*", "(It is) without cause and effect, without internality and externality", "(It is) ever without and within

¹ *So forth, etc.* — *e.g.*, the ideas of agent, enjoyer, etc.

² *Pure, etc.* — *i.e.*, without birth, death, form, etc.

and beginningless”, “(It is) without decay and death, immortal, fearless, one and without a second.”

(“Hindi passage omitted here”)

19. *The*¹⁶⁸ *Ātman* is imagined as *Prāna* and other endless objects^Δ. This is due to *Māyā* (ignorance) of the luminous (*Ātman* itself) by which It is (as it were) deluded.

ŚANKARA’S COMMENTARY.

If it be definitely ascertained that *Ātman* is verily one, how could it be imagined as the endless objects like *Prāna*, etc., having the characteristics of the phenomenal experience? It is thus explained:—This is due to the *Māyā* (ignorance) inhering in the luminous *Ātman*. As the illusion conjured up by the juggler makes¹ the very clear sky appear covered with trees blooming with flowers and leaves, so² does this luminous *Ātman* become deluded, as it were, by his own *Māyā*. “My *Māyā* cannot be easily got over” declares the *Gītā*.

(“Hindi passage omitted here”)

20. *Those*¹ that know only *Prāna*,² call It (*Ātman*) *Prāna*, *those*³ that know *Bhutas* call It *Bhutas*,⁴ *those*⁵ knowing *Gunās* call It *Gunās*⁶, *those*⁷ knowing *Tattvas*, call It *Tattvas*⁸.

¹⁶⁸ 125

CHAPTER II
ILLUSION

f

^Δ by the ignorant. The original editor inserted footnote “by the ignorant” by hand

¹ *Makes, etc.* — Even when, under the influence of the juggler’s illusion, the sky appears to be filled with trees, etc., it does not, in reality, lose its natural clearness.

² *So, etc.* — *Māyā* as the explanation of the manifold is from the causal standpoint. Even when *Ātman* appears to be transformed into the universe, it does not, in reality, lose its non-dual character.

¹ *Those* — e.g., the *Vaiśeṣikas* and the worshippers of *Hiranyagarbha*, etc.

² *Prāna* — They hold *Prāna*, i.e., *Hiranyagarbha* or extra cosmic God, to be the cause of the universe. This is mere imagination of the mind. There is no rational proof of the reality of an extra-cosmic God or Person as the cause of the world.

³ *Those, etc.* — e.g., the *Chārvākas* or the atheists.

⁴ *Bhutas* — They designate the four elements, such as, earth, water, fire and air, which are directly perceived by them, as the cause of the universe. The insentient elements cannot be the cause of the sentient beings. Therefore this theory also is an imagination.

("Hindi¹⁶⁹ passage omitted here")

21. Those acquainted with the quarters¹ (Pādas) call It quarters; those² with objects, the objects³; those⁴ with Lokas, the Lokas⁵; those⁶ with Devas, the Devas.⁷

("Hindi¹⁷⁰ passage omitted here")

22. Those knowing the Vedas call It the Vedas¹; those² acquainted with the sacrifices, call It the sacrifices³ (Yagna); those⁴ conversant with the enjoyer, designate It as the enjoyer⁵ and those⁶ with the object of enjoyment, call It such.

⁵ Those, etc. – e.g., the Sāmkhyas.

⁶ Gunas – According to the Sāmkhyas, the state of equilibrium of the three Gunas, viz., Sattva, Rajas and Tamas, produces Mahat, etc., and through them the universe. This is also mere idea.

⁷ Those, etc. – i.e., The Saivas.

⁸ Tattvas – The Saivas enumerate three Tattvas or categories, viz., Ātmā, Avidyā and Siva as the cause of the universe. This is also an imagination and hence untenable. For, Siva being an entity separated from Ātman, becomes an object like a pot, etc.

169 126

CHAPTER II ILLUSION

These different conceptions of Ātman are nothing but imaginations of the mind.

¹ Quarters – e.g., Viśva, Taijasa and Prājna. Ātman, being without parts and also unrelated, cannot be really divided into quarters or parts.

² Those, etc. – i.e., thinkers like Vātsyāyana, etc.

³ Objects – Such as, sound, colour, etc., i.e., the objects perceived by the different sense-organs. The objects, on account of their changeable and negatable nature, cannot be the Ultimate Reality.

⁴ Those, etc. – i.e., the Paurānikas or the believers in Mythology.

⁵ Lokas – such as Bhuh, Bhuvah and Svah. These being three in number are limited.

⁶ Those, etc. – i.e., the Karma Mīmāṃsakas or the believers in the Karma portions of the Vedas.

⁷ Devas – Such as Agni (Fire), Indra, etc. According to this theory, Agni, Indra, etc., the various conscious deities, though not occupying the actual position of God (Īśvara), apportion the results of our various works. The conception of a separate God is not necessary. They cannot be the Ultimate Reality.

170 127

CHAPTER II ILLUSION

¹ Vedas – e.g., the four Vedas, Rig, Yajus, Sāma and Atharva. These Vedas cannot be the Ultimate Reality inasmuch as they are sounds.

² Those, etc. – i.e., sages such as Bodhāyana and others who are adept in the performance of sacrifices.

(“Hindi¹⁷¹ passage omitted here”)

23. *The Knowers¹ of the subtle designate It as the subtle², the Knowers³ of the gross call It the gross.⁴ Those⁵ that are familiar with a Personality (having form), call It a person⁶, and those⁷ that do not believe in anything having a form call It a void.⁸*

(“Hindi¹⁷² passage omitted here”)

24. *The Knowers¹ of time call It time²; the Knowers of space (ether) call It space (ether). Those versed in disputation call It the problem in dispute and the Knowers of the worlds call It the worlds.³*

³ *Sacrifices*—The upholders of sacrifices and rituals like the *Yagnas* think that sacrifices, such as *Jyotishtoma*, etc., constitute the Highest Reality. But this is also an illusion. For, according to them, the sacrifice signifies the object (offered), the deity and the act of offering. Any one of these, *singly*, does not constitute sacrifice. Again three of them, combined together, do not constitute any real entity.

⁴ *Those, etc.*—*viz.*, the *Sāmkhyas*.

⁵ *Enjoyer*—According to the *Sāmkhyas* the Ultimate Reality is the *Purusha* who is not the agent or doer but a mere enjoyer. This theory is not rational; for enjoyment means some change in the enjoyer which thus contradicts the idea of his being eternal and changeless. If enjoyment be predicated as the inherent nature of *Purusha*, then the conception of extraneous objects, conducive to its enjoyment, is inconsistent.

⁶ *Those, etc.*—That is, the cook, to whom the only reality appears to be delicious dishes.

171 128

CHAPTER II ILLUSION

¹ *Knowers*—*i.e.*, those who *believe* (or take) the *Ātman* to be subtle like an atom.

² *Subtle*—This theory is irrational; for, we feel consciousness simultaneously all over the body.

³ *Knowers*—A sect of materialists who believe the gross body to be real.

⁴ *Gross*—The gross body cannot be the Ultimate Reality as a dead or sleeping man, in spite of the body being in existence, is unconscious. Any single limb of the body is insentient. Therefore even their aggregate cannot constitute the conscious Reality.

⁵ *Those, etc.*—*i.e.*, the *Āgamikas* who believe a person, *e.g.*, Siva with a trident or Vishnu with a disc, to be the Ultimate Reality. These are also imaginary.

⁶ *Person*—This is also an illusion.

⁷ *Those, etc.*—*i.e.*, the Buddhistic ritualists.

⁸ *Void*—The idea that the Ultimate Reality is an absolute void is also an illusion, as a void cannot be the substratum of the positive fact of the empirical universe.

172 129

CHAPTER II ILLUSION

("Hindi passage omitted here")

25. *The Cognizers¹ of the mind call It the mind²; of³ the Buddhi (intellect) the Buddhi⁴; of the Chitta (mind-stuff), the Chitta⁵; and the Knowers⁶ of Dharma (righteousness) and Adharma (unrighteousness) call It the one⁷ or the other.*

("Hindi¹⁷³ passage omitted here")

26. *Some¹ say that the Reality consists of twenty-five categories, others² twenty-six, while there are others³ who conceive It as consisting of thirty-one categories and lastly people are not wanting who think such categories to be infinite.*

("Hindi passage omitted here")

¹ *Knowers, etc.* – Such as the astrologers

² *Time* – This theory is also fallacious as time is divided into the various parts as moment, minute, hour, etc. Time is also an object of the perceiving mind. scientists

³ *Worlds* – This is also an illusory conception.

¹ *Cognizers, etc.* – *i.e.*, a sect of the materialists. }

² *Mind* – This theory is not also tenable as mind is also an object, an instrument of the perceiving ego.

³ *Of, etc.* – They are a class of Buddhists.

⁴ *Buddhi* – This is also a wrong view of the Reality, as the functionings of *Buddhi* disappear at the time of deep sleep. Further *Buddhi* is also an object cognized by the perceiver.

⁵ *Chitta* – *Chitta* is an aspect of mind which has no particular external form. It cannot be *Ātman* for the reasons given regarding mind.

⁶ *Knowers, etc.* – *i.e.*, the *Mīmāṃsakas*.

⁷ *The one, etc.* – None of these can be the Ultimate Reality because they can be refuted. They vary with different conditions of time and country.

¹⁷³ 130

CHAPTER II ILLUSION

¹ *Some* – *i.e.*, the *Sāṃkhyas* according to whom the Reality consists of twenty-five categories, *viz.*, *Prakṛiti*, *Mahat*, *Ahankāra*, five *Tanmātras* (subtle elements), five organs of perception, five organs of action, five objects, mind and the *Purusha*.

² *Others* – *i.e.*, the followers of Patanjali who add *Īśvara* to the categories of the *Sāṃkhyas*.

³ *Others* – *i.e.*, the *Pāsupatas* who add to the categories of *Sāṃkhyas* six more, *viz.*, *Rāga*, *Avidyā*, *Kāla*, *Kalā*, *Māyā* and *Niyati*.

The mutual contradictions among these different schools prove the fallacious character of their theories. The difference of opinion is due to the ignorance of the nature of Reality.

27. Those¹ who know only to please others call It (Reality) such² pleasure; those³ who are cognizant of the Āsramas¹⁷⁴ call It the Āsramas; the grammarians call It the male, female or the neuter, and others know It as the Para⁴ and Aparā.

("Hindi passage omitted here")

28. The Knowers¹ of creation call It creation; the Knowers of dissolution describe It as dissolution and the believers in subsistence believe It to be subsistence. Really speaking, all² these ideas are always imagined³ in Ātman.¹⁷⁵

ŚANKARA'S COMMENTARY.

20–28. *Prāna* means *Prājña* (the *Jiva* associated with deep sleep) and *Bijātmā* (the causal self). All the entities from *Prāna* to the *Sthiti* (subsistence) are only¹⁷⁶ various effects of *Prāna*. These and other popular ideas of their kind, imagined by all being, are like the imaginations of the snake, etc., in the rope, etc. These are through ignorance¹⁷⁷ imagined in *Ātman* which is free¹ from all these distinctions. These fancies are due to

¹ *Those, etc.* – i.e., a sect of the atheists.

² *Such, etc.* – This is also a delusion as it is impossible to please everybody on account of the different tastes of the people.

³ *Those, etc.* – i.e., men like Daksha, etc.

¹⁷⁴ 131

CHAPTER II ILLUSION

⁴ *Para, etc.* – i.e., the Brahman who is regarded as high and low. An entity, subject to division of any sort, can never be the Supreme Reality.

¹ *Knowers, etc.* – i.e., the *Paurānikas* (the believers in Mythology) who believe in the reality of creation, preservation and destruction.

² *All these* – i.e., those enumerated above and which may be enumerated by others in future.

³ *Imagined* – So long as men are given to imagining, they have recourse to all such imaginations regarding *Ātman*. But *Ātman*, from its own standpoint, does not imagine anything. It is because all these ideas, described above, are mere imaginations, that they cannot be the Reality.

¹⁷⁵ The original editor underlined by hand

¹⁷⁶ 132

CHAPTER II ILLUSION

¹⁷⁷ The original editor deleted "(falsely)" by hand

¹ *Free from, etc.* – *Ātman* is free from all these imaginations. It is because of the ignorance of the real nature of the *Ātman* that it is thought to be the substratum of all imaginations.

the lack of determination of the real nature of the Self. This is the purport of these *ślokas*. No attempt is made to explain the meaning of each word in the texts beginning with *Prāna*, etc., on account of the futility of such effort⁺ and also on account of the clearness of the meaning of the terms.

("Hindi passage omitted here")

29. *He (the inquirer) cognizes only that idea that is presented to him (by the teacher). It (Ātman) assumes the form (of what is cognized) and thus protects (the inquirer)⁼ Possessed by that (idea) he realises it (as the sole essence).*

ŚANKARA'S COMMENTARY.

What more is to be gained (by this kind of endless discussion)? Whatever idea or interpretation of such things as *prāna*,¹ etc., narrated above or omitted, is shown to the inquirer by the teacher or other trustworthy person, he realises² that as the sole essence (*Ātman*),¹⁷⁸ *i.e.*, he understands that as "I am that or that is mine". Such conception about *Ātman* as is revealed to the inquirer, appears to him as the sole essence and protects him, *i.e.*, keeps him away from all other ideas (because it appears to him as the highest ideal). On³ account of his devotion (attachment) to that ideal, he realises it as the sole essence, *i.e.*, attains his identity with it.

No useful purpose can be served by the discussion of imaginations which are unreal and illusory,*

* because their number can be limitless

+ because all these Gods are only imagined The original editor inserted footnote by hand

= makes him happy

The original editor inserted footnote by hand

¹ *Prāna*— All interpretations of *Ātman* must be included in the *Prāna* as *Prāna* or the causal Self, is the highest manifestation of *Ātman* in the relative plane.

² *Realists, etc.*— It is because such inquirer, for want of proper discrimination, accepts the words of the teacher as the highest truth. The teacher also, realising the limited intellectual capacity of the student, teaches him, at first, only a partial view of truth,+

+ or the teacher may be as great a fool as the learner and know no better

178 133

CHAPTER II

ILLUSION

³ *On account, etc.*— Such student* only gets a partial view of Reality though he takes it as the sole essence. He shuts his eyes to other views. On account of his single-minded devotion to that ideal he becomes intolerant of other view-points. But he who takes a particular fancy to be the Reality and condemns other fancies as untrue, has not realised the Highest Truth. For, to a knower of Reality, all imaginations are identical with *Brahman* and hence have the same value. This is the mistake generally committed by the mystics who, for want of the faculty of rational discrimination, do not see any truth in the views of others.

* and such a teacher

("Hindi passage omitted here")

30. This Ātman, though non-separate from all these, appears as it were separate. One who knows this truly imagines (interprets) (the meaning of the Vedas) without hesitation.

ŚANKARA'S¹⁷⁹ COMMENTARY.

Though this Ātman is verily non-separate¹ from these, the *Prāna*, etc.,—like the rope from such imaginary ideas as the snake, etc.,—it appears as separate to the ignorant persons. But to the Knower (of truth), the *Prāna*, etc., do not exist apart from Ātman, just as the snake, etc., falsely imagined in the rope, do not exist apart from the rope. For, the Śruti also says, "All that exists is verily Ātman." One who thus knows truly, that is, from scriptures as well as by reasoning² that *Prāna*, etc., falsely imagined in Ātman, do not exist separately from Ātman (as in the illustration) of the (illusory) snake and the rope, and further knows that Ātman is ever pure³ and free from all imaginations,—construes,⁴ without hesitation, the text of the Vedas according to its division.⁵ That is to say, he knows that the meaning of this passage is this and of that passage is that. None but the Knower of Ātman is able to know truly the (meaning of the) Vedas. "None but the Knower of Ātman is able to derive any benefit from his actions," says Manu. For¹⁸⁰ him, Ātman never undergoes any modifications. He knows "All that exists is verily Ātman".

179 134

CHAPTER II
ILLUSION

¹ *Non-separate*—It is because that which is superimposed cannot exist apart from the substratum. Therefore the *Prāna*, etc., which are superimposed upon Ātman, are non-separate from Ātman from the standpoint of Reality.

² *Reasoning*—That is, the reasoning described in the fourth text of this chapter. That which is accepted on the authority of the Śruti can also be demonstrated by reasoning.

³ *Ever pure, etc.*—Even while Ātman is imagined by the ignorant as *Prāna*, etc., it is known to the *Jñāni* (Knower of Truth) as pure and simple and free from all imaginations. For, to the *Jñāni* such imaginations as *Prāna*, etc., are identical with Ātman.

⁴ *Construes*—A Knower of Reality does not follow any fixed rule for the interpretation of the Vedas.* "A Knower of Reality is never a slave to the Vedas.* But whatever interpretation he gives of the Vedas is their real meaning" (Ānandagiri).

* he grades the interpretation to suit the mental capacity of his hearers

⁵ *Division*—That is to say, the Knowledge-portion of the Vedas, viz., the Upanishad directly leads to the non-dual *Brahman* whereas the Work-portion (i.e., the *Karmakānda*) explains Reality from the causal or relative standpoint and thus indirectly indicates it.

180 135

CHAPTER II
ILLUSION

("Hindi passage omitted here")

31. *As are dreams and illusion or a castle in the air seen in the sky, so is the universe viewed by the wise in the Vedānta.*

ŚANKARA'S COMMENTARY.

The unreality of duality has been demonstrated by reason.¹ The same also can be deduced from the evidence² of Vedānta scriptures.⁼ Therefore it is stated:—Dream and illusion, though unreal in their true nature, are admitted in spite of their unreality as real by the ignorant. As an imaginary city in the sky, filled with shops full of vendable articles, houses, palaces and villages frequented by men and women, though appearing real to us, is seen to vanish suddenly as dream and illusion, which are known to be unreal (though they appear to be real),—so also is perceived this entire duality of the universe to be unreal. Where is this taught? This is thus taught in the Vedānta scriptures. "There is no multiplicity here." "Indra (assumed¹⁸¹ diverse forms) through the powers of *Māyā*." "In the beginning all this existed as Brahman." "Fear rises verily from duality." "That duality does never exist." "When all this has become *Ātman* then who can see whom and by what?" In these and other passages, the wise men, *i.e.*, those who see the real nature of things, declare (the unreal nature of the universe). The *Smṛiti* of Vyāsa also supports this view in these words:—"This duality of the universe, perceived by the wise like a hole seen in darkness in the ground, is unstable like the bubbles that appear in rain-water, always undergoing destruction, ever devoid of bliss, and ceasing to exist, after dissolution."

("Hindi passage omitted here")

32. *There is no dissolution⁺ no creation¹⁸² none in bondage, none aspiring for wisdom, no seeker of liberation and none liberated.⁼ This is the absolute truth.*

ŚANKARA'S COMMENTARY.

¹ *Reason*—It has been demonstrated at the beginning of this chapter that the illusion of duality can be established by reason independent of Scriptures.

² *Evidence, etc.*—If a conclusion arrived at by reasoning and corroborated by actual experience is further supported by the words of the teacher and the Scriptures, then alone it can be accepted as true.

⁼ UpanishadsThe original editor inserted footnote by hand

¹⁸¹ 136

CHAPTER II
ILLUSION

⁺ of the worldThe original editor inserted footnote by hand

¹⁸² The original editor strike out and replaced "birth" to "creation" by hand

⁼ things are as they areThe original editor inserted footnote by hand

This verse sums up the meaning of the chapter. When duality is perceived to be illusory and *Ātman* alone¹⁸³ is known as the sole Reality, then it is clearly established that all our experiences, ordinary or religious (Vedic), verily pertain to the domain of ignorance. Then one perceives that there is no dissolution, *i.e.*, destruction (from the standpoint of Reality); no birth or creation, *i.e.*, coming into existence; no one in bondage, *i.e.*, no worldly being; no pupilage, *i.e.*, no one adopting means for the attainment of liberation; no seeker after liberation, and no one free from bondage (as such bondage does not exist). The ultimate Truth is that the state of bondage, etc., cannot exist in the absence of creation and destruction. How can it be said that there is neither creation nor destruction? It is thus replied:—There is no duality (at any time). The absence of duality is indicated by such scriptural passages as, “When duality *appears* to exist.....” “One who *appears* to see multiplicity.....” “All this is verily *Ātman*.” “*Ātman* is one and without a second.” “All that exists is verily the *Ātman*”, etc. Birth¹ or death can be predicated only of that which exists and never of what does not exist, such as the horns of a hare, etc. That² which is non-dual (*Advaita*) can never be said to be born or destroyed. That it should be non-dual and at the same time subject to birth and death, is a contradiction in terms. It³ has already been said that our dual experience characterised by (the activities of) *Prāna*, etc., is a mere illusion having *Ātman* for its substratum, like the snake imagined in the rope which is its substratum. The imagination characterised by the¹⁸⁴ appearance of the snake in the rope cannot be produced from nor dissolved in the rope⁴ (*i.e.*, in any external object), nor is produced

183 137

CHAPTER II
ILLUSION

¹ *Birth, etc.*—Birth or death can be imagined only in the realm of duality. But from the standpoint of the Ultimate Reality, duality is as non-existent as the horns of a hare. Therefore, from the standpoint of Reality birth or death is inconceivable. Neither birth nor death can be imagined of the horns of a hare or the son of a barren women.

² *That, etc.*—Birth or death implying an antecedent or subsequent non-existence cannot be conceived of non-dual *Ātman* which is ever-existent. Further, birth or death implying a change cannot be brought about expect by another factor which brings about the change. This position is also untenable from the non-dual standpoint. Non-duality being the only Reality, there is neither birth nor death from the standpoint of Truth.

³ *It, etc.*—The dealings in the plane of duality, which is illusory, are also illusory from the standpoint of Truth. Therefore all dealings in the dual realm are mere imaginations like our dealings with the false snake perceived in the rope.

184 138

CHAPTER II
ILLUSION

⁴ *The rope, etc.*—This is the refutation of the realistic contention. The illusion of the mind which perceives the snake in the rope does not exist in the rope. For, such illusion, in that case, would have been experienced by all. When an explanation is sought, from the empirical

from the imaginary snake or dissolved in the mind,⁵ nor even in both⁶ (*i.e.*, the rope and the mind). Thus⁷ duality being non-different from mental (subjective) imagination (cannot have a beginning or an end). For,⁸ duality is not perceived when one's mental activities are controlled or in deep sleep. Therefore⁹ it is established that duality is a mere illusion of the mind. Hence it is well said that the ultimate Reality is the absence of destruction, etc., on account of the non-existence of duality (which exists only in the imagination of the mind).¹⁸⁵

(Objection)—If this be the case, the object of the teachings should be directed to prove the negation of duality and not to establish as a positive fact non-duality, inasmuch as there is a contradiction (in employing the same means for the refutation of one and the establishment of another). If this were admitted, then the conclusion will tend to become Nihilistic¹⁰ in the absence of evidence for the existence of non-duality as Reality; for, duality has already been said to be non-existent.

standpoint, of the illusion of the snake in the rope, it is, no doubt, said that the rope produces the illusion. This explanation may be justified when such illusion is admitted to be a fact. But from the standpoint of Ultimate Reality, illusion does not exist; hence no birth and disappearance can be predicated of anything non-existent or illusory.

⁵ *Mind*—This is the refutation of the contention of the idealists. The illusion of the snake in the rope cannot be produced by the mind. It is because our subjective idea does not correspond to the objects perceived outside. Therefore the illusion cannot be produced by the mind alone. Further, from the standpoint of Truth, mind, associated with its dual functionings (*sankalpa* and *vikalpa* does not exist—as a reality. Being non-existent in itself it cannot produce anything new.

⁶ *Both*—This may be taken as the refutation of the Kantian view that our perceptions in the dual world are caused both by mind and external objects (things-in-themselves). The contention of Kant cannot also be correct, as thing-in-itself being unknown and unknowable and also being beyond the law of causation cannot produce anything. Again, from the non-dual standpoint both mind and the external object (the thing-in-itself) are known to be non-existent. Hence they cannot produce anything new.

⁷ *Thus, etc.*—Dual perception is totally non-different from the subjective imagination which produces the illusion of the snake in the rope. All illusory objects being non-existent from the standpoint of Truth, the duality is also non-existent from the standpoint of the Ultimate Reality.

⁸ *For, etc.*—It is because in the state of trance or deep sleep, the mind, with its double aspects (of imagination and volition), does not exist. Therefore no duality can be perceived in the absence of the mind.

⁹ *Therefore*—It is because duality is perceived when mind functions and it is not perceived when mind does not function. Therefore the existence of duality depends entirely upon the imagination of the perceiving subject.

¹⁸⁵ The original editor inserted “(which exists only in the imagination of the mind).” By hand

¹⁰ *Nihilistic*—This is the contention of the Buddhistic Nihilists who, after the negation of duality, find void as the only Reality.

(Reply)—This contention is not consistent with reason. Why¹¹ do you revive a point already established, *viz.*, that it is unreasonable to conceive of such illusions as the snake in the rope, etc., without a substratum?

(Objection)—This analogy is not relevant as even the¹⁸⁶ rope, which is the substratum of the imaginary snake, is also an imaginary entity.

(Reply)—It is not so. For,¹² upon the disappearance of the imagination, the unimagined substratum can be reasonably said to exist on account of its unimagined character.

(Objection)—It may be contended that like the imagination of the snake in the rope, it (the unimaginary substratum) is also unreal.

(Reply)—It cannot be so. For, it (Brahman) is ever unimagined, because it is like the rope that is never the object of our imagination and is real even before the knowledge of the unreality of the snake. Further,¹³ the existence of the subject of imagination must be admitted to be antecedent to the imagination. Therefore it is unreasonable to say that such subject is non-existent.

¹¹ *Why, etc.*—An illusion cannot exist without a substratum. The imagination or idea of the snake cannot be perceived without the substratum of rope. Therefore the illusion of duality must have the non-dual *Ātman* as its substratum.

¹⁸⁶ 139

CHAPTER II ILLUSION

In this page, few of the symbol not found in Book Antiqua font so we have inserted from Tahoma font.

¹² *For, etc.*—Unless one is aware of an unimagined factor (*Ātman*), one cannot know that this or any object is unreal. We know of a thing as unreal only as distinguished from something which is real. The illustration of the snake and the rope is given only for the purpose of an analogy. No exact analogy can be given with regard to non-duality as it is one without a second. Analogy always belongs to the realm of duality.

¹³ *Further*—Without a perceiver, there cannot be any imagination. Even if our analysis of the dualistic world leads to the experience of the void or total negation, as the Buddhists contend, there must be an *experiencer* of this negation. If the mind always seeks the cause of the substratum, the discussion ends in a *regressus*. But even then there is a perceiver of that *regressus* without which the argument of "*regressus ad infinitum*" is not possible. Therefore no one can escape the "Perceiver" (*Drg*) which is the *Ātman*.

(Objection)—How¹⁴ can the scripture, if it cannot make us understand the true nature of the Self (which is non-duality), free our mind from the idea of duality?

(Reply)—There¹⁵ is no difficulty. Duality is superimposed upon *Ātman* through ignorance, like the snake, etc., upon the rope. How is it so? I am happy, I am miserable, ignorant, born, dead, worn out, endowed with body, I see, I am manifested and unmanifested, the agent, the enjoyer, related and unrelated, decayed and old, this is mine,—these and such other ideas are superimposed upon *Ātman*. The notion¹⁶ of *Ātman* (Self) persists in all these, because no such idea can ever be conceived of without the notion of *Ātman*. It¹⁷ is like the notion of the rope which persists in (all superimposed ideas, such as) the snake, the water-line, etc. Such being the case, the scripture has no function with¹⁷ regard to the *Ātman* which, being of the nature of the substantive, is ever self-evident. The function of scripture is to accomplish that which is not accomplished yet. It does not serve the purpose of evidence if it is to establish what has been already established. The *Ātman* does not realise its own natural condition on account of such obstacles as the notion of happiness, etc., superimposed by ignorance; and the true nature is realised only when one knows it as such. It¹⁸ is therefore the scripture, whose purpose is to remove the idea of happiness, etc., (associated with *Ātman*) that produces the consciousness of the not-happy (*i.e.*, attributeless) nature of *Ātman* by such statements as “Not this” “Not this”, “(It is) not gross”, etc. Like the persistence of *Ātman* (in all states of consciousness) the not-happy (attributeless) characteristic of *Ātman* does not inhere in all ideas such as of being happy and the like. If it were so, then one would not have such specific experience as that of being happy, etc., superimposed upon *Ātman*, in the same manner as coldness cannot be associated with fire whose specific characteristic is that of heat. It is, therefore, that such specific characteristics as that of being happy, etc., are imagined in *Ātman* which is,

¹⁴ *How, etc.*—Scriptures can be applied only to the sphere of duality. In the absence of duality, scriptures cannot function. In your opinion duality consisting of birth, death, etc., does not exist. Therefore scripture is also an illusion. Hence scripture cannot remove duality and lead to the realisation of non-duality or *Ātman*.

¹⁵ *There, etc.*—From the standpoint of ignorance, duality certainly exists as we see it. Therefore scripture is a means to remove this illusion of duality.

¹⁶ *Notion*—*Ātman* persists through all our experiences; for at no time is it possible to conceive that *Ātman*, in the form of the perceiver (*Drg*) is absent or non-existent.

¹⁸⁷ 140

CHAPTER II ILLUSION

¹⁷ *With regard, etc.*—The scripture cannot directly describe the real nature of *Ātman*. It serves no purpose for the knower of the Ultimate Reality.

¹⁸ *It is, etc.*—The scripture serves a negative purpose, *i.e.*, it helps us to remove all adjectives, which are the ideations (*vr̥ittis*) of our mind, generally associated with *Ātman*. By associating *Ātman* with any adjective such as the condition of being happy, etc., we make it an object (*vishaya*). But *Ātman* is the eternal subject—or witness of all ideas.

undoubtedly, without any attributes. The scriptural teachings which speak of *Ātman* as being not-happy, etc., are meant for the purpose of removing the notion that *Ātman* is associated with such specific attributes¹⁸⁸ as happiness, etc. There is the following aphoristic statement by the knowers of the *Āgama*. “The validity of scripture is established by its negating all positive characteristics of *Ātman* (which otherwise cannot be indicated by scriptures).”

(“Hindi¹⁸⁹ passage omitted here”)

33. *This (the Ātman) is imagined both as unreal objects that are perceived and as the non-duality. The objects (Bhāvas) are imagined in the non-duality itself. Therefore, non-duality (alone) is the (highest) bliss.*

ŚANKARA’S¹⁹⁰ COMMENTARY.

The reason for the interpretation of the previous verse is thus stated: Just as in a rope, an unreal snake, streak of water or the like are imagined, which are non-separate (non-dual) from the existing rope, — the same (rope) being spoken of as this snake, this streak of water, this stick or the like, — even so this *Ātman* is imagined to be the innumerable objects such as *Prāna*, etc., which are unreal¹ and perceived only through ignorance, but not from the standpoint of the ultimate Reality. For,² unless the mind is active nobody is ever able to perceive any object. But no action is possible for *Ātman*. Therefore the objects that are perceived to exist by the active mind can never be imagined to have existence from the standpoint of ultimate Reality. It is therefore this (non-dual) *Ātman* that alone is imagined as such illusory objects as *Prāna*, etc., which are

¹⁸⁸ 141

CHAPTER II
ILLUSION

¹⁸⁹ 143

CHAPTER II
ILLUSION

¹⁹⁰ 144

CHAPTER II
ILLUSION

¹ *Unrca!* — It is because the one characteristic of these perceived forms of objects is their changeability.

² *For, etc.* — From the standpoint of Ultimate Reality, there is no *kalpanā*, or ideation which makes the *Bhāvas* or the perceived objects appear as separate from *Brahman*. From that standpoint *Brahman* is always, everything and everywhere. This ideation is due to ignorance — an explanation which is given from the empirical standpoint. =

= the belief that ideas are different from the Mind (or atman) is false, and due to our want of enquiry, i.e. ignorance

perceived, as well as the³ non-dual and ultimately real *Ātman* (which is the substratum of illusory ideas, such as *Prāna*, etc.) in the same manner as the rope is imagined as the substratum of the illusion of the snake. Though⁴ always one and unique (*i.e.*, of the nature of the *Ātman*), the *Prāna*, etc., the entities that are perceived, are imagined (from the standpoint of ignorance) as having the non-dual and ultimately real *Ātman* as their substratum. For, no illusion is ever perceived without a substratum. As “non-duality” is the substratum of all illusions (from the standpoint of ignorance) and also as it is, in its *real* nature, ever unchangeable, non-duality alone is (the highest) bliss even⁵ in the state of imagination, *i.e.*,¹⁹¹ the empirical experiences. Imaginations alone (which make *Prāna*, etc., appear as separate from *Ātman*) are the cause of misery.⁶ These imaginations cause fear, etc., like the imaginations of the snake, etc., in the rope. Non-duality⁷ is free from fear and therefore it is the (highest) bliss.

³ *The non-dual, etc.*—This non-dual characteristic of the *Ātman* is a correlative of the duality. Hence this conception of non-duality is not free from ignorance. In contrast to the changeable *Bhāras*, the *Ātman* is imagined as the non-dual entity. Hence they stand and fall together. *Ātman* is beyond all *Kalpanā* or mental activity. Therefore *Ātman*, from the highest standpoint, cannot be called one, if the term is used as a contrast to the many or duality. Non-duality is a negation of all thought of duality.

⁴ *Though, etc.*—Such entities as *Prāna*, etc., which are perceived to exist, are from the highest standpoint identical with *Ātman*. They are like the dream objects which are found, on waking up, to be identical with the mind. Only from the waking standpoint we know them as illusion; and seeking a cause for such illusion we point out *Ātman* as its substratum.

⁵ *Even, etc.*—Even when the mind moves in the empirical plane,* it attains peace when it discovers the unity underlying the variety. Non-duality alone dispels our doubt and makes us happy.

* even in the state of imagination

¹⁹¹ 145

CHAPTER II ILLUSION

⁶ *Misery, etc.*—*Kalpanā* or imagination that makes the *Bhāvas*, or the objects that are perceived, appear as separate from Brahman is the source of fear, as in that state of duality people are assailed with all kinds of fear arising from hatred, jealousy, animosity, etc. When the snake, imagined in the rope, is perceived to be other than the rope, it gives rise to all kinds of fear, etc.

⁷ *Non-duality, etc.*—When the student attains to the state of non-duality, he enjoys real bliss,+ as in that state there exists nothing of which he can be afraid.

This verse explains the previous one as well as the two other verses in the *Āgama Prakarana* (17 and 18). The highest teaching of Vedānta is that Brahman alone is real. What are known as *Bhāvas* or multiple phenomena are nothing but Brahman. As the snake is identical with the rope from the standpoint of knowledge, or as the dream objects are nothing but Brahman. When one perceives the snake as other than the rope, he is afraid. This fear is based upon ignorance. Similarly, when one finds the objects as separate from *Ātman* he feels attached to or disgusted with them and suffers accordingly. But the highest bliss is realised when one finds everything as Brahman. From the standpoint of Truth, *Prapancha* or the phenomenal world or even the idea of perceiving them does not exist as separate from Brahman. Therefore

("Hindi¹⁹² passage omitted here")

34. *This manifold does not exist as identical with Ātman nor does it ever stand independent by itself. It is neither separate from Brahman nor is it non-separate. This is the statement of the wise.*

ŚANKARA'S COMMENTARY.

Why is non-duality called the highest bliss? One suffers from misery when one finds differences in the form¹⁹³ of multiplicity, *i.e.*, when one finds an object separate from another. For,¹ when this manifold of the universe with the entire relative phenomena consisting of *Prāna*, etc., imagined in the non-dual *Ātman*, the ultimate Reality, is realised to be identical with the *Ātman*, the Supreme Reality, then alone multiplicity ceases to exist, *i.e.*, *Prāna*, etc., do not appear to be separate from *Ātman*. It² is just like the snake that is imagined (to be separate from the rope) but that does no longer remain as such when its true nature is known with the help of a light to be nothing but the rope. This manifold (*Idam*) does never really exist as it appears to be, that is to say, in the forms of *Prāna*, etc., because³ it is imaginary just like the snake seen in the place of the rope. Therefore different objects, such as *Prāna*, etc., do not exist as

no birth or death can be predicated of what exists in that state. Therefore to a man of the highest wisdom there is nothing to be added to or subtracted from. All is non-dual *Ātman*. Even what appears as unreal *Bhāvas* to the ignorant is non-dual *Ātman* to the *Jnāni*.

+ not emotional bliss but the absence of all fear

¹⁹² 146

CHAPTER II
ILLUSION

¹⁹³ 147

CHAPTER II
ILLUSION

¹ *For, etc.*—Does this insentient manifold exist as one with *Ātman*? This position is untenable as the sentient *Ātman* and insentient universe can never be identical. For, if it be admitted that the manifold is identical with *Ātman* which is one and without a second, then multiplicity cannot exist.

² *It is, etc.*—The snake which in the darkness appeared to be separate from the rope is known, with the help of a light, to be the same as the rope. The light does not show that the rope is identical with the snake, as such identity is an impossibility, but it reveals that the only thing that exists is the rope and even that which appeared as the snake in the dark was nothing but the rope. Similarly, *Ātman* alone exists and the phenomenon, which appears through ignorance to be separate from *Ātman*, is also *Ātman* from the standpoint of truth.

³ *Because*—It is because the idea of separation is unreal. A pot is known only in relation to a cloth or another object. One cannot totally exclude another. Therefore the objects, that are perceived to exist, are not mutually independent from the standpoint of truth. It is the non-dual *Ātman* alone which appears as multiple objects, having relations through ignorance.

separate from one other as a buffalo appears to be separate from a horse. The idea of separation being unreal, there is nothing which exists as separate from an object of the same nature or from other objects (of different nature). The Brāhmanas, *i.e.*, the Knowers of Self, know this⁴ to be the essence of the ultimate Reality. Therefore the implication of the verse is that non-duality alone, on account of the absence of any cause that may bring about misery, is verily the (highest) bliss.

(“Hindi¹⁹⁴ passage omitted here”)

35. *By the wise, who are free from attachment fear and anger and who are well versed in the meaning* of the Vedas, this (Ātman) has been verily realised as totally devoid of all imaginations (such as those of Prāna, etc.), free from the illusion of the manifold, and non-dual.*

ŚANKARA’S COMMENTARY.

The perfect knowledge as described above, is thus extolled.¹ The sages who are always² free from all blemishes such as attachment, fear, spite, anger, etc., who are given to contemplation, who can discriminate between the real and the unreal and who can grasp the essence of the meaning of the Vedas, *i.e.*, who are well versed in the Vedānta (*i.e.*, the Upanishads) do³ realise the real nature of this *Ātman* which is free from all¹⁹⁵ imaginations and also free from the illusion of the manifold. This *Ātman* is the total negation of the phenomena of duality and therefore it is non-dual. The intention of the *Śruti* passage is this: The Supreme Self can be realised only by the Sannyāsins (men of renunciation) who are free from all blemishes and who are enlightened regarding the essence of the Upanishads and never by others, *i.e.*, those

⁴ *This – i.e.*, duality or multiplicity does never exist, as it cannot be demonstrated.

¹⁹⁴ 148

CHAPTER II ILLUSION

* the truth of the Vedas, not their chanting. The original editor inserted footnote by hand

¹ *Extolled* – The purpose of this praise is to attract the attention of the pupils towards the realisation of Truth.

² *Always* – The student fails to realise Truth if his mind is, at any moment, clouded by passion, etc. It is therefore laid in the Vedānta that a student, before aspiring to realise Truth, must be well-established in the fourfold pre-requisites, such as, discrimination between the real and the unreal, renunciation of the unreal, total self-control and a strong hankering after realisation.

³ *Do realise* – This is to refer to the contention of the agnostics that Reality is ever unknown and unknowable. Reality can certainly be known and realised if the student has got the necessary equipments for such realisation.

¹⁹⁵ 149

CHAPTER II ILLUSION

vain logicians whose mind is clouded by passion, etc., and who find truth only⁴ in their own creeds and opinions.

("Hindi passage omitted here")

36. *Therefore knowing the Ātman to be such, = fix* your attention on non-duality. Having realised non-duality behave in the world like an insensible object.*⁺

ŚANKARA'S¹⁹⁶ COMMENTARY.

As non-duality, on account of its being the negation of all evils, is bliss and fearlessness, therefore knowing it to be such, direct your mind to the realisation of the non-dual *Ātman*. In other words, concentrate your thought on¹⁹⁷ the realisation of non-duality alone. Having known this non-dual Brahman which is free from hunger, etc., unborn and directly perceptible as the Self and which transcends all codes¹ of human conduct, *i.e.*, by realising¹⁹⁸ the consciousness that 'I am the Supreme Brahman,' behave with others as one not knowing the truth; that is to say, let² not others know what you are and what you have become.*

("Hindi passage omitted here")

⁴ *Only, etc.*—It is only the ignorant person who says that his vision of Reality is alone true. But to a wise man everything is Brahman. To him anything that may be called non-Brahman is ever non-existent.

= continually reflect, think, enquire until your advaitic knowledge becomes your whole outlook. The original editor inserted footnote by hand

* *KNOWING atman is mastering its theory; FIXING knowledge is repeated practice of it until realization is completed. The original editor inserted footnote by hand

+ this does not mean becoming a motionless ascetic. The original editor inserted footnote by hand

¹⁹⁶ 150

CHAPTER II
ILLUSION

¹⁹⁷ The original editor strike out and replaced "memory to" to "thought on" by hand

¹ *Codes, etc.*—It is because the non-dual Brahman is beyond the duality of the manifested manifold.

¹⁹⁸ The original editor strike out and replaced "attaining to" to "realising" by hand

² *Let not, etc.*—A wise man does not broadcast his realisation before the world. The sentence may mean that a wise man, on account of his being established in the non-dual *Ātman*, does not see others as separate from him; and therefore he does not assume deliberately the rôle of a Knower (*Jnāni*).

* because he has not the idea of ego & has risen above thinking of himself as body. The original editor inserted footnote by hand

37. The man of self-restraint (i.e. *gnoni*)¹⁹⁹ should be above all praise, salutation⁼ and all rites prescribed by the Śmṛiti in connection with the departed ancestors. He should have this body and the Ātman as his support and depend upon chances,⁺ i.e., he should be satisfied with those things for his physical wants, that chance brings to him.

ŚANKARA'S²⁰⁰ COMMENTARY.

What should be his code of conduct in the world? It is thus stated:—He¹ should give up all such formalities as praise, salutation, etc., and be free² from all desires for external objects. In other words, he should take up the life of a *Paramahansa Sannyāsin*.³ The Śruti also supports this view in such passages as, “Knowing this Ātman.....”, etc. This is further approved in such Śmṛiti passages as, “With their consciousness in That (Brahman), their self being That, intent on That, with That for their Supreme Goal.....” (*Gītā*), etc. The word “*chalam*” in the text signifying “changing” indicates the “body” because it changes every moment. The word “*Achalam*” signifying “unchanging” indicates the “Knowledge of Self”. He⁴ has the (changing) body for his support when he, for the purpose of such activities as eating, etc., forgets the Knowledge of the Self, the (real) support of Ātman, unchanging like the *Ākāśa* (ether) and relates himself to the

¹⁹⁹ The original editor inserted “(i.e. *gnoni*)” by hand

⁼ he should not expect prostration. The original editor inserted footnote by hand

⁺ he should not be dissatisfied with what comes but rest content. The original editor inserted footnote by hand

²⁰⁰ 151

CHAPTER II
ILLUSION

¹ *He, etc.*—No wise man recites any hymns to the deities or bows down before them, as he has no desires which can be fulfilled by their favour or grace. The word *swadhā* in the text refers to the ceremonies known as *Srāddha*, a rite performed for the propitiation of the departed ancestors. Every offering in that ceremony is accompanied by the utterance of that word. The sense is that the wise man renounces even those actions connected with the dead which are obligatory for all people of the three higher castes. This is because the man of Knowledge, on account of his realisation of the non-dual Ātman, does not find anything separate or different from his own self.

² *Free, etc.*—It is because such objects do not exist* for a Knower of Truth.

* as different from atman.

³ *Paramahansa Sannyāsin*—Such a man belongs to the highest order of monks and moves in the world like other men; only he does not declare that he is a Knower of the Highest Reality.

⁴ *He, etc.*—A wise man, in this text, is said to have both body and self for his abode. The meaning is this: When he meditates on the Ātman, detaching his mind from all external desires, then he is said to have Ātman for his support and abode. But when his mind comes down to the consciousness of the body on account of his feeling the necessity of food, etc., he is said to have his body for his support and abode.

ego.²⁰¹ Such⁵ a wise man never takes shelter⁺ under external objects. He entirely depends upon circumstances, that is to say, he maintains his body with food or strips of cloth, etc., as are brought to him by⁶ mere chance.*

²⁰¹ The original editor changed “egoism.” To “the ego.” By hand

⁵ *Such, etc.* — The wise man, described in this verse, never takes the “external objects as real” like the ignorant persons. But the word “*yali*” (man of self-control) does not signify the man of the highest realisation, as it is not at all possible for the latter to *forget* at any time the Knowledge of Brahman. This verse refers to the student aspiring after the highest Knowledge. The next verse indicates the condition of a *Jnāni*.

⁺ never relies on them. The original editor inserted footnote by hand

⁶ *By mere, etc.* — That is to say, such a man is content with the food or clothing he gets.

* This does not mean he need starve, but do only enough to support body & not make getting of material things main ambition However to help others he may seek unlimited cash The original editor inserted footnote by hand

("Hindi²⁰² passage omitted here")

38. *Having known the truth regarding what exists internally (i.e., within the body) as well as the truth regarding what exists externally (i.e., the earth, etc.) he becomes one with Reality, derives his pleasure^o from It and never deviates from the Real.⁼*

ŚANKARA'S COMMENTARY.

The truth¹ regarding external objects such as the earth, etc., and the truth regarding internal objects, characterised²⁰³ by body, etc., is that these are as unreal as a snake seen in the rope, or objects seen in dream or magic. For, there are such Śruti passages as, "modification being only a name, arising from speech, etc." The Śruti further declares, "Ātman is both within and without, birthless, causeless, having no within or without, entire, all-pervading like the Ākāśa (ether), subtle, unchanging, without attributes and parts, and without action. That is True, That is Ātman and That thou art." Knowing it to be such from the point of view of Truth, he becomes one with Truth and derives his enjoyment² from Truth and not from any external³ object. But a person,⁴ ignorant of Truth, takes the mind to be the Self and believes the Ātman to be active like the mind, and becomes active. He thus thinks his self to be identified with the body, etc., and deviated from Ātman saying, "Oh, I am now fallen from the Knowledge of Self." When his mind is concentrated he sometimes thinks that he is happy and one with the Self. He declares, "Oh, I am now one with the essence of

202 152

CHAPTER II

ILLUSION

^o (satisfaction) The original editor inserted footnote "satisfaction" by hand

⁼ Never ceases for a moment from thinking of Brahman, from perceiving whole world as Brahman. Once established in this truth it is impossible for him to leave it. The original editor inserted footnote by hand

¹ *Truth, etc.* – Body, mind, etc., and the earth, the sun, etc., when looked upon as separate from the self, are as illusory as the snake seen in the rope, etc. But every unreal superimposition, from the standpoint of Truth, is identical with the substratum as dream objects are one with the mind and the snake is one with the rope.

203 153

CHAPTER II

ILLUSION

² *Enjoyment* – There being no existing entity other than Ātman, this thought makes a man happy.

³ *External objects* – It is because no objects external or separate from him exist.

⁴ *Some person, etc.* – This is the case with those yogis and mystics who wrongly think that Ātman can be realised only by withdrawing the mind from external objects and concentrating it on something within.

Truth.” But^{204,5} the knower of Self never makes any such statement, as *Ātman* is ever one and changeless and it is impossible for *Ātman* to deviate from its own nature. The⁶ consciousness that “I am Brahman” never leaves him. In other words, he never loses the consciousness regarding the essence of the Self. The *Śmṛiti* supports this view in such passages as “The wise man views equally a dog or an outcaste”. “He sees who sees the Supreme Lord remaining the same, in all beings.” (*Gītā*.)

Here²⁰⁵ ends the Gaudapāda *Kārikā* on Illusion and Śankara’s Commentary on the Chapter.

Aum²⁰⁶ **Salutation to Brahman.**

CHAPTER III.

ON ADVAITA.

(“Hindi passage omitted here”)

(“Hindi passage omitted here”)

1. *The Jiva betaking itself to devotion*⁼ (*upāsanā*) *thinks itself to be related to the Brahman that is supposed to have manifested Himself. He is said to be of limited*²⁰⁷ *intellect because he thinks that before creation all was of the nature of the unborn (Reality).*[¢]

²⁰⁴ The original editor added underlined by hand

⁵ *But, etc.*—It is because even when the mind is active and creating ideas, the man of realisation knows it to be *Ātman*. If one sees multiplicity, this multiplicity is nothing existent which can make the non-dual *Ātman* become dual. The *act* of becoming, creation or manifestation is an illusion. The rope never becomes the snake.

⁶ *The consciousness*—Even when a *Jnāni* eats or drinks or does any other act he only sees the non-dual Brahman. He never deviates from the real. His condition has thus been described in the *Gītā*: “Brahman is the offering, Brahman the oblation, by Brahman is the oblation poured into the fire of Brahman; Brahman verily shall be reached by him who always sees Brahman in action.” The state of a student has been described in the previous verse. A student, when urged by hunger and thirst, thinks himself as something different from Reality. A mystic or a *yogi* thinks that he can realise Truth only by withdrawing his mind from the external objects. But a man of the highest realisation, who knows that he is the Supreme Reality, never loses that consciousness and even in the midst of the world keeps intact the Knowledge of his identity with the non-dual Brahman.

²⁰⁵ 154

CHAPTER II
ILLUSION

²⁰⁶ 155

ŚANKARA'S COMMENTARY.

While determining the meaning of *Aum*, it has been stated in the form of a proposition that “*Ātman* is the negation of phenomena, blissful* and non-dual”. It has been further stated that “Duality does not exist when the Reality is known”. Further, in the chapter on illusion,+ duality has been established by the illustrations of dream, magic, castle-in-the-air, etc., and also by reasoning on the grounds of “*the capability of being seen*” and “*the being finite*”, etc. Now it is asked whether non-duality can be established only by scriptural evidence or whether it can be proved by reasoning as well. It is said in reply that it is possible to establish non-duality by reasoning¹ as well.²⁰⁸ How is it possible? This is shown in this chapter²⁰⁹ on *Advaita*. It has been demonstrated in the last chapter that the entire realm of[‡] including the object and the act of devotion is illusory,² and the attributeless, non-dual *Ātman* alone is the Reality. The word “*upāsanāsrita*” in the text, meaning the one³ betaking himself to devotion, signifies him who has recourse to devotional exercises as means to the attainment of liberation and who further thinks that he is the devotee and Brahman is his object of worship. This *Jiva* or the embodied being further thinks that through devotional

= whether religious worship or yogic meditation. The original editor inserted footnote by hand

²⁰⁷ The original editor strike out and replaced “narrow” to “limited” by hand

‡ Advaita has no reference to religion. The original editor inserted footnote by hand

* the absence of fear, misery, suffering—nothing more. The original editor inserted footnote by hand

+ this non-existence of. The original editor deleted “the absence of ” and inserted footnote by hand

¹ Reasoning—The truth arrived at by reasoning may be corroborated by one’s own experience and further supported by the *Śruti*.

²⁰⁸ The original editor added underlined by hand

²⁰⁹ 156

CHAPTER III ON ADVAITA

‡ differences. The original editor deleted word its not clear and inserted footnote by hand

² Illusory—It is because these belong to the realm of duality.

³ One, etc.—One who does not know the eternal and unchanging nature of the Self, thinks of himself as separate or different from his real nature and has recourse to various spiritual practices in order to regain his Brahmic nature, which he thinks he does, after death. Compare the Christian view of the “Fall of man”. These views are given in the Hindu scriptures also but refuted at the end from the standpoint of Truth, which is that even when a man thinks himself to be ignorant and tries to attain Knowledge by means of spiritual practices, he *is* Brahman. The nature of the non-dual Brahman never undergoes any change or transformation. There is no act of creation.

practices he, at present related to the evolved⁴ Brahman (Personal God), would attain to the ultimate Brahman after the dissolution of the body. Prior⁵ to the manifestation, according to this *Jiva*, everything including itself, was unborn. In other words he thinks, "I shall, through devotional practices, regain that which was my real nature before manifestation, though at present I subsist in the Brahman that appears in the form of the manifold." Such as *Jiva*, that is, the aspirant, betaking itself to devotion, inasmuch as it knows only a partial aspect of Brahman, is called of narrow⁶ or poor intellect⁺ by those who regard Brahman as eternal⁷ and unchanging.⁼ The *Upanishad* of the *Talavakāra* (Kena) supports this view in such statements as, "That which is not expressed by speech and by which speech is expressed, That alone know as Brahman and not that which people here* adore", etc.

("Hindi²¹⁰ passage omitted here")

2. Therefore I shall now describe⁼ which is free from limitations, unborn and which is the same throughout; and from this, one understands that it is not (in reality) born though it appears to be manifested everywhere.

ŚANKARA'S²¹¹ COMMENTARY.

⁴ *Evolved Brahman* – The *Jiva* in his state of imaginary "fall" worships a Personal God or a Cosmic Soul. He cannot think of the non-dual Self; but he imagines the *Saguna Brahman* to be Reality.

⁵ *Prior* – This ignorant *Jiva* thinks that only after death he will realise his eternal Brahmic nature, which was his real nature before he came into dual existence.

⁶ *Narrow* – It is because an ignorant person has no idea of the changeless non-dual Self. For, according to his view the *non-dual* Self is also limited by time and change which characterise the dual universe.

⁺ because he thought Brahman changed into the world or evolved it. The original editor inserted footnote by hand

⁷ *Eternal, etc.* – According to the Knower of Truth, Brahman never undergoes any manifestation. The phenomena of birth and death are mere illusion.

⁼ those that know Truth The original editor inserted footnote by hand

^{*} imagine and The original editor inserted footnote by hand

²¹⁰ 157

CHAPTER III
ON ADVAITA

f

⁼ that Atman The original editor deleted "Brahman" and inserted footnote by hand

²¹¹ 158

CHAPTER III
ON ADVAITA

One unable to realise *Ātman*, which is both within and without and birthless, and therefore believing oneself to be helpless through *Avidya*, thinks, “I am born, I subsist in the Brahman with attributes (*saguna*) and through devotion to It I shall become Brahman”, and thus becomes *Kripāna* (small²¹² minded).* Therefore, I shall describe Brahman which has never been subject to any limitation and which is birthless (changeless). The narrowness of mind has been described in such *Sruti* passages as, “When one sees another, hears another, knows another, then there is limitedness (littleness), mortality and unreality.” “Modification is only a name arising from speech, but the truth is that all is clay”, etc. But contrary to it is the Brahman known as *Bhumā* (great) which is both within and without and which is free from all limitations. I shall now describe that Brahman, free from all limitations, by realising which one gets rid of all narrowness superimposed by ignorance. It (Brahman) is called *Ajāti*, birthless, inasmuch as none knows its birth or cause. It is the same always and everywhere. How is it so? It is because there does not exist in it (atman)²¹³ any inequality caused by the presence of parts or limbs. For, only that which is with parts may be said to be born (or to have taken new form) by a change of its parts. But as *Ātman* is without parts, it is always the same and even, that is to say, it does not manifest itself in any new form through a change of the parts. Therefore it is without birth and free from limitation.²¹⁴ Now listen as to how¹ Brahman is not born, how it does not undergo change by so much as a jot, but ever remains unborn, though it appears, through ignorance, to be born and to give birth to others, like the rope² and the snake.

(“Hindi passage omitted here”)

3. *Ātman may be said to be similar to Ākāśa (space²¹⁵) manifested in the forms of the Jivas (embodied selves) which may be compared to the space²¹⁶ enclosed in pots. Again, as pots, etc., are said to be produced from the Ākāśa (ether), similarly (gross) bodies are said to be evolved from the Ātman. This is the illustration of the manifestation (from Brahman, if any).*

²¹² The original editor strike out and replaced “narrow” to “small” by hand

* dull intellects The original editor inserted footnote by hand

²¹³ The original editor strike out and replaced “Brahman” to “(atman)” by hand

²¹⁴ 159

CHAPTER III ON ADVAITA

¹ *How, etc.* – Brahman is always non-dual even during the perception of duality by the ignorant. Non-duality is the Reality and duality is illusion.

² *Rope* – The truth is that the rope does not become or produce the snake. It is only through ignorance that one sees the snake in the rope. Similarly Brahman which is birthless causeless, changeless and attributeless is imagined by the ignorant as producing or becoming the universe.

²¹⁵ The original editor strike out and replaced “ether” to “space” by hand

²¹⁶ The original editor strike out and replaced “ether” to “space” by hand

It has been said in the previous text, "I shall now describe Brahman, birthless and free from all narrowness". Now I shall give an illustration and a reason to substantiate the proposition. As the Supreme *Ātman* is like the *Ākāśa*, subtle, without parts and all-pervasive, it is compared to the *Ākāśa*. The²¹⁷ Supreme Self again, who is likened to the *Ākāśa*, is said to be manifested as the embodied beings (*Jivas*) or *Kshetrajnas* (Knowers of bodies), and are likened to the *Ghatākāśas* or the *Ākāśa* enclosed in jars. This is the Supreme Self which is like the *Ākāśa*. Or the sentence may be explained thus: As the totality of the *Ākāśa* enclosed within the pots is said to constitute what is known as the *Mahākāśa* or the great expanse of space²¹⁸, similarly the totality of the embodied beings (*Jivas*) constitutes the Supreme Being. The creation or manifestation of the *Jivas* (embodied beings) from the Supreme Self, as stated in the Vedānta, is like the creation or manifestation of the *Ghatākāśa* (*i.e.*, the ether enclosed in a jar) from the *Mahākāśa* (or the great and undifferentiated ether). That is to say, creation or manifestation is not¹ real. As² from that *Ākāśa* are produced such physical objects as the pot, etc., similarly from the Supreme Self which is like the *Ākāśa*, are produced the entire aggregate of material entities, such as the earth, etc., as well as the individual bodies, all³ characterised by causality, the entire⁴ production being nothing but mere imagination like that of the snake in the rope. Therefore it is said, "The aggregates (of the gross bodies) are produced like the pot, etc." When⁵ the *Śruti*, with a view to the

²¹⁷ 160

CHAPTER III
ON ADVAITA

²¹⁸ The original editor strike out and replaced "ether" to "space" by hand

¹ *Not real*—As the *Ākāśa* does not really create the *Ākāśa* enclosed within the pot, etc., but appears as enclosed on account of the association of the *upādhis* of the pot, etc., similarly the Supreme Self does not manifest or create any *Jiva* but appears as *Jivas* on account of its association with the *upādhis* of ignorance (*Avidyā*). This is an explanation of creation from the empirical standpoint when such creation is admitted as a fact. But from the standpoint of Reality there is no creation.

² *As, etc.*—The pot, etc., cannot be produced without space. They exist in space. Similarly no physical body can exist without the substratum of *Ātman*. Therefore, *Ātman* is said to have created the physical bodies.

³ *All, etc.*—All phenomenal objects are characterised by the law of cause and effect.

⁴ *Entire, etc.*—*Vedānta* accepts both the theories of *Vivarta* and *Parināma* as explanation of the phenomenal universe. Brahman is imagined to manifest himself as the universe through *Māyā*, and then the universe follows the law of causation.

⁵ *When, etc.*—Creation through *Māyā* is only an explanation of the universe when one takes it to be real. It is not truth. *Māyā* is only a statement of fact, an explanation of the world we perceive in a state of ignorance. From the standpoint of Reality neither the universe nor *Māyā* exists. Brahman alone exists.

enlightenment of the ignorant, speaks of the creation or manifestation (of the *Jivas*) from the *Ātman*, then such manifestation, being admitted as a fact, is explained with the help of the illustration of the creation of the pot, etc., from the *Ākāśa*.

("Hindi²¹⁹ passage omitted here")

4. *As on the destruction of the pot, etc., the space²²⁰ enclosed in the pot, etc., merges in the Ākāśa (the great expanse of space²²¹), similarly the Jivas merge in the Ātman.*

ŚANKARA'S COMMENTARY.

As the creation of ether enclosed within the pot, etc., follows the creation of the pot, etc., and as the merging of the same ether (in the *Mahākāśa*) is consequent on the destruction of the pot, etc.; in the same manner the²²² creation or manifestation of the *Jiva* follows that of the aggregate of the body, etc., and the merging of the *Jiva* in the Supreme Self follows in the wake of the destruction of the aggregate of the body, etc. The meaning is that neither the creation nor destruction is in itself real (from the standpoint of the Absolute).

("Hindi passage omitted here")

5. *As any portion of space²²³ enclosed in a pot being soiled by dust, smoke, etc., all such other portions of Ākāśa enclosed in other pots are not soiled, so is the happiness, etc., of the Jivas, i.e. the happiness, misery, etc., of one Jiva do not affect other Jivas.*

ŚANKARA'S COMMENTARY*

Both the creation and destruction of the universe, and consequently its existence, are due to ignorance. In truth, there is neither creation, nor existence, nor destruction. Destruction is impossible in the absence of creation. Therefore, the *Śruti* passages describing the process of creation and destruction do not antagonise the reality of the non-dual *Ātman*, as such fact is admitted by the *Advaitin* to be possible in the realm of ignorance.

²¹⁹ 161

CHAPTER III
ON ADVAITA

²²⁰ The original editor strike out and replaced "ether" to "space" by hand

²²¹ The original editor strike out and replaced "ether" to "space" by hand

²²² 162

CHAPTER III
ON ADVAITA

²²³ The original editor strike out and replaced "Akasa" to "space" by hand

* all these objections represent scholasticism or philosophical theology, which has been miscalled 'philosophy' in India. The original editor inserted footnote by hand

The dualists contend that if one *Ātman* exists in all bodies then the birth, death, happiness, etc., of one *Ātman* (as *Jiva*) must affect all and, further, there¹ must follow a confusion regarding the results of the action (done by individuals). This contention is thus refuted: As² the *Ākāsa* enclosed within one jar being soiled by dust, smoke, etc., does not make the *Ākāsa* enclosed in other jars soiled with the dust²²⁴ and the smoke, so all created beings are not affected by the happiness, etc., (of one *Jiva*).

(Objection)³ – Is it not your contention that there is only one *Ātman*?

(Reply) – Yes, we admit it. Have you not heard that there is only one *Ātman* like the all-pervading space²²⁵, in all bodies?

(Objection) – If⁴ there be only one *Ātman* then it must always and everywhere feel misery and happiness.

(Reply) – This objection cannot be raised by the *Sāmkhyas*.⁼ For,⁵ the *Sāmkhyas* do not admit that misery, happiness, etc., ever cling to the *Ātman*; for they assert that

¹ *There** the action of one individual must affect others who are not responsible for the action. Then there cannot be any possible relation between action and the results of actions. The law of causality becomes futile.

* if you admit there is one atman in all bodies

² As – The reply is that birth, death, misery, happiness, etc., are admitted to be facts experienced in the practical world. There the multiplicity of *Ātman* is also admitted. But this multiplicity of *Ātman* is due to the limitations of the (*upādhi*) of the mind caused by *Avidyā* (ignorance), which does not exist in the Supreme Reality.

²²⁴ 163

CHAPTER III ON ADVAITA

³ *Objection* – This objection is supposed to be raised by the adherents of the *Sāmkhya* philosophy.

²²⁵ The original editor strike out and replaced “sky” to “space” by hand

⁴ *If, etc.* – The contention of the *Sāmkhya* philosopher is that in case the unity of *Ātman* is upheld, one must always feel miserable or happy as the result of the good and the bad actions of others must affect him.

⁼ here Sankara descends from reasoning to interpretation in order to meet his critics on their own ground.

⁵ *For, etc.* – According to the *Sāmkhya* theory, the *Ātman* or the *Purusha* is without parts and attributes and is of the very nature of consciousness. *Prakriti* or *Pradhāna* is insentient, dull, and endowed with the qualities of misery, happiness, etc. All the activities of *Prakriti* are directed to serve the purpose of the conscious *Purusha*. *Prakriti*, being insentient, cannot enjoy the result of her own work. According to the *Sāmkhya* theory, *Prakriti* is one, but the *Purushas* are as numerous as there are bodies. Each *Purusha* by coming in contact with *Prakriti* catches the reflection of misery or happiness, which are the characteristics of the latter (*Prakriti*) and thinks itself as happy or miserable.

happiness, misery, etc., belong inseparably to *Buddhi*.⁶ Further, there is no evidence for imagining multiplicity of *Ātman* which is of the very nature of knowledge.

(Objection)—In the absence of the multiplicity of *Ātman* the theory that the *Pradhāna* or *Prakriti* acts for the sake of others⁷ does not hold good.

(Reply)—No, this argument is not valid; for whatever the *Pradhāna* or *Prakriti* may be supposed to accomplish by itself for another cannot inseparably inhere in *Ātman*. If bondage⁸ and liberation accomplished by the *Pradhāna* inseparably inhered in the multiple *Purushas*, then the theory that the *Pradhāna* (*Prakriti*) always acts for the sake of others would not be consistent with the unity of *Ātman* existing everywhere. And the theory of the *Sāmkhyas* regarding the multiplicity of *Ātman* would be reasonable. But the *Sāmkhyas* do not admit that²²⁶ the purpose of bondage or liberation can ever be inseparably associated with the *Purusha*. For, they admit that the *Purushas* are attributeless and are centres of Pure Consciousness. Therefore,⁹ the very existence of the *Purusha* is their support for the theory that the action of *Pradhāna* is directed to serve the purpose of others (the *Purushas*). But the supposition of the multiplicity of *Purushas* need not be made for this purpose. Therefore the theory of the *Pradhāna* seeking to serve the purpose of others cannot be an argument for the supposition of the multiplicity of *Ātman*. The *Sāmkhyas* have no other argument in support of their supposition regarding the multiplicity of *Ātman*. The *Pradhāna* takes upon itself bondage and liberation only through the instrumentality¹⁰ of the existence of the other (the *Purusha*). The *Purusha* which is of the very nature of knowledge, is the cause of the

⁶ *Buddhi*—According to the *Sāmkhya* philosophy there are twenty-five categories. *Buddhi* is first evolved as the result of the contact of *Prakriti* with *Purusha*. The three qualities of *Sattva*, *Rajas* and *Tamas* which give rise to misery, happiness, etc., lie in an undifferentiated state in *Prakriti*. But when *Prakriti* evolves into *Buddhi*, these qualities become differentiated. Hence, misery, happiness, etc., have been stated as inseparably related to *Buddhi*.

⁷ *Others*—i.e., the *Purushas*. See note *Ante* 5.

⁸ *Bondage, etc.*—According to the *Sāmkhya* philosophy the contact of *Prakriti* with *Purusha* causes the latter to fall into bondage. But as soon as *Purusha* realises his independence, he is liberated. Therefore, according to the *Sāmkhyas*, *Prakriti* is the cause of bondage and liberation and the *Purusha*, in itself, is of the very nature of knowledge. All the activities of *Prakriti*, which are otherwise meaningless, are directed to make the *Purusha* realise his real nature.

²²⁶ 164

CHAPTER III ON ADVAITA

⁹ *Therefore, etc.*—According to *Vedānta*, the ideas of both bondage and liberation belong to the world of relativity. It is due to ignorance. From the standpoint of Truth, there is neither bondage nor liberation; for the *Ātman* is always free.

¹⁰ *Instrumentality, etc.*—*Vedānta* does not disagree with this position. According to it, the fact of the multiplicity of relative phenomena is explained by the presence of the non-dual *Ātman*. Every illusion has its substratum.

activity of the *Pradhāna* by the fact of its very *existence* and not on account of its any specific¹¹ qualities. So it is through ignorance alone that people imagine the *Purusha* (*Ātman*) to be many and also thereby give up the real¹² import of the Vedas.

The *Vaisesikas*^{*13} and others assert that attributes such as desire, etc., are inseparably related to *Ātman*. This¹⁴ view is also not correct. For, the *Samskāras* (the impressions) which are the cause of memory cannot have any inseparable relation with *Ātman* which has no¹⁵ parts. Further, if¹⁶ it be contended that the origin of memory lies in the contact of *Ātman* with the mind, we say that this contention is not valid; for,²²⁷ in that case there will be no rule regarding memory. Memory of all things will come simultaneously. Besides¹⁷ mind can never be related to the *Ātman* which is devoid of all sensations such as touch, etc., and which belongs to a class other than that of the mind. Further, the *Vaisesikas* do not admit that the attributes (*guna*) such as forms, etc., (*Rupas*), action (*Karma*), generality (*Sāmānya*), particularity (*Viśeṣa*) and inherence (*Samavāya*), can exist independently of the substance (*Dravya*). If these are totally

¹¹ *Specific qualities*—This is the view of *Patanjali*. According to his system, known as the philosophy of *Yoga*, there is an *Īśvara* or Personal God, possessed of attributes, who is the cause of creation.

¹² *Real import, etc.*—*i.e.*, the non-dual *Ātman* is the only Reality.

* the logicians, who are the support of all the dualists and scholastic pundits, The original editor inserted footnote by hand

¹³ *Vaisesikas*—The followers of the *Vaisesika* philosophy hold that there are six categories, *viz.*, *Dravya* (substance), *Guna* (quality), *Karma* (activity), *Sāmānya* (generality), *Viśeṣa* (particularity), and *Samavāya* (inherence). All these categories exist independently of one another. The *Dravya* or substance (*Ātman*) has nine special attributes, *viz.*, *Buddhi* (intellect), *Sukha* (happiness), *Duhkha* (misery), *Ichha* (desire), *Dveṣha* (aversion), *Prayatna* (effort), *Dharma* (merit), *Adharma* (demerit) and *Samskāra* (impression).

¹⁴ *This, etc.*—If desire, etc., are inseparably connected with *Ātman*, then desire, misery, happiness, etc., of one being would imply those of another.

¹⁵ *No part*—If it be contended that desire, etc., inhere in one part of the *Ātman*, then the reply is that *Ātman* unlike the pot, etc., has no parts.

¹⁶ *If, etc.*—The opponent contends that the origin of memory is to be found in the contact of the mind with *Ātman*. But this argument is not valid. For, *Ātman* is ever present. In that case the mere effort of the mind to remember anything should bring its memory. But this does not happen. In spite of all our efforts we often fail to bring back the memory of many past events. Further, *Ātman* is indivisible and without parts. Therefore any impression that arises in the *Ātman* cannot be confined to any particular part of the *Ātman*. If such be the case, then all beings should remember a thing at the same time. Still another difficulty of this theory is that, *Ātman* being without parts, one should remember all things at one and the same time. Hence no rule exists regarding memory.

²²⁷ 165

CHAPTER III ON ADVAITA

¹⁷ *Besides, etc.*—Contact is possible between two things of the same species.

independent of one another, the contact between the *Ātman* and desire, etc., and also between the attributes (*guna*) and the substance (*Dravya*) will be an absurdity.

(Objection)—The contact characterised by an inseparable inherence is possible in the case of entities where such relation is proved to be *innate*.

(Reply)—This¹⁸ objection is not valid; for such *innate* relationship cannot be reasonable, as the *Ātman*, the ever permanent, is antecedent to the desires, etc., which are transitory. And if desires, etc., be admitted to have inseparable innate relationship with *Ātman*, then¹⁹ the former would be as permanent as such innate attributes of *Ātman* as greatness, etc. That is not desirable, for then there would be no room for liberation of the *Ātman*. Further, if inseparable relationship (*Samavāya*) were something separate from the substance, then another factor must be stated which can bring about the relationship between *Samavāya* and the substance, — as in the case of the substance²²⁸ and the attributes. Nor can it be stated that *Samavāya* is a constant inseparable relationship with *Ātman*; for, in that case, the *Ātman* and *Samavāya* on account of their constant and inseparable relationship can never be different from one another. If, on the other hand, the relationship of *Samavāya* be totally different from the *Ātman*, and the attributes also be different from the substance, then the possessive case cannot be used to indicate their mutual relation which is possible only when the two terms connected by the possessive are not totally different. If *Ātman* be inseparably connected with such categories as desires, etc., which have both “beginning” and “end”, then it would itself be impermanent. If *Ātman* be considered to have parts and undergo changes, like the body, etc., then, these two defects always associated with the body, etc., would be inevitable in the case of the *Ātman*. (Therefore the conclusion is that) as the *Ākāśa* (space²²⁹), on account of the superimposition of ignorance (*Avidyā*), is regarded as soiled by dust and smoke, in like manner, the *Ātman* also, on account of the limiting condition of the mind caused by the erroneous attribution of *Avidyā*, appears to be associated with the contamination of misery, happiness, etc. And such being the case, the idea of bondage and liberation, being empirical in nature, does not contradict (the permanent nature of *Ātman* from the standpoint of Truth). For, all the disputants admit the relative

¹⁸ *This objection, etc.*—Śankara criticises this view of the relation between substance and quality. If the two are inseparably related, the inseparability must refer to place, time or nature. The two are not inseparable in place, since we see the redness of a red lotus disappearing. If inseparability in time is the essence of the *Samavāya* relation, then the right and the left horns of a cow would be related in that way. If it is inseparability in nature or character, then it would be impossible to make any further distinction between substance and quality, since the two are one.

¹⁹ *Then, etc.*—But we know that desires, etc., are impermanent.

²²⁸ 166

²²⁹ The original editor strike out and replaced “ether” to “space” by hand

experience to be caused by *Avidyā* and deny its existence from the standpoint of the Supreme²³⁰ Reality. Hence it follows that the supposition of the multiplicity of *Ātman* made by the logicians is without basis and superfluous.

(“Hindi²³¹ passage omitted here”)

6. Though form, function and name are different here and there yet this does not imply any difference in the *Ākāśa*²³² (which is one). The same is the conclusion (truth) with regard to the *Jivas*.

ŚANKARA’S COMMENTARY.

(Objection)—If¹ *Ātman* be one then how is it possible to justify the variety of experiences pointing to the multiplicity of *Ātman* (which is explained as being) due to *Avidyā* (ignorance)?

(Reply)—This is thus explained: In our common experience with regard to this *Ākāśa* (which is really one), we find variety of forms, such as large, small, etc., in respect of the *Ākāśa* enclosed in a pot, a water-bowl and a cover. Similarly there are various functions (of the same *Ākāśa*) such as fetching water, preserving water and sleeping. Lastly there are various names as the ether enclosed in a jar (*ghata*), the ether enclosed in a water-bowl (*karaka*), etc., caused by different *upādhis*. All these different forms, functions and names are matters of common experience. This variety of experience caused by different forms, etc., is not true from the standpoint of the ultimate Reality. For, in reality *Ākāśa* never admits of any variety. Our empirical activities based upon the difference in *Ākāśa* are not possible without the instrumentality of an adventitious *upādhi*.² As in this illustration, the *Jivas* (embodied beings) which may be compared to

²³⁰ 167

CHAPTER III
ON ADVAITA

²³¹ 169

CHAPTER III
ON ADVAITA

²³² 170

CHAPTER III
ON ADVAITA

This text gives one of the explanations of the empirical world as stated by the wise.

¹ *If, etc.*—The contention of the opponent is this: The variety of names, forms and functions is an indubitable experience of the relative world. This can be explained only if we admit the multiplicity of *Ātman*. Therefore there are infinite number of *Ātmans*, each having a different name and form and each performing a different function. The unity of *Ātman* cannot explain this variety.

² *Upādhi*—i.e., the form of a pot, water-bowl, etc.

the *Ākāsa* enclosed in a jar, are regarded as different, this difference³ being caused by the *upādhis*. This is the conclusion of the wise.

(“Hindi²³³ passage omitted here”)

7. As the *Ghatākāsa* (i.e., the space²³⁴ portioned off by the pot) is neither the (evolved) effect nor part of the *Ākāsa* (ether), so is the *Jiva* (the embodied being) neither the effect nor part of the *Ātman*.

ŚANKARA’S COMMENTARY.

(Objection)—Our experience of the variety of forms, functions, etc., associated with the ether enclosed in the pot, etc., is true from the standpoint of the ultimate Reality (and not illusory, as you say).

(Reply)—No, this¹ cannot be so. For, the space²³⁵ enclosed in the pot cannot be the evolved effect of the real ether in the same way as the ornament,² etc., are the²³⁶ effect of gold or the foam, bubble, moisture, etc., are the effect of water. Nor, again is the *Ghatākāsa* (the *Ākāsa* in the pot) similar to the branches and other parts of a tree. As *Ghatākāsa* is neither a part nor an evolved effect of the *Ākāsa*, so also the *Jiva* (the embodied being), compared to the *Ākāsa* enclosed in the pot, is neither, as in the illustrations given above, an effect nor part of the *Ātman*, the ultimate Reality, which

³ *Difference*—The apparent difference in our empirical experience is caused by *upādhis* which are unreal. These *upādhis* are unreal on account of their changeable and negatable nature. Therefore from the standpoint of Reality, *Ātman*, like the *Ākāsa*, is only one and without a second.

This explanation that this apparent difference of the empirical experience is caused by *Avidyā* is given from the relative standpoint when such difference is admitted as a fact. But from the standpoint of the ultimate Reality, the difference does not exist.

²³³ 171

CHAPTER III ON ADVAITA

²³⁴ The original editor strike out and replaced “ether” to “space” by hand

¹ *This, etc.*—For, it is admitted by all that the ether is without parts and cannot undergo any modification.

²³⁵ The original editor strike out and replaced “ether” to “space” by hand

² *Ornament, etc.*—We explain a necklace or foam, etc., as the modification of gold or water respectively. We also explain the branches or the leaves as the parts of the tree. But *Jiva* is neither modification, nor manifestation, nor part of the *Ātman*. *Jiva* is *Ātman* itself which never undergoes a change.

²³⁶ 172

CHAPTER III ON ADVAITA

may be compared to the *Mahākāsa* (i.e., the undifferentiated expanse of ether). Therefore, the relative experience based upon the multiplicity of *Ātman* is an illusion (from the standpoint of the ultimate Reality).

(“Hindi passage omitted here”)

8. *As the space²³⁷ appears to the ignorant children to be soiled by dirt, similarly, the Ātman also is regarded by the ignorant as soiled.*

ŚANKARA’S COMMENTARY.

As¹ the diversity of experience such as forms, functions, etc., is caused by the admitted differences of the *Ghatākāsa*, etc., so also is the experience of birth, death,²³⁸ etc., consequent on the perception of the different *Jivas*, due to the limitations caused by *Avidyā* (ignorance). Therefore the contamination of misery, action and result (of action) caused by *Avidyā* does not really inhere in the *Ātman*. In order to establish this meaning by an illustration, the text says:—As in our ordinary experience it is found that the indiscreet regard the *Ākāsa* (ether),—which, to those who know, the real nature of a thing by discrimination, is never soiled by any contamination—as soiled with cloud, dust and smoke, so also the Supreme *Ātman*, the Knower, the innermost Self directly perceived within, is regarded by those who do not know the real nature of the innermost Self, as affected by the evils of misery, action and result. But this is not the

²³⁷ The original editor strike out and replaced “ether” to “space” by hand

The opponent may contend thus:—The statement that the *Jivas* are neither an evolved effect nor a part of Brahman but identical with it is not correct. For, Brahman is ever pure and non-dual whereas the *Jivas* are many and ever affected by the contamination of passion, attachment, etc. This text refutes this contention.

¹ *As, etc.*—In our relative experience we make a distinction between the different forms of *Ākāsa* enclosed by a jar, an eye of a needle, or an extensive field. This knowledge of distinction, caused by various *upādhis*, unreal from the standpoint of Truth, makes us associate the undifferentiated *Ākāsa* with different forms, functions and names. In like manner, ignorant persons make a distinction of the *Jivas* by associating the *Ātman* with the attributes of different bodies, etc., and consequently think of the *Ātman* as suffering from the effects of birth, death, misery, etc. This distinction in the non-dual *Ātman* which gives rise to the notion of birth, death, etc., is due to *Avidyā* which is subjective in the perceiver.⁺ This distinction does not, in reality, exist: hence *Ātman* is ever uncontaminated by the evils of birth, death, etc.

⁺ when the drik imagines, it sees all things, but when it is not imagining (as in sleep), there is nothing to be seen.

²³⁸ 173

case with those who can discriminate. As in the desert are never found foam,² waves, etc., though thirsty creatures²³⁹ attribute these things to it, similarly the *Ātman* also is never affected by the turpitude of misery,³ etc.,²⁴⁰ attributed to it by the ignorant.

(“Hindi²⁴¹ passage omitted here”)

9. *Ātman*, in regard to its birth, death, going and coming (i.e., transmigration) and its existing in different bodies, is not dissimilar to the *Ākāsa* (i.e., the *Ghatākāsa* or the ether portioned off by a jar).

ŚANKARA’S COMMENTARY.

The point which has been just stated is again thus developed:—Birth, death, etc., of the *Ātman* as seen in all bodies is like the creation, destruction, coming, going²⁴² and existence of the *Ghatākāsa* (or ether enclosed within a jar.)

It may be contended that the *Jiva* after death, as a result of the meritorious deeds done in this life, goes to heaven. If a sinner, he is thrown into hell. After his enjoyment of happiness or misery in heaven or hell, he again takes birth. In due course he departs from this world. This theory of transmigration is inconsistent with that of the non-dual *Ātman*. The text refutes this contention. All these diverse experiences regarding *Ātman* are due to *Avidyā* and therefore not real. Like the other, *Ātman* which is pure, undifferentiated and one, can never be subject to transmigration, etc., which are falsely superimposed upon it through *Avidyā*.

(“Hindi passage omitted here”)

² *Foam, etc.*—The ignorant, subject to the illusion of the mirage, associate the desert with foam, waves, etc. All the waters of the mirage, taken as real by the ignorant, do not soak one grain of sand in the desert as this water is unreal. Similarly all the evils attributed to the *Ātman* by indiscriminating persons do not make it lose its innate purity by so much as an iota.

²³⁹ The original editor deleted “falsely” by hand

³ *Misery*—Misery or *Kleśa* has been defined by *Patanjali* as that which causes misery to the *Jivas*. This *Kleśa* is of five kinds, viz., *Avidyā* (i.e., thinking the body which is non-self as the Self), *Asmitā* (i.e., regarding the *Ātman* as one with *Buddhi* or mind), *Rāga* (i.e., attachment), *Dvesha* (i.e., the anger which a man feels when his desire to attain a particular object is frustrated), *Abhinivesa* (i.e., the fear of death, etc.).

²⁴⁰ The original editor deleted “falsely” by hand

²⁴¹ 174

²⁴² 175

10. *All aggregates (such as body, etc.) are produced by the illusion of the Ātman (i.e., the perceiver) as in a dream. No rational arguments can be adduced to establish their reality, whether they be equal or superior (to one another).*

ŚANKARA'S COMMENTARY.

The aggregates of body, etc., answering to the pots, etc., in the illustration, are produced,—like the body, etc., seen in dream or conjured up by the magician—by the illusion¹ of the Ātman, i.e., the *Avidyā* (ignorance) which is in the perceiver. That² is to say, they do not exist from the standpoint of the ultimate Reality. If³ it be argued, in order to establish their reality, that there is a superiority (among the created beings),—as in the case of the aggregates of cause and effect constituting gods who are superior to lower beings,²⁴³ such as birds and beasts—or that there is an equality (of all created beings), yet no cause⁴ can be set forth regarding their creation or reality. As there is no cause therefore all these are due to *Avidyā* or ignorance; they have no real existence.

(“Hindi passage omitted here”)

11. *The Supreme Jiva (i.e., the non-dual Brahman) is the self of the (five) sheaths, such as the physical, etc., which have been explained in the Taittiriya Upanishad. That the Supreme Jiva is like the Ākāśa has already been described by us (in the third verse of this chapter).*

ŚANKARA'S²⁴⁴ COMMENTARY.

¹ *Illusion, etc.*—If one, subject to *Avidyā*, sees multiplicity, then this *Avidyā* is in the perceiver. *Avidyā* is not objective, i.e., it does not exist outside the perceiver.

² *That is, etc.*—As in the case of the dream objects, etc., which have no real existence.

³ *If, etc.*—The opponents may argue that the bodies of gods, etc., on account of their superiority and adorability cannot be unreal. This is an argument of the ignorant, as all bodies, whether belonging to gods or lower animals, are constituted of five elements. Hence there is no intrinsic difference between gods and other beings. It is like the various objects seen in the dream, such as gods, birds, men, beasts, etc. They are made of the same thing, viz., the mind-stuff. Therefore, they are of the same nature and known to be unreal when the dream vanishes. Similarly a wise man knows all-bodies from *Brahmā* to the blade of grass to be unreal.

²⁴³ 176

CHAPTER III
ON ADVAITA

⁴ *Cause*—The idea of creation or coming into existence is due to *Avidyā*. With the removal of *Avidyā*, the idea of creation also vanishes. This topic will be discussed at full length later on.

²⁴⁴ 177

CHAPTER III

Now statements are made in order to show that the existence of the essence of *Ātman* which is non-dual and without birth, etc., can¹ as well be proved on the evidence of the *Śruti*. *Rasa*, etc., are the five² sheaths such as the physical sheath (*Annarasamaya*), the vital sheath (*Prānamaya*), etc. These are called “sheaths” (*Kosa*) because they³ are like the sheath of the sword, the previous⁴ sheaths being outer than the following ones. These have been clearly explained in the *Taittiriya*, *i.e.*, in a chapter of the *Taittiriyaśākhā Upanishad*. It is the Self (*Ātman*) of these sheaths. By It, the innermost Self, the five sheaths are regarded as alive. It is again called *Jiva* as it is the cause of the life of all. What is It? It is the Supreme Self which has been described before as “Brahman which is Existence, Knowledge and Infinity”. It has been further stated that from this *Ātman* the aggregates of the body known as *Rasa*, etc., having the characteristics of the sheath, have⁵ been created by its (*Atman's*) power called ignorance, this creation being like the illusory creation of objects seen in a dream or in a performance of jugglery. We have described this *Ātman* as the ether (*Ākāśa*) in the text, “The *Ātman* is verily like the *Ākāśa*” (*Gaud. Kārikā*, 3. 3). This *Ātman* cannot be established by the reasoning⁶ of a man who follows the logician’s method of arguments as the *Ātman* referred to by us is different from the *Ātman* of the logicians.

(“Hindi²⁴⁵ passage omitted here”)

12. *The description by pairs, as that of the Ākāśa, which is in the earth as also in the stomach (though referred to separately), applies equally to the Supreme Brahman described in the*

ON ADVAITA

¹ *Can, etc.*—That *Jiva* is identical with the non-dual Brahman has already been established through reason. Now the same is again proved by the evidence of the Vedas.

² *Five, etc.*—The five sheaths are the *Annamayakosa* (the physical sheath), the *Prānamayakosa* (the vital sheath), the *Manomayakosa* (the mental sheath), the *Vijnānamayakosa* (the sheath of intellect) and the *Ānandamayakosa* (the sheath of Bliss).

³ *They, etc.*—The *kosas* are compared to sheaths. As the sheath is external to the sword, so also the *kosas* are external to the *Ātman* which is the innermost Self of all.

⁴ *Previous, etc.*—The *Annamayakosa* is the sheath wherein is encased the *Prānamayakosa*, the *Prānamayakosa* is the sheath wherein is encased the *Manomayakosa* and so on. The *Ānandamayakosa* is encased in the *Vijnānamayakosa*.

⁵ *Have been, etc.*—This is no real creation. The phenomena of creation, which is illusory, are regarded as such from the empirical standpoint.

⁶ *Reasoning*—The rational process of arriving at the Truth sought in the *Vedānta* philosophy is mainly described in the *Kārikā* of Gaudapāda. this consists of the analysis of the three states, known as the waking, the dream and the deep sleep and the co-ordination of the experiences of these states.

²⁴⁵ 178

CHAPTER III
ON ADVAITA

Madhu Brāhmana (a chapter in the Brihadāranyaka Upanishad), as being both in the corporeal (Adhyātma) and in the celestial regions (Adhidaiva).

ŚANKARA'S COMMENTARY.

Moreover, in the words¹ "All this is the Supreme Ātman, the Brahman, the bright, the immortal Person who²⁴⁶ is both the celestial (superphysical—Adhidaiva) and the corporeal (Adhyātma), who is in this earth as well as the Knower incorporated in the body",—Brahman alone is described in order to indicate the limit at which duality vanishes. Where does this occur? It is thus replied:—It occurs in the *Madhu Brāhmana* chapter which is known as the chapter dealing with the Knowledge of Brahman. It is because therein is described the nectar, (i.e., immortality) which is known as *Madhu*, i.e., honey, as it gives us the highest bliss. This Brahman is like the *Ākāśa* which is said to be the same or identical though separately indicated as existing in the earth and in the stomach.

("Hindi passage omitted here")

13. As the identity of Jiva and Ātman, through their non-dual character, is praised and multiplicity is condemned (in the scriptures), therefore, that (non-duality) alone is rational and correct.

ŚANKARA'S²⁴⁷ COMMENTARY.

The *Shāstras*¹ as well as the sages like Vyāsa, etc., extol the identity of *Jiva* and the Supreme Self through the negation of all differences—the conclusion arrived at by reasoning and supported by the scriptures. Further, the experiences of multiplicity which are natural (to the ignorant) and common to all beings—the view propounded by those who do not understand the real import of the *Shāstras* and who indulge in futile

¹ *Words, etc.*—The text of the *Brihadāranyaka Upanishad* (2.5.1) referred to here begins thus: "This earth is the honey (*Madhu*, the effect) of all beings and all beings are honey (*Madhu*, the effect) of this earth. Likewise this bright, immortal person in this earth, and that bright immortal person incorporated in the body (both are *Madhu*). He is indeed the same as that Self, that Immortal, that Brahman, that All". The purport of this *Śruti* passage is this: The Supreme Brahman alone, has been described as existing in all the pairs of the corporeal (*Adhyātma*) and the superphysical (*Adhidaiva*).

²⁴⁶ 179

CHAPTER III
ON ADVAITA

²⁴⁷ 180

CHAPTER III
ON ADVAITA

¹ *Shāstras*—Comp. "One who knows Brahman verily becomes Brahman."

reasoning—have been condemned² thus: “But there is certainly nothing corresponding to the dual existence,” “Fear arises from the consciousness of duality,” “If he sees the slightest difference (in *Ātman*) then he is overcome with fear,” “All this is verily *Ātman*,” “He goes from death to death who sees here (in this *Ātman*) multiplicity.” Other Knowers of Brahman as well as the scriptures (quoted above) extol identity (of *Jiva* and Brahman) and condemn multiplicity. Thus alone this praise and condemnation can easily be comprehended; in other words, it accords with reason. But the false views (vainly) advanced by the logicians,³ not easy of comprehension, cannot be accepted as facts.

(“Hindi²⁴⁸ passage omitted here”)

14. *The separateness of Jiva and Ātman which has been declared in (the ritual portion of the) Upanishad, dealing with the origin (of the universe), is only figurative, because this portion (of the Vedas) describes only what is to be. This statement regarding separateness can never have any meaning as truth.*

ŚANKARA’S COMMENTARY.

(Objection)—Even the *Śruti* has already declared the separateness of the *Jiva* and the Supreme Self in that part of the Upanishad which describes the creation (of the universe), *i.e.*, in the ritual portion (*Karmakānda*) of the Vedas. The texts of the *Karmakānda*, referred to here, describe the Supreme *Purusha* who had multiple desire, in such words as, “desirous of this,” “desirous of that,” “He,¹ the Highest, supported the heaven and the earth,” etc. This being the case, how is it possible, when there is a conflict between the knowledge portion and the ritual portion of the Vedās, to conclude that the unity underlying the meaning of the knowledge portion (of the Vedas) is alone reasonable and accurate?

(Reply)—Our reply is as follows:—The separateness (of *Jiva* and *Paramātman*) described in the *Karmakānda* (ritual portion of the Vedas)—anterior to such Upanishadic statements dealing with the creation of the universe as “That from which all these²⁴⁹

² *Condemned*—That which is condemned cannot be Reality.

³ *Logicians*—This refers to the followers of the *Vaiseshika* and other systems of thought.

There is no scriptural quotation which praises duality and condemns non-duality (*Advaita*).

²⁴⁸ 181

CHAPTER III
ON ADVAITA

8

¹ *He*—*i.e.*, *Hiranyagarbha* or the cosmic soul.

²⁴⁹ 182

beings emanate," "As small sparks (come out) from fire," "The *Ākāśa* has evolved from that which is this *Ātman*," "It saw," "It created heat"—is not real from the absolute standpoint.

(Objection) — What is it then?

(Reply) — It has only a secondary meaning. The separateness (between *Jiva* and *Paramātman* implied in these passages) is like that between the undifferentiated² ether (*Mahākāśa*) and the ether enclosed in the jar (*Ghatākāśa*). This statement is made with reference to a future³ happening as in the case of another statement we often make, "He is cooking rice." For, the words describing separateness (of *Jiva* and *Paramātman*) can never reasonably uphold such separateness as absolutely real, as the statements regarding the separateness of *Ātman* only reiterate the multiple experiences of those beings who are still under the spell of their inborn⁴ *Avidyā* or ignorance. Here⁵ in the Upanishads, the texts regarding the creation, destruction, etc., of the universe are meant only to establish the identity of *Jiva* and the Supreme Self, as is known from the texts, "That thou art," "He does not know who knows I am another and he is another". In other words, in the Upanishads the purpose of the *Śruti* is to establish the identity (of *Jiva* and Brahman). Keeping in view this identity which is going to be established later

CHAPTER III ON ADVAITA

² *Undifferentiated, etc.* — The difference between the *Ghatākāśa* and the *Mahākāśa* is only due to the *upādhi* or the limiting adjunct of the *ghata* or the jar. In reality it is the identical *Ākāśa* that is perceived in the great expanse of the ether, as well as in the jar. Similarly, the *Jiva* is thought of as different from the *Ātman* when the former is limited by the *upādhis* of *Antahkarana* and body.

³ *Future, etc.* — The Vedas make the statement regarding the separateness of *Jiva* and Brahman keeping in view the experience of multiplicity by the ignorant people. The idea of past, present and future is formed only in the realm of ignorance. When the grain (*i.e.*, the uncooked rice) is boiled, people say that the rice (cooked rice) is boiled. This sort of statement is common parlance. Here the present tense is used keeping in view a future happening. Similarly the scriptures speak of duality before creation with a view to indicating the future state of Knowledge when multiplicity is known to be unreal.

⁴ *Inborn* — It is because no cause can be traced of *Avidyā*.

⁵ *Here, etc.* — The aim of the dualistic statements of the *Śruti* is to establish ultimately the identity of *Jiva* and Brahman. The Upanishads accept the empirical view of the world as it appears and explain it by saying that Brahman who is both the material and efficient cause of the universe, created the world with all its beings and then entered into all as the living Self. This explanation establishes the unity of Brahman and *Jiva*, the apparent difference being ascribed to ignorance. The import of the *Śruti* is this: The non-dual Brahman alone exists. He is birthless, causeless and changeless. If one sees multiplicity that is also Brahman. The experience of multiplicity that is also Brahman. The experience of multiplicity in the non-dual Brahman is due to *Avidyā*.

on, the (dualistic) texts only reiterate the common⁶ experience of multiplicity (due to ignorance). Therefore these (dualistic) texts are only metaphorical. Or the *Kārikā* may be explained²⁵⁰ thus: The scriptural text, “He is one and without a second”, declares the (complete) identity of *Jiva* and Brahman even before creation, denoted by such passages as, “He saw,” “He created fire,” etc. The culmination is, again, that identity as is known from such *Śruti* passages as, “That is the Reality; He is the *Ātman*. That thou art”. Now, if keeping in view this future identity, the separateness of *Jiva* and *Ātman* has been declared in some texts, it must have been used in a metaphorical way as is the case with the statement “He is cooking rice”.

(“Hindi²⁵¹ passage omitted here”)

15. (*The scriptural statements regarding*) creation as illustrated by examples of earth, iron, sparks, etc., or otherwise, (only) serve the purpose of (ultimately) explaining the unity (of *Jiva* and Brahman). (Really speaking) multiplicity does not exist in any manner.

ŚANKARA’S COMMENTARY.

(Objection) – Before¹ creation all this might have been unborn, one and non-dual; but after creation, all this evolved world and the embodied beings (*Jivas*) denote multiplicity.

(Reply) – No, it cannot be so. For, the scriptural passages dealing with creation have another meaning. This difficulty raised here has already been solved by the statements that² the aggregates (entities) of body, etc., like dream-objects, are produced through illusion of the subject (*Ātman*) and that creation and the differences of the *Jivas* are like the creation and the differences of the *Ghatākāśas*, i.e., the bits of *Ākāśa* enclosed in different jars. The scriptural³ statements dealing with creation and differences (of the

⁶ *Common, etc.* – This is due to ignorance.

²⁵⁰ 183

CHAPTER III
ON ADVAITA

²⁵¹ 184

CHAPTER III
ON ADVAITA

¹ Before, etc. – There are definite scriptural statements regarding creation. These statements are *literally* true. Therefore multiplicity caused by creation is also true.

² That, etc. – In *Kārikās* 3 and 10 (Chapter III), it has been established that the perception of ego and non-ego as separate from Brahman is due to ignorance.

³ *Scriptural, etc.* – It has been explained in the previous text that the scriptural statements regarding creation, etc., are for the purpose of explaining the illusory nature of the universe to those who take it as real. But the purpose of this *Kārikā* is to enable us to understand the identity of *Jiva* and Brahman.

created beings),²⁵² have again been referred to here in order to show that such statements regarding creation have the purpose of determining the unity of *Jiva* and Brahman. The⁴ (theory of) creation has been described in the scripture through the illustrations of earth, iron, sparks, etc., or otherwise; but all these modes of creation are meant for enlightening our intellect so that it may comprehend the identity of *Jiva* and Brahman. It is just like the story⁵ of the organs of speech (*vāk*), etc., being smitten with evil by the *Asuras* (demons) as described in the chapter on *Prāna* (vital breath), where the real purpose of the *Śruti* is to demonstrate the special importance of *Prāna*.

(Objection) – We⁶ do not accept this meaning as indicated.

(Reply) – Your contention is not correct. For⁷ this story about *Prāna*, etc., has been differently narrated in different recensions of the Vedas. If the story of *Prāna* were literally true, then there should have been one version only in all recensions. Different versions of contradictory nature would not have been narrated. But we do come across such different versions in the Vedas. Therefore the scriptural passages recording storied of *Prāna* are not meant to serve any purpose of their own, *i.e.*, they should not be taken literally. The scriptural⁸ statements regarding creation should also be understood in a similar manner.

252 185

CHAPTER III
ON ADVAITA

⁴ *The creation, etc.* – The meaning is that we should not take these scriptural statements in the literal sense but must get at their underlying significance.

⁵ *Story, etc.* – The reference is to the second part of the first chapter of the *Chhāndogya Upanishad*. This story cannot be accepted in a literal sense as the organs of speech, etc., being themselves unconscious, cannot quarrel with one another. The significance of the story is to demonstrate the superiority of *Prāna* over other *Indriyas* (organs). The story referred to here is as follows: The *Devas* and the *Asuras*, both of the race of Prajāpati, fought with one another. The *Devas* (Gods) and the *Asuras* (Demons) are explained as good and evil inclinations of man. The *Devas* took the *Udgitha*, thinking that they would be able to vanquish the *Asuras* with it. The *Udgitha* stands for the sacrificial act to be performed by the *Udgātri*, the *Sāmaveda* priest, with the *Udgitha* hymns. They meditated on the *Udgitha* as the breath in the nostril, but the *Asuras* smote the breath with evil. Then they meditated on *Udgitha* as the speech, the eye, the ear, the mind; but all these sense-organs were smitten with evil by the *Asuras*. Then they meditated on *Udgitha* as *Prāna* (vital breath) and the *Asuras* failed to smite it with evil. Therefore *Prāna* is superior to all sense-organs.

⁶ *We, etc.* – We do not accept your explanation, for, the organs of speech, etc., have been designated as gods. Therefore they cannot be insentient matter.

⁷ *For, etc.* – This story about *Prāna* has been differently stated in different Upanishads. This cannot happen if the story is to be accepted as literally true.

⁸ *Scriptural, etc.* – The story regarding creation, as in the case of *Prāna*, has been differently stated in different parts of the Upanishads. In some places we read that the *Ākāsa* was first evolved; again we find that the fire was first evolved and still in another place it is

(Objection)—There have been different creations in different cycles. Therefore, the scriptural statements regarding creations (of the universe) and stories (of *Prāna*)²⁵³ are different as they refer to the creations in different cycles.

(Reply)—This contention is not valid. For, they (the illustrations of earth, iron, etc., as well as the stories of *Prāna*) serve no other useful purpose than clearing our intellect as stated above. No one can imagine any other utility of the scriptural statements regarding creation and *Prāna*.

(Objection)—We⁹ contend that these are for the purpose of meditation so that one may ultimately attain to that end.

(Reply)—This is also not correct; for no one desires to attain his identity with the *dispute* (in the case of the *Prāna* narrative), or with the creation or destruction (in the case of the scriptural statements regarding creation, etc.). Therefore we have reasonably to conclude that the scriptural statements regarding creation, etc., are for the purpose of helping the mind to realise the oneness of *Ātman*, and for no other purpose whatsoever. Therefore, no multiplicity is brought about by creation, etc.

(“Hindi²⁵⁴ passage omitted here”)

16. *There are three stages of life corresponding to three, – the lower, the middle and the high – powers of comprehension. The scripture, out of compassion, has taught this devotion (or discipline) for the benefit of those (who are not yet enlightened).*

ŚANKARA’S COMMENTARY.

(Objection)—If according to such *Śruti* passages as “*Ātman* is one and without a second”, etc., the *Ātman* alone, the one, the eternally pure, illumined and free, is the highest and the ultimate Reality and all else is unreal, what then is the purpose of the

mentioned that *Prāna* was first evolved. Therefore, on account of the contradictory natures of these stories they should not be taken as true. They serve some other purpose, *viz.*, the establishment of the absence of variety, or the oneness of *Ātman* (Brahman).

²⁵³ 186

CHAPTER III
ON ADVAITA

⁹ *We contend, etc.*—It is said in the *Śruti* that the worshipper ultimately realises the oneness of *Ātman*.

²⁵⁴ 188

CHAPTER III
ON ADVAITA

devotion and spiritual practices implied in such *Śruti*¹ passages as “Oh dear, *Ātman* alone is to be seen”, “The *Ātman* who is free from.....”, “He desired”, “It should be worshipped as *Ātman*”, etc.? Further, what is the utility of *Karma* (Vedic works) like *Agnihotra*, etc.?

(Reply) — Yes, listen to the reasons. *Āsrama* signifies those who are competent to follow the disciplines of life as prescribed for the different stages.² The word (in the text) also includes those who belong to the (different) castes³ and therefore who observe the rites (prescribed for those castes). The application of the word “*Āsrama*” implies that these castes are also three in number. How? It is because they are endowed with three kinds of intellect, *viz.*, low,⁴ middle⁵ and high.⁶ This discipline, as well as the (various) *Karmas*²⁵⁵ (works) are prescribed for the *Āsramis* of low and average intellect, by the *Śruti*, out of compassion, so that they also, following the correct disciplines, may attain to the superior knowledge. That⁷ this discipline is not for those who possess the

In the previous *Kārikās* it has been proved that the scriptural statements regarding creation, etc., do not conflict with the non-dual *Ātman*. This *Kārikā* states that the prescription of various disciplines associated with different *Varnas* and *Āsramas* also does not contradict the view of the non-dual *Ātman*. The statements regarding creation, etc., as well as the various spiritual disciplines are only meant for the unenlightened in order to assist them to understand the oneness of *Ātman*.

¹ *Śruti passages* — It is because all these *Śruti* passages require, on the part of the students, either meditation, or spiritual disciplines or devotion. This has no meaning if the non-dual *Ātman* alone is the Reality.

² *Stages* — These are the orders of *Brahmacharya*, *Gārhaṣṭhya*, *Vānaprastha* and *Sannyāsa*.

³ *Castes* — The word *Varna*, here, implies the three castes, *viz.*, the *Brāhmaṇa*, *Kṣatriya* and *Vaiśya*.

⁴ *Low* — Those who look upon the phenomenal universe (the *Kārya Brahman*) as real,⁺ are said to possess low intellect.*

+ but do not trouble about theories of creation

* intellectual children

⁵ *Middle* — Those who worship the *Kāraṇa Brahman*, that is god as the cause of the universe, are said to possess mediocre intellect, because they still live on the causal plane.=

= intellectual youths

⁶ *High* — Those who have realised the non-dual (*Advaita*) *Ātman* are said to possess superior power of understanding.+

+ mental adults

255 189

CHAPTER III ON ADVAITA

⁷ *That, etc.* — As the possessor of the knowledge of non-dual *Ātman* is free from all distinction of *Āsrama* and *Varna*, it is therefore not necessary for him to perform any *Vedic ritual* or practise any spiritual discipline.

right understanding, *i.e.*, who are already endowed with the Knowledge of *Ātman* which is one and without a second, is supported by such *Śruti* passages as “That which cannot be known by the mind, but by which, they say, the mind is able to think, that alone know to be Brahman, and not that which people here adore”, “That thou art”, “All this is verily *Ātman*”, etc.

(“Hindi²⁵⁶ passage omitted here”)

17. *The dualists obstinately cling to the conclusions arrived at by their own enquiries (as being the truth). So they contradict one another; whereas the Advaitin finds no conflict with them.*

ŚANKARA’S COMMENTARY.

The knowledge of the non-dual Self is established by both scriptures and reasoning. Therefore, it is alone the perfect knowledge. Other views, on account of their being devoid of the bases of scriptures and reasoning, lead to false systems. The views of the dualists are false on account of this additional reason, that they are the fruitful sources of the vices of attachment and hatred,²⁵⁷ etc. How is this? The dualists following the views of Kapila, Kanāda, Buddha and Jina,* etc., hold firmly to the conclusions as outlined and formulated by their respective schools. They¹ think that the view they hold is alone the ultimate Reality, whereas other views are not so. Therefore they become attached to their own views²⁵⁸ and hate others whom they consider to be opposed to them. Thus being overcome with attachment and hatred, they contradict one another, the reason being the adherence to their own convictions as the only truth.

The meaning of the *Kārikā* is this: The *Āsramas* and the *Varnas* described in the *Śruti*, and the different functions ascribed to them have only a disciplinary value; the main purpose is to train the student to understand the unity of *Jiva* and Brahman.

²⁵⁶ 190

CHAPTER III
ON ADVAITA

²⁵⁷ The original editor added underlined by hand

* founder of Jainism The original editor inserted footnote by hand

This *Kārikā* proves the superiority of the *Advaita* knowledge over other views as it does not contradict the scriptural statements regarding creation and exercises (*Upāsana*), and also because it does not clash with other theories. *Advaita* alone harmonises all other doctrines and theories. It alone gives the rationale of other relative views regarding Truth.

¹ *They, etc.*—It is because the dualists take the relative truth to be the ultimate view of Reality.

²⁵⁸ 191

CHAPTER III
ON ADVAITA

But our view, *viz.*, the unity of *Ātman*, based upon the identity of all²⁵⁹, supported by the Vedas, does not conflict with others who find contradictions among themselves,—as² one’s limbs such as hands, feet, etc., do not conflict with one another. Hence, the purport of the *Śruti* is that the knowledge of the oneness of *Ātman*, as it is free from the blemish of attachment and aversion, is the true knowledge.

(“Hindi²⁶⁰ passage omitted here”)

18. *As non-duality is the ultimate Reality, therefore duality is said to be its effect (Kārya or Bheda). The dualists perceive duality either way (i.e., both in the Absolute and in the phenomena). Therefore the non-dual position does not conflict with the dualist’s position.*

ŚANKARA’S COMMENTARY.

How is it that the non-dualist does not conflict with the dualist? The reason is thus stated:—As¹ non-duality is the ultimate²⁶¹ Reality, therefore duality or multiplicity is only its effect. The scriptural passages such as, “He is one and without a second”,

²⁵⁹ The original editor added underline by hand

² *As, etc.*—If in the course of physical movements, the hands or feet strike any part of the body, the body does not feel irritated as the body knows the limbs to be its own integral parts. Similarly the non-dualist, on account of his knowledge of identity with all created beings and thoughts, does not feel angered at the hostility of his opponents, as he knows his so-called opponents to be his own self. The Knower of Brahman realises the entire world as the projection of his thought (*Kalpanā*). The thoughts are also identical with Brahman as the various dream-objects are identical with the mind. Therefore the theories of others are not in conflict with non-duality because they are also identical with Brahman. *Comp.* the scriptural passage “All this is verily Brahman”.

²⁶⁰ 192

CHAPTER III ON ADVAITA

It may be asked in view of the differences between the dualistic and the non-dualistic views, how it can be said that the latter does not find any contradiction with the former. The text of the *Kārikā* gives the reply. It says that the so-called duality does not exist at all.^Δ Whatever exists is non-dual Brahman alone. Therefore, the non-dualist cannot quarrel with a thing which is absolutely non-existent (unreal).

^Δ from standpoint of Brahman

¹ *As, etc.*—We learn from scriptural evidence that duality is the effect of the non-dual unity. The effect, relatively speaking, is other than the cause, otherwise one cannot make a distinction between the cause and the effect. Again the *Śruti* says that all effects consisting of names are mere figures of speech, like the effects of clay, and therefore unreal. The cause, like the clay, alone is real. Therefore effects, being unreal, cannot contradict the cause. Hence non-duality does not clash with duality. Here the word “*Bheda*,” implying *effect* is not used in the *Sāmkhya* sense of modification.

²⁶¹ The original editor added underline by hand

“He created fire”, etc., support this view. It² is further borne out by reason as duality is not perceived in the states of swoon, deep sleep or trance (*samādhi*), in the absence of the activity of the mind.⁼ Therefore duality is said to be the effect of non-duality. But the dualists perceive duality alone either³ way, that is, both from the highest²⁶² and the relative standpoints. As duality is perceived only by the deluded and non-duality by us who are enlightened⁴,* therefore our view does not clash with their views. For, the scripture also says, “Indra (the Supreme Lord) created all these diverse forms through *Māyā*”,⁺ “There exists nothing like duality”. It⁵ is like the case of a man on a spirited elephant, who knows that none can oppose him, but who yet does not drive his beast upon a lunatic who²⁶³ though standing on the ground, shouts at the former, “I am also on a elephant, drive your beast on me”. Therefore, from the standpoint of Truth²⁶⁴, the Knower of Brahman is the very self of (even) the dualists. Hence, our, *viz.*, the non-dualistic view does not clash with other views.

(“Hindi²⁶⁵ passage omitted here”)

² *It is, etc.*—One perceives duality on account of the activity of the mind. When the mind is at rest, duality is not perceived as in the case of deep sleep, swoon or *Samādhi*. Therefore duality is the effect. The non-dualist admits the fact of duality during the state of ignorance. But he denies its reality. Therefore from the standpoint of Reality, non-duality does not contradict duality, as the latter is really non-existent.

⁼ also in drugged states, therefore this is not realization. The original editor inserted footnote by hand

³ *Either way*—That is to say, the dualist holds duality both as the highest Reality and as the relative Reality.

²⁶² The original editor strike out and replaced “absolute” to “highest” by hand

⁴ *Enlightened*—It is because our view is supported both by scripture and reason.

* We know the truth The original editor inserted footnote by hand

⁺ ultimately all things are one. The original editor inserted footnote by hand

⁵ *It is, etc.*—The dualist is self-deluded like the madman who, though standing on the earth, thinks that he is really on an elephant. The person who is driving the elephant does not listen to the foolish cry of the lunatic. Similarly, the dualist possessed of a partial view of the truth, thinks of himself as having realised the ultimate Truth, and throws his challenge to the non-dualist calling upon him to refute his position. But the non-dualist, secure in his position, laughs at this challenge and he bears no ill-will against the dualist as he is the very self of the dualist, his so-called opponent.

²⁶³ 193

CHAPTER III
ON ADVAITA

²⁶⁴ The original editor strike out and replaced “Reality” to “Truth” by hand

²⁶⁵ 194

CHAPTER III
ON ADVAITA

19.+ This unborn (changeless, non-dual Brahman) appears to undergo modification only on account of *Māyā* (illusion) and not otherwise. For, if this modification were real, the Immortal (Brahman) would become mortal.

ŚANKARA'S COMMENTARY.

If duality¹ were the effect of non-duality, then it could be contended that duality also, like the *Advaita*, is the Supreme Reality. In order to remove this doubt which may crop up in the mind of some, it is said that non-duality which is the Supreme Reality appears manifold through *Māyā*², like the one moon appearing as many to one with defective eye-sight and the rope appearing (to the deluded)⁼ as the snake, the water-line, etc. This manifold is not real, for *Ātman* is without any part. An object endowed with parts may be said to undergo modification by a change of its parts, as clay undergoes differentiation into pots, etc. Therefore the purport is that the changeless (unborn) *Ātman* which is without parts cannot, in any manner, admit of distinction excepting through *Māyā* or the illusion of²⁶⁶ the perceiver.⁼ If³ the appearance of manifoldness were real, then the *Ātman*, the ever-unborn and non-dual, which is, by its very nature, immortal would become mortal as though fire would become cold (which is an absurdity). The⁴ reversal of one's own nature is not desired by any—as it is opposed to all means of proofs. Therefore the Reality—which is *Ātman*—changeless and unborn, appears to undergo a modification only through *Māyā*. Hence it follows that duality is not the ultimate Reality.

("Hindi passage omitted here")

+ here the book takes reader a step higher than last verse; giving a truer view. The original editor inserted footnote by hand

¹ *Duality, etc.*—For, the effect always partakes of the nature of the cause.

² *Māyā—Māyā* explains the appearance of the manifold consistently; not the *Parināmavāda* (or the theory of actual transformation) adumbrated by the *Sāṃkhya*s.

⁼ one who has not enquired, i.e. the ignorant. The original editor inserted footnote by hand

²⁶⁶ 195

CHAPTER III
ON ADVAITA

⁼ as in dream. The original editor inserted footnote by hand

³ *If, etc.*—For, by changing into the universe, the non-dual *Ātman* which is admitted to be immortal, would undergo destruction and become mortal. A thing cannot retain its own nature while undergoing a change.

⁴ *The reversal, etc.*—One of the tests of Reality is that it never admits of any change of its innate nature. The non-dual *Ātman*, being the Reality, can never really change into the dual universe. Therefore the *act* of creation or modification is an illusion. Hegel's theory of *logical necessity* or Bradley's Absolute *somehow* becoming the phenomena cannot be borne out by reason.

20. *The disputants (i.e., the dualists) contend that the ever-unborn (changeless) entity (Ātman) undergoes a change. How could an entity which is changeless and immortal partake of the nature of the mortal?*

ŚANKARA'S²⁶⁷ COMMENTARY.

Some interpreters of the Upanishads, who¹ are garrulous and who put on the airs of the Knowers of Brahman, admit that the Reality—the *Ātman*—which is by nature ever-unborn (changeless) and immortal, really passes² into birth (*i.e.*, becomes the universe). If,³ according to them, the *Ātman* really passes into birth, it must undergo destruction. But⁴, how is it possible for the *Ātman* which is, by its very nature, ever-unborn (changeless) and immortal to become mortal, *i.e.*, to be subject to destruction? It can never become mortal, which is contrary to its very nature.

("Hindi passage omitted here")

21. *The immortal cannot become mortal, nor can the mortal ever become immortal. For, it is never possible for a thing to change its nature.*

ŚANKARA'S COMMENTARY.

As in common experience the immortal never becomes mortal, nor the mortal ever becomes immortal; therefore²⁶⁸ it is, in no way, possible for a thing to reverse its nature, *i.e.*, to become otherwise than what it is. Fire can never change its character of being hot.

("Hindi passage omitted here")

²⁶⁷ 196

CHAPTER III
ON ADVAITA

¹ *Who, etc.* — *i.e.*, who, in reality, do not know anything about Brahman.

² *Passes, etc.* — That is, it creates itself into the manifold universe.

³ *If, etc.* — For, destruction is the inevitable consequence of all objects that are born.

⁴ *But, etc.* — Birth means change of nature. An entity cannot be changeless while giving birth to other objects. Hence the theory that *Ātman* somehow changes into the universe is fallacious.

²⁶⁸ 197

CHAPTER III
ON ADVAITA

22. *How can he, who believes that the naturally immortal entity becomes mortal, maintain that the Immortal, after passing through change, retains its changeless nature?+*

ŚANKARA'S COMMENTARY.

The disputant who maintains that the naturally immortal entity becomes mortal, *i.e.*, really passes into birth, makes¹ the futile proposition that that entity before creation is by its very nature, immortal. How can he assert that the entity is of immortal nature if it be admitted that it passes² into birth? That is to say, how can the immortal retain its immortal nature of changelessness if it should undergo a change? It cannot, by any means, be so. Those³ who hold that the *Ātman* passes into birth (*i.e.*, undergoes a change), cannot speak of the *Ātman* as ever birthless. Everything, according to them, must be mortal. Hence⁴ there cannot be a state called liberation.

("Hindi²⁶⁹ passage omitted here")

23. *The passing into birth may be real or illusory. Both these views are equally mentioned in the Śruti. That which is supported by Śruti and corroborated by reason, is alone true and not the other.*

ŚANKARA'S COMMENTARY.

(Objection)—Those¹ who do not admit the change or the passing into birth of Brahman, cannot justify the scriptural passages which support creation.

+ this is the reply to pantheism and to bergsonThe original editor inserted footnote by hand

It may be contended that Brahman, as the cause, is immortal before creation. But as effect, subsequent to the creation, it becomes mortal. Therefore there is no contradiction in associating with Brahman both immortal and mortal aspects which apply to its two states. This *Kārikā* refutes this contention.

¹ *Makes, etc.*—For, according to these disputants, the cause (*i.e.*, Brahman), even before creation must contain within it the possibility of change; otherwise it cannot undergo a change. If this were admitted then the cause can no longer be called immortal.

² *Passes, etc.*—If an entity undergoes a change, that shows its impermanent characteristic inasmuch as it admits of the destruction of its inherent nature.

³ *Those, etc.*—The so-called Absolute of the dualists is also a mortal entity. For, nothing that passes through birth, can be immortal.

⁴ *Hence, etc.*—That is to say, *Mukti* or liberation in the sense of an immutable and permanent condition becomes an absurdity.

²⁶⁹ 198

CHAPTER III
ON ADVAITA

(Reply)—Yes, we also admit the existence of scriptural texts supporting creation as actual. But such texts serve other purposes. Though the question has already been disposed of, the contention is here again made and refuted in order to allay all doubts regarding the applicability or otherwise of the scriptural texts to the subject-matter² that is going to be dealt with. The scriptural text regarding creation is the same, whether the creation of things is taken in the real sense or as a mere illusion produced by the juggler.

(Objection)²⁷⁰—If words admit of metaphorical and direct meanings, it is reasonable to understand the words according to their direct meaning.

(Reply)—We do not admit it. For,³ creation, in any sense other than illusion, is unknown to us, and further, no purpose is served by admitting (the act of) creation. All⁴ creation, whether metaphorical or actual, refers to the apparent creation caused by *Avidyā* but not to any creation from the standpoint of Reality. For the scripture says, “Though existing both within and without, he (the *Ātman*) is (really) changeless”. Therefore we have stated in the foregoing part of this work only what is supported by reason and finally determined by the *Śruti* in such words as, “He is one and without a second and is free from birth and death”. That alone is the true import of the scripture and not anything else.

(“Hindi²⁷¹ passage omitted here”)

¹ *Those, etc.*—There are some scriptural passages which state that the *Ātman* brings about the creation by following the law of causality.

² *Subject-matter*—The purport of the *Śruti* is not to establish any act of creation, whether actual or illusory, but to prove the *Ajāti* or eternal changelessness of Brahman.

²⁷⁰ 199

CHAPTER III ON ADVAITA

³ *For, etc.*—According to the *Advaita* philosophy, all creation, whether actual or metaphorical (secondary), whether in dream or in the waking state, is equally illusory from the standpoint of Reality. Further, if creation be admitted as real, no purpose whatsoever is served by creation. It does not help anyone to attain to liberation.

⁴ *All, etc.*—The creation of objects in dream is called metaphorical or secondary in comparison with the creation of objects such as pot, etc., in the waking state. As the dream objects become unreal in the waking state, similarly the objects perceived in the waking state are known to be unreal when one attains to the knowledge of *Ātman*. Therefore from the standpoint of *Ātman*, all objects, perceived in dream or the waking state, are equally unreal.

²⁷¹ 200

CHAPTER III ON ADVAITA

24. From such scriptural passages as, "There is no multiplicity in Ātman," "Indra through Māyā," we know that the Ātman, though ever unborn, verily appears to have become many (only) through Māyā.

ŚANKARA'S COMMENTARY.

It may be asked how the changelessness (*Ajāti*), of Ātman is the final conclusion of the Śruti. In reply it is said that if creation were real, then the existence of the variety of objects would be absolutely real. Consequently there ought not to be scriptural texts implying their unreality. But there are such scriptural texts as, "In this (Ātman) there is no multiplicity," etc., which negate the existence of duality. Therefore creation (imaginary) has been imagined in order to help the understanding of the non-duality of Ātman. It¹ is like the story of *Prāna*. And this is further borne out by the use of the word, "Māyā," denoting unreality (in connection with creation) in such scriptural texts as "Indra² through *Māyā* assumed diverse forms".

(Objection) – The word denotes knowledge (*Prajñā*).

(Reply) – It is true, but sense-knowledge is illusory. The word³ "Māyā" is used to denote that (sense-) knowledge. Hence there is no blemish (in such use²⁷² of the word). The word "Māyābhiḥ" (through *Māyā*) in the scriptural text means through sense-knowledge, which is illusory. For, the scripture again says, "Though unborn he appears to be born in many ways." Therefore Ātman passes into birth through *Māyā* alone. The word "Tu" ("verily") in the text (of the *Kārikā*) denotes certainty, that is to say, it⁴ indicates that creation is possible only through *Māyā* or illusion and not in any real sense. For, birthlessness and birth in various forms cannot be predicated of the same object, as fire cannot be both hot and cold. Further, from such Śruti passages as "How can there be any delusion and any grief for him who sees unity," etc., we know that the knowledge of the unity of Ātman is alone the conclusion of the Śruti on account

¹ *It is, etc.* – As the Śruti described the disputes of *Prāna* and the sense-organs in order to prove the superiority of the vital breath (*Mukhya Prāna*), so also creation has been described in order to help the understanding of the student to grasp the unity of Ātman. (See *Kārikā* 3-15.)

² *Indra* – The word is used here in the sense of the Supreme Lord.

³ *The word, etc.* – The word "Māyā" is sometimes used to denote empirical knowledge or the knowledge derived by the contact of the sense-organs with their objects. This knowledge does not indicate the Highest Consciousness or the knowledge of Reality. Hence creation through *Māyā* is necessarily illusory.

²⁷² 201

CHAPTER III
ON ADVAITA

⁴ *It, etc.* – If one believes in creation then the only plausible explanation is that of the *Vivartavāda*⁺ and not any other theory such as *Parināmavāda*.

⁺ *Vivartavāda* is theory that God created world out of his own substance (see p.212)

of the (good) result it brings to the knower. Again, the perception of differentiation implied by creation has been condemned in such *Śruti* passages as, “He goes from death to death (who sees here many)”.

(“Hindi²⁷³ passage omitted here”)

25. Again, by the negation of creation (*Sambhuti*) the passing into birth is refused. Causality (in respect of *Ātman*) is denied by such a statement as, “who can cause it to pass into birth?”

ŚANKARA’S COMMENTARY.

By the condemnation of *Sambhuti*¹ (i.e., *Hiranyagarbha*) as something fit to be meditated upon, in such *Śruti*² passage as, “They enter into blind darkness who worship *Sambhuti*,” the whole³ creation (evolution) is negated. For, if *Sambhuti* were absolutely true²⁷⁴ then its condemnation, in such manner, would not be reasonable.

(Objection)—The⁴ condemnation of *Sambhuti* is meant here for co-ordinating *Sambhuti* with *Vināśa*⁵ as is the case with the *Śruti* passage,⁶ “They enter into blind darkness who worship *Avidyā*.”

²⁷³ 202

CHAPTER III ON ADVAITA

¹ *Sambhuti*—The word “*Bhuti*” means “*Aisvarya*” (“Hindi passage omitted here”) i.e., power, and the word *Sambhuti* indicates one who possesses all powers. It is a deity known as *Hiranyagarbha* (The Golden Germ) who is the first of all the evolved effects and from whom, as the matrix, the whole evolution proceeds. It is described in the *Vēdāntic* texts as the summation of all subtle bodies.

² *Śruti passage*—This is a quotation from the *Íśa-Upanishad* (12). This *Kārikā* is based on this text of the *Upanishad*.

³ *Whole, etc.*—By the condemnation of *Hiranyagarbha* from whom the entire creation is said to proceed, the whole of the subsequent effects is negated. Therefore the entire effect which is seen in the form of the manifold, is unreal.

²⁷⁴ The original editor strike out and replaced “real” to “true” by hand

⁴ *The, etc.*—The reference is to the text of the *Íśa-Upanishad* (14) which runs thus: “Those who worship the unmanifested *Prakriti* and *Hiranyagarbha* (Destruction, *Vināśa*) together, get over death through the worship of *Hiranyagarbha* and attain immortality through the worship of *Prakriti*”. The contention of the opponent is this: The condemnation of *Sambhuti* is not for the purpose of proving its unreality. Its purpose is to combine the worship of *Prakriti* and *Hiranyagarbha*. The exclusive worship of *Hiranyagarbha* is condemned. (see Śankara’s Commentary on verse 14 of the *Íśa-Upanishad*).

⁵ *Vināśa*—The word ‘*Vināśa*’ means that object whose characteristic attribute is destruction, the abstract being here used for the concrete. *Vināśa* means the worship of

(Reply)—Yes, it is indeed true that the condemnation of the exclusive worship of *Sambhuti* is made for the purpose of co-ordinating the meditation regarding *Sambhuti* with the *Karma* (ritual) known as *Vināśa*—Still it should not be forgotten that as the purpose of the *Karma* known as *Vināśa* is to transcend death,—whose nature is the desire consequent upon the inborn ignorance of man—so also the aim⁷ of the co-ordination²⁷⁵ of the meditation on *Devatā* (*i.e.*, *Sambhuti* or *Hiranyagarbha*) with the *Karma* (called *Vināśa*), undertaken for the purpose of the purification of the mind of man, is to transcend death,—which⁸ is of the nature of the attachment to work and its results characterised by the dual hankering after the end and the means. For, thus alone man becomes free from death which is of the nature of impurity and is characterised by the dual impulse of end and means. Therefore the co-ordination of the meditation on *Devatā* and of *Karma*—which is *Avidyā*—leads to freedom from death. Thus⁹ the realisation of *Vidyā* (the highest knowledge), characterised by the identity of the

Hiranyagarbha. The contention of the opponent is that the purpose of the condemnation of the exclusive worship of *Sambhuti* is to prescribe the co-ordination of its meditation with some ritualistic worship and not to imply the unreality of *Sambhuti* or the first cause.

⁶ *Śruti, etc.*—The reference is to the 9th verse of the *Íśa-Upanishad* which condemns *Vidyā* (the exclusive meditation on the deities) and *Avidyā* (the exclusive ritualistic ceremonies without any meditation) and prescribes their co-ordination.

⁷ *Aim, etc.*—The purport of the 9th verse of the *Íśa-Upanishad* is this:—*Avidyā* is something other than *Vidyā* or knowledge, hence it is *Karma*; for *Karma* is opposed to knowledge. Those who are continuously performing *Agnihotra*-sacrifice, etc., alone, fall into darkness. Those who having given up *Karma*, are always bent upon acquiring the knowledge of the deities, fall into greater darkness. Who knows that both these should simultaneously be followed by the same person, he alone, so combining the two, *gradually* secures the one desirable end. That is to say, his mind is purified of all impurities. The pure mind, then, is able to grasp the meaning of the *Upanishad* which alone enables the student to know the Ultimate Reality. The aim of such *Karma* as the *Agnihotra*-sacrifice, etc., prescribed by the scripture, is to turn the mind of the student away from the pursuit of worldly objects, not sanctioned by the scriptures. By the co-ordination of *Karma* with meditation (on the deities) the student frees himself from all impulse of desires. Even then he has not realised the highest Truth which is possible only through *Jñānam* or knowledge.

²⁷⁵ 203

CHAPTER III ON ADVAITA

⁸ *Which is, etc.*—Death means the endless cycle of birth and death which is inevitable unless one has attained to the knowledge of Brahman. The endless chain is caused by the desire for relative objects.

⁹ *Thus, etc.*—The knowledge of Brahman can never be combined with the co-ordination of *Karma* and *Upāsanā* as the latter belongs to the realm of ignorance. Brahmadevīyā and ignorance are as unrelated as light and darkness.

Supreme Self and *Jiva*, is inevitable¹⁰ for one who has transcended death,—of the form of *Avidyā* and characterised by the dual impulses (of the means and the end),—and who is established in renunciation and also devoted to the meaning of the import of the Upanishad. It is therefore said thus¹¹: *Brahmavidyā* (i.e., the knowledge of Brahman),—which is the means for the attainment of Immortality and which is (from the relative standpoint) *subsequent* to the state of the antecedent *Avidyā* (ignorance),—being related to the same person (who is still in the state of ignorance), is said to be co-ordinated with *Avidyā*. Hence the negation of *Sambhuti* is for the purpose of condemnation as it serves a purpose other¹² than the knowledge of Brahman which (alone) is the means to the attainment of Immortality. Though it serves the purpose of removing impurity yet the devotion²⁷⁶ to *Sambhuti* does not enable one to realise (directly) immortality. (Therefore the condemnation of *Sambhuti* is reasonable). Hence, *Sambhuti*, being thus negated, it can be said to have only a relative existence. Having regard to the unity of *Ātman*, the ultimate Reality, creation (symbolised by *Hiranyagarbha*) which is known as immortal¹³ (only from the relative standpoint) is negated. Such¹⁴ being the case, who can bring into being the *Jiva* who is seen as created only through illusion (*Māyā*) and who exists only while ignorance (*Avidyā*) lasts? This *Jiva* reverts to its original nature (of Brahman) with the disappearance of *Avidyā*. For, no one can verily bring into being the snake²⁷⁷ superimposed upon the rope through *Avidyā* and which disappears when one knows (the true nature of the rope). Therefore no one can produce or create the *Jiva*. The

¹⁰ *Inevitable*—There is no other obstacle for the realisation of the Supreme Reality when all the impurities have been removed by the practice of karma and *Upāsana*.

¹¹ *Thus, etc.*—No co-ordination is possible between the knowledge of Brahman and any other relative knowledge. Still it is found that the student, at first, through a process of relative knowledge gets his mind purified and *then* becomes fit for *Brahma-Jñānam*. Thus from a relative standpoint it is seen that the knowledge of *Brahman* arises *subsequent* to the relative knowledge. Really speaking, the knowledge of self is ever present and ignorance is non-existent. As from the relative standpoint it is seen that and ignorant person gradually attain to the highest knowledge, therefore from that standpoint *Vidyā* and *Avidyā* are said to be related to the same person.

¹² *Other than, etc.*—That is to say, the purpose of the meditation on *Sambhuti* is the purification of the mind. As this is not the same as the knowledge of Brahman, therefore, *Sambhuti* is condemned.

²⁷⁶ 204

CHAPTER III ON ADVAITA

¹³ *Immortal*—In comparison with the phenomenal *Jiva*, *Sambhuti* or *Hiranyagarbha* is said to be immortal, as the cosmic soul exists even after the death of the *Jiva*. But from the standpoint of Brahman, *Hiranyagarbha* is also mortal and impermanent. Therefore it is condemned.

¹⁴ *Such, etc.*—There is no act of creation from the standpoint of Reality; because the very idea of creation is due to ignorance. Creation is an idea of the mind and hence negated.

²⁷⁷ The original editor deleted “(falsely)” by hand

words “*Ka nu*” (“who can?”) in the text, being in the form of interrogation, refute the idea of causality. The purport of the *Kārikā* is that there can be no cause of a thing which is seen to be born only through ignorance and which disappears with the destruction of the said ignorance. The *Śruti* also says, “This¹⁵ *Ātman* is not born from any cause nor is anything born from it.”

(“Hindi²⁷⁸ passage omitted here”)

26. As the *Śruti* passage, “It is not this, not this,” on account of the incomprehensibility of *Ātman*, negates all (dualistic) ideas described (as the means for the attainment of *Ātman*), therefore the birthless (*Ātman* alone) exists (and not any duality).

ŚANKARA’S COMMENTARY.

The *Śruti*¹ in such passage as, “This is the final instruction. It is not this, not this,” has determined the nature of *Ātman* by the refutation of all specific characteristics. But knowing this *Ātman* to be incomprehensible² (to the ordinary mind), the *Śruti* has again sought to establish the very same *Ātman* through other means and finally refuted what have been described (as the means for the attainment of *Ātman*). That is to say, the *Śruti*, in such passage as, “It is not this, not this,” demonstrates the incomprehensibility of *Ātman* or in other words, refutes the idea that *Ātman*³ can be realised or understood.

¹⁵ *This, etc.*—That is to say, the idea of causality cannot apply to Brahman. It is only an explanation applied in the phenomenal world due to the ignorance of the real nature of Brahman.

²⁷⁸ 207

CHAPTER III ON ADVAITA

¹ *The Śruti*—The reference is to the *Bṛihadāraṇyaka Upanishad* (2. 3. 1) which begins with the statement: “There are two forms of Brahman, the material and the immaterial, the mortal and the immortal, the solid and the fluid....” The chapter ends thus: “Next follows the teaching (of Brahman) by ‘No, no’; for, there is nothing else higher than this (if one says): ‘it is not so’....” Those who cannot meditate on Brahman, free from all attributes, are advised to concentrate on some characteristics (of Brahman) superimposed upon Brahman for the facility of meditation. Then the students are asked to negate those attributes also, because thus alone can they realise the undifferentiated Brahman which alone is the Supreme Reality.

² *Incomprehensible*—It is because the knowledge of the Self is extremely subtle.

³ *Ātman, etc.*—That is to say, the *Ātman* is never the effect of any thought or words. It is not an object of meditation or speech. For it is our very self. Thus the *Śruti* advises the students to dissociate from *Ātman* all words, or thoughts which were at first accepted as means for its realisation. That which is thought by the mind is merely an idea. It is changeable and negatable. Hence it is not Reality. Therefore any idea associated with *Ātman*⁺ is not the *Ātman* itself.

+ when regarded as different from *Ātman*

Those⁴ who do not understand that the means (suggested for the realisation of *Ātman*) have only one purpose, *viz.*,²⁷⁹ the realisation of the end (*i.e.*, the non-dual *Ātman*), make a mistake by thinking that what are suggested as the means have the same reality as the end. In order to remove this error, the *Śruti* negates the reality⁵ of the means by⁶ pointing out the incomprehensibility of *Ātman*, as its reason. Subsequently,⁷ the student knows that the means serve their purpose by pointing only to the end and the end itself is always one and changeless. To such a student the knowledge of the unborn Self which is both within and without reveals itself.⁸

(“Hindi²⁸⁰ passage omitted here”)

⁴ *Those, etc.*—The unwary students, unable to understand the real significance of *Vedānta*, make the mistake of thinking that the attributes which are superimposed upon Brahman are as real as Brahman itself. That is to say, they think that these attributes have an independent existence.

²⁷⁹ 208

CHAPTER III ON ADVAITA

⁵ *Reality*—That is to say, a reality independent of Brahman.

⁶ *By pointing out*—This is the Advaitic method of reasoning. Brahman or *Ātman*, being beyond time, space and causality, is ever incomprehensible through any empirical means. It is the eternal subject having no object through which one can comprehend it. This incomprehensibility of *Ātman* is the very reason for refuting any characteristic that may be otherwise associated with it. If *Ātman* can be known by any positive attribute, it no longer remains incomprehensible. It becomes an object of our thought like any other perceived object. Such *Ātman* can never be the changeless Absolute.

⁷ *Subsequently, etc.*—The discriminating student, through his superior power of reasoning, refutes all attributes falsely superimposed upon *Ātman*. He realises that these attributes have no independent reality. Then he understands that all attributes are the same as the non-dual Brahman, as one who knows the true nature of the rope realises that what he formerly thought of as the snake is nothing but the rope. That which was superimposed upon the rope is identical with the substratum. Only the idea of the existence of the snake *apart from* the rope is illusion. Similarly all attributes of *Ātman*, such as materiality or immateriality, etc., are, in reality, identical with *Ātman*. To concede any separate existence to the attributes independent of *Ātman* is illusion. *Ātman*, the non-dual, changeless and causeless Reality, alone exists. All that exists is *Ātman*. Even that which is imagined as means for the realisation of *Ātman* is not separate from *Ātman* as the reflection of an object is not separate from the object.

⁸ *Itself*—That is to say, the final revelation of *Ātman* does not depend upon *Śruti* or anything else. A knower of *Ātman* realises that *Ātman* always* exists and is self-luminous; no external means can illumine *Ātman*.

*because it is impossible to think or do anything without atman

²⁸⁰ 209

CHAPTER III ON ADVAITA

27. That²⁸¹ which is unchanging²⁸² appears to pass into birth through illusion (Māyā) and not from the standpoint of Reality. He who thinks that this passing into birth is real asserts, as a matter of fact, that what is born is born again (and so on without end).⁼

ŚANKARA'S COMMENTARY.

Thus hundreds of scriptural passages conclude that the essence which is the non-dual and birthless Self, existing both within and without, is the only Reality, and that nothing else, besides the Self, exists. Now, in order to determine this very Reality through reason, again it is stated:—

(Objection)—It may also be the fact that if Reality be incomprehensible* then the knowledge of Self is unreal.

(Reply)—No, this cannot be, for¹ the effect is comprehend. As the effects, that is to say, creation (of new things), come from a really existent magician through *Māyā*

²⁸¹ 210

CHAPTER III
ON ADVAITA

²⁸² The original editor strike out and replaced “ever existend” to “unchanging” by hand

⁼ each cause must be preceded by another cause, and so on ad infinitum. The original editor inserted footnote by hand

* because we say It cannot be reached by mind or senses.

It has already been established on scriptural evidence that the *Ātman* which is the Supreme Reality is birthless and non-dual. All duality is mere imagination due to ignorance and hence unreal. This is now established independently by reason. Śankara always maintains a dual aspect. For those who believe in scripture, Śankara quotes the scripture to establish his point. Again for those who do not believe in the Vedas as the supreme authority but who depend upon reason alone, Śankara gives rational proof about his conclusion. The original editor inserted footnote by hand

¹ For, etc.—The opponent believes in causality but denies *Ātman*. This is illogical. If one admits the creation of the universe then one must believe in its cause also. Every effect presupposes a cause. Even every illusion must have a substratum. A positive effect cannot be produced from a non-existing cause. The position of the *Advaitin* is this: If you believe in the universe as a created entity, you must admit its cause, namely, Brahman. The positive effect of the universe cannot come from a non-existing cause. Brahman or *Ātman* does not really create the universe nor transform itself into the universe, as the rope does not really create the snake nor does it become the snake. The appearance of creation is due to ignorance. Therefore the theory of *Māyā* or *vivarta*⁺ which posits a real *Ātman* is the best possible explanation of the universe when such universe⁼ is recognised as a fact.

⁺ *Vivarta* is a cause producing an effect without the cause being changed itself, as a magician producing effects without himself altering

⁼ as an entity

(magic), so also the comprehension of the effects, in the form of the creation of the universe, leads us to infer the *existence of the Ātman*, the Supreme Reality, who, like the magician, is, as it were, the substratum of the illusion which is seen in the form of the creation of the universe. For, the creation of the universe is possible only from a Reality, *i.e.*, an existing cause, like the birth of the effects, such as the elephant, etc., conjured up through illusion (by an existing magician); and this creation is never possible with a non-existing cause. It is not, however, possible for²⁸³ the unborn *Ātman* to really pass into birth. Or,² the first line of the text may be explained in another manner. As a really existing entity, such as the rope, etc., passes into such effects as the snake, etc., only *through Māyā* and not in reality, similarly, the real and the incomprehensible *Ātman* is seen to pass into birth, in the form of the universe, like the rope becoming the snake, only through illusion.* The birthless *Ātman* cannot pass into birth from the standpoint of Reality. But²⁸⁴⁼ disputant who holds that the unborn *Ātman*, the Supreme Reality, is really born in the form of the universe, cannot assert that the *unborn* is born, as this implies a contradiction.³ In that case he must admit that, in fact, what is (already) born, again passes into birth. If, thus, birth is predicated of that which is already born, then the disputant is faced with what is known in logic as *regressus ad infinitum*. Therefore it is established that the Essence which is *Ātman* is ever unborn and non-dual.

(“Hindi²⁸⁵ passage omitted here”)

283 211

CHAPTER III
ON ADVAITA

² *Or, etc.* The first interpretation of the first line points to *Ātman* as the instrumental cause (*Nimitta Kāraṇa*) of the universe, though the very perception of the creation is due to illusion. This interpretation gives stress on the *Reality* of *Ātman*. The second interpretation gives stress on the fact that the idea of the unborn *Ātman* passing into birth is due to ignorance. The process of creation and creation itself are illusory.

*(ignorance).The original editor inserted footnote by hand

²⁸⁴ The original editor deleted “the” by hand

= to that

³ *Contradiction*—It is because the unborn cannot give birth to a new thing. If this causality be admitted then the so-called unborn cause must itself come from another cause and so on *ad infinitum*. Thus we never come across *an unborn* cause. There will be thus an endless past in the case of causes and an equally endless future in the case of effects. If the cause produces an effect that effect, in its turn, must produce new effect and so on *ad infinitum* (Hegel’s position). Thus there can be no *mukti* or liberation which means freedom from the causal chain.

285 212

CHAPTER III
ON ADVAITA

28. *The unreal cannot be born either really or through Māyā. For the son of a barren woman is born neither in reality nor in illusion.*

ŚANKARA'S COMMENTARY.

There are those who hold that all things are unreal, that the non-existent produces this world. But production,²⁸⁶ by the non-existent, of any thing either in reality or in illusion is not possible. For we know nothing like it in our experience. As the son of a barren woman is not seen to be born either really or through *Māyā*, the theory of the non-existence of things is in truth¹ untenable.

("Hindi passage omitted here")

29. *As in dream the mind acts through Māyā presenting the appearance of duality, so also in the waking state the mind acts, through Māyā, presenting the appearance of duality.*

ŚANKARA'S COMMENTARY.

How is it possible for the Reality to pass into birth through *Māyā*? It is thus replied:—As the snake imagined in the rope, is real¹ when seen as the rope, so also²⁸⁷

²⁸⁶ 213

If the ultimate reality be non-existent, then it cannot pass into birth. Again if what we perceive be unreal, its production is likewise impossible. In either case causality is unreal. We have seen from the previous *Kārikā* (27) that the Reality, which is the unborn *Ātman*, cannot be said to pass into birth, without our being forced into an infinite regress. This *Kārikā* shows that production is an impossibility if the ultimate reality be non-existent, or if the thing we perceive be unreal. So, causality or production or passing into birth is an absurdity.

¹ *In truth*—In case the *Ātman* is a Reality, the passing into birth may be explained by *Māyā*; but in this case even that explanation cannot hold, for there is no evidence in our actual experience to justify the presumption that either something comes out of nothing or nothing comes out of something.

¹ *Real, etc.*—The snake is unreal when we try to see it as separated from the rope. But when the real nature of the rope is known then it is realised that the snake, which appeared, is really identical with the rope. The substratum (*Adhishthāna*) is the same as that which is superimposed (*Āropita*) upon it.

²⁸⁷ 214

the mind,² from the standpoint of the knowledge of the ultimate Reality, is seen to be identical with *Ātman*. This mind, in dream, appears to us as dual in the forms of the cogniser and the cognised through³ *Māyā*, as the snake appears to be separate from the rope through ignorance. Similarly, indeed the mind acts (in a dual form) in the waking state through *Māyā*. That⁴ is to say the mind appears to act.

(“Hindi passage omitted here”)

*30. *There is no doubt that the mind, which is, in fact, non-dual appears as dual in dream; in the like manner undoubtedly that which is non-dual, appears as dual in the waking state also.*

ŚANKARA’S²⁸⁸ COMMENTARY.

Really speaking, the snake is identical with the rope. In the like manner, the mind which is non-dual¹ as *Ātman* appears undoubtedly in dual forms in dreams. Verily in dream, such objects of perception as elephants, etc., or their perceivers such as eyes, etc., have² no existence independently of consciousness (mind). Similar³ is the

² *Mind*—The mind as the substratum of the dream experiences, is identical with reality or *Ātman*.

³ *Through Māyā*—In dream we have the experience of the separate existence of the perceiver, the object of perception and the act of perceiving. But in the waking state we know these threefold experiences to be nothing but the mind so appearing. The idea that the dream experiences are different from the mind is due to the ignorance which exists in the dream state. The knower of the real nature of the rope finds it to be identical with the snake.

⁴ *That, etc.*—For, in reality Brahman does not act. The action of the mind is due to *Māyā*. The *Śruti* also says that mind in reality is Brahman.

* Max Planck fully understands this point, while Bergson half-understands it, whereas Jeans and Eddington misunderstand it by dragging God in.

CHAPTER III ON ADVAITA

The opponent may contend that the previous *Kārikā* admits duality. This *Kārikā* shows that the perception of duality is due to our ignorance. The only Reality, both in the dream and the waking states, is mind or consciousness which appears as dual, *i.e.*, the perceiver and the perceived, on account of ignorance.

¹ *Non-dual, etc.*—This is known in *Sushupti* or deep-sleep when the mind remains as pure and non-dual.

² *Have, etc.*—That the perceiver and the perceived in the dream state have no existence independent of the mind is known in the waking state.=

=when you inquire

³ *Similar, etc.*—In the waking state also what is perceived is only the act of the mind. The same consciousness is common in both the states. The idea of a mind having the dual characteristics of determination and volition is superimposed upon the substratum, *i.e.*,

case in the waking state as well. For (consciousness) mind, which is the highest Reality, is common to both.

(“Hindi passage omitted here”)

31. *All these dual objects, comprising everything that is movable and immovable, perceived by the mind (are mind alone).²⁸⁹ For, duality is never experienced when the mind ceases to act.*

ŚANKARA’S COMMENTARY.

It has been said that it is the mind alone which appears as dual (objects) like the appearance of the snake in the rope. But what is its proof? Our answer is this: We make the statement on the strength of an inference following the method of agreement and difference. The proposition is that all this duality perceived as such by the imagination of the mind is, in reality, nothing but the mind. The reason for such inference is that duality is perceived when the mind acts and it vanishes when the mind ceases to act; that is to say, when the (activity, *i.e.*, the *Vritti* of the) mind is withdrawn¹ unto itself by the knowledge got through discrimination, repeated practice and renunciation,—like the disappearance of the snake in the rope— or during deep sleep.² Hence on account of the disappearance of duality it is established that duality is unreal or illusory. That the perception of duality is due to the action of the mind is further proved in this *Kārikā*.

(“Hindi²⁹⁰ passage omitted here”)

consciousness and as a result, the phenomenal world is perceived. It should not be thought that there is any other cause for the appearance of duality excepting ignorance.

²⁸⁹ 216

CHAPTER III ON ADVAITA

¹ *Withdrawn, etc.*—This may be called *Samādhi*. But Vēdānta does not prescribe any mechanical method* for the attainment of this state. The Vedāntic method for the control of the mind is the discrimination between the real and the unreal (repeated discrimination), all based upon reasoning.

*such as yoga,

² *Deep sleep*—Although there is a difference, *Sushupti* has often been pointed out by the Vedāntic seers as similar to the state of *Nirvikalpa Samādhi*. *Sushupti* is the state when the mind ceases to act. Consequently in it duality is not perceived.

²⁹⁰ 217

CHAPTER III ON ADVAITA

32. *When the mind does not imagine on account of the knowledge of the Truth²⁹¹ which is Ātman, then it ceases to be mind and becomes free from all idea of cognition, for want of objects to be cognised.*

ŚANKARA'S COMMENTARY.

How does the mind become naught? It is thus replied:—The Ātman alone is the Reality like¹ the clay; as in the Śruti passage, "All modifications are mere names arising from efforts of speech. The clay alone is real." That knowledge of the reality of Ātman comes through the scripture² and the teacher. The mind having attained to that knowledge does not imagine, as³ there remains nothing to be imagined. The mind then is like fire when there is no fuel to burn. When the mind thus does no longer imagine, *it ceases to be mind*, that is to say, the mind, for want of any object to be cognised, becomes free from all cognition.

("Hindi²⁹² passage omitted here")

33. *The knowledge (Jnānam) which is unborn and free from all* imaginations is ever inseparable from the knowable. The immutable and birthless Brahman is the sole object of knowledge.= The birthless is known by the birthless.*

ŚANKARA'S COMMENTARY.

²⁹¹ The original editor added underline by hand

¹ *Like, etc.*—The only reality in the pots, jars, plates, etc., (made of clay) is the clay. The names and forms, on account of their changeability and negatability, are unreal. Similarly the only reality in this universe is Ātman alone; all other objects which are mere acts of mind, being changeable and negatable, are unreal.

² *Scripture, etc.*—The scripture and the teacher only tell the student what is not Ātman. They follow the negative method for pointing out the Reality, which is the rational method pursued in this philosophy.

³ *As, etc.*—The acts of mind which conjure up the world of duality belong to the empirical realm, *i.e.*, to the realm wherein the duality of the subject and the object is recognised. But such action becomes impossible in the absolute state where there is no consciousness of subject and object. In that state Brahman alone is realised and hence the mind, consisting of determination and volition, ceases to exist. Then mind becomes identical with Brahman which is free from all duality of cognition.

²⁹² 218

CHAPTER III
ON ADVAITA

* ideas including The original editor inserted footnote by hand

= everything known is an idea. An idea is Mind. Mind is Brahman. Therefore Brahman is what we always know. The original editor inserted footnote by hand

If all this duality be illusory, how is the knowledge of the Self to be realised? It is thus replied:—The Knowers of Brahman describe knowledge, *i.e.*, the mere essence of thought, which is unborn and free from all imaginations as¹ non-different from Brahman, the Ultimate Reality, which is also the aim²⁹³ of knowledge. This is supported by such scriptural passages as, “Like heat from fire, knowledge (or *Jnānam*) is never absent from the knower (*Ātman*),” “Brahman is Knowledge and Bliss,” “Brahman is Reality, Knowledge and Infinity,” etc. The knowledge, of which Brahman is the object, is non-different from (the knowable) Brahman, as is the heat from the fire. The Essence of the Self, which is the object of knowledge, verily knows itself by means of unborn knowledge which²⁹⁴ is of the very nature of *Ātman*. Brahman which is of the nature of one homogeneous mass of eternal consciousness, does not depend upon another² instrument of knowledge (for its illumination), as is the case with the sun, which being of the nature of continuous light (does not require any instrument to illumine itself).

(“Hindi passage omitted here”)

34. *The behaviour of the mind which is under control, i.e., which is free from all imaginations⁺ and which is endowed with discrimination, should be known. The condition of the mind in deep sleep is of another sort and not like that.*

ŚANKARA’S COMMENTARY.

It has been stated before that the mind, free from imagination on account of the knowledge¹ of Truth, which is *Ātman*, becomes tranquil for want of external* objects,²⁹⁵

¹ *As non-different, etc.*—The *Jnānam* or knowledge is the same as Brahman; otherwise no knowledge would be able to tell us what Brahman is. Darkness cannot illuminate the sun. Only the light of the sun which is the sun itself, can illumine the sun.

²⁹³ The original editor strike out and replaced “object” to “aim” by hand

²⁹⁴ 219

CHAPTER III ON ADVAITA

² *Another instrument*—Such as scripture, etc., which only tell us what is not self.

When the *Jnāni* does any work in the world, which implies duality to the ignorant person, he knows that the doer, the deed and the object of the act are all Brahman. Similarly to the *Jnāni*, even when he acts in this empirical world, the knower, the knowledge and the object of knowledge are all Brahman. And yet all these, being of the nature of Brahman, are without birth (*Aja*).

⁺ (ideas)The original editor inserted footnote by hand

¹ *Knowledge, etc.*—This implies the discrimination between real and unreal.

* The sage does not regard any objects as external to his mindThe original editor inserted footnote by hand

²⁹⁵ 220

like the fire not fed by fuel. Such mind may be said to be under control. It has been further stated that duality disappears when the mind thus ceases to act. The *Yogis* should particularly know the behaviour² of the mind which is thus brought under discipline, which is free from all imaginations and which is possessed of discrimination.

(Objection) – In³ the absence of all specific consciousness the mind, in the state of deep sleep, behaves exactly in the same manner as does the mind of a man under control. What is there to be known in the absence of all specific knowledge?

(Reply) – To this objection we reply thus: – Your objection is not valid. For, the behaviour of the mind in deep sleep, overcome by the darkness of delusion caused by ignorance, and still full of many potential desires which are the seeds of numerous future undesirable activities, is quite different from the behaviour of the mind well under control (free from *Kalpanās*) and free from the darkness which produces activities that give rise to numerous afflictions, and from which has been burnt away by the fire of self-knowledge the ignorance which contains the harmful seed of all potential tendencies to act. The behaviour of the latter kind of mind is quite different.⁴ Therefore it is not like the mind in deep sleep. Hence the behaviour of such mind should be known. This⁵ is the purport.

(“Hindi²⁹⁶ passage omitted here”)

CHAPTER III
ON ADVAITA

² *Behaviour* – The word “*Prachāra*” in the text implying behaviour or activity shows that by “*Nigraha*” or discipline is not meant the Yogic discipline leading to *Nirvikalpa Samādhi*; for, in that state the mind loses all activity and movement. To a *Jnāni* the *Prachāra* or the ideation of the mind is also Brahman. Therefore these ideations should be examined or analysed.

³ *In the, etc.* – The opponent evidently mistakes the Vedāntic tranquillity of mind arrived at by discrimination, etc., for the *yogic Samādhi* which is cultivated by controlling the activities of the mind. Hence his objection to *yogic* trance, like deep sleep, is associated with absence of mental ideation. Śankara in his Commentary on the *Brahmasūtra* (2. 1. 9) and in various other places puts *yogic Samādhi* and deep sleep under the same category.

⁴ *Different* – It is because the mind of the *Jnāni* is always established in Brahman.

⁵ *This, etc.* – The purport is that the mind of a man, who has not known the Truth of Self, becomes absorbed in *Avidyā* at the time of deep sleep or *Samādhi*. Such mind is free from all activities and remains in a motionless, *i.e.*, inactive condition, concealing within it all the seeds of future dual activities. But the mind of a *Jnāni* is well under discipline by the constant practice of discrimination. That mind is always saturated with the *thought* of Brahman. Hence the mind of a *Jnāni* does not lose its activities which are identical with the non-dual Brahman itself.

²⁹⁶ 221

CHAPTER III
ON ADVAITA

35. As the mind is withdrawn at the time of deep sleep and not so in the case of the (Vedāntic) discipline, (therefore, there is a difference between the condition of the mind of a sleeper and of a *Jnāni*.) That (mind of a *Jnāni*) becomes identical with fearless Brahman whose all-round illumination⁼ is consciousness alone.

ŚANKARA'S²⁹⁷ COMMENTARY.

Now is stated the reason for the distinction between the behaviour (of the mind of a sleeper and of a *Jnāni*). The mind in deep sleep, with the desires which are the cause of all experiences during the state of ignorance, goes¹ back to the seed-like condition²⁹⁸ of potentiality characterised by the undifferentiated² feature of darkness; but the³ mind (of a *Jnāni*) which is disciplined by discrimination is not so withdrawn, that is to say, does not go back to the seed-like state of darkness.⁼ Therefore is made the distinction between the behaviour of the mind in deep sleep and that of a *Jnāni* whose mind is under control. When the mind becomes free from all ideas of the perceiver and the perceived—the dual evils caused by ignorance—it verily becomes one with the Supreme and the non-dual Brahman. Therefore the mind becomes free from all fear; for, in that state, the perception of duality, which is the cause of fear, is absent.

⁼ whatever he sees, whether waking dream or sleep, he sees as Brahman. The original editor inserted footnote by hand

²⁹⁷ 222

CHAPTER III
ON ADVAITA

It is implied in the previous text of the *Kārikā* that there is a difference between the mind of a *Jnāni* and that of a deep sleeper. The reason for this difference is stated in this *Kārikā*.

¹ *Goes back, etc.*—For, an ignorant man, when he wakes up from deep sleep, again experiences these desires. Therefore the desires are said to remain in a potential state in deep sleep.

²⁹⁸ The original editor inserted footnote by hand

² *Undifferentiated, etc.*—It is because the experience of deep sleep is characterised by the absence of all that is known. The man describing the condition of deep sleep says, “I know nothing during that state”.

³ *The mind, etc.*—But the case of a *Jnāni* is quite different. By the practice of discrimination, he can distinguish the reality from the unreality. All objects of cognition, being changeable and negatable, are known to the *Jnāni* as unreal. Therefore the knowledge of Brahman does not denote a state in which the desires remain in potential condition. For, the desires of a *Jnāni* are destroyed for ever by the knowledge of the non-dual Brahman. Hence, a man having attained to the knowledge of Brahman does not experience any desire, which implies cogniser and cognised. The *Jnāni* knows the activities of his mind as identical with the non-dual Brahman.

⁼ the thought that world is real lies latent (like a seed) in the mind of ordinary sleeper, whereas such a thought is absent from the mind of *Gnani*. The original editor inserted footnote by hand

Brahman is peace and fearlessness. Having realised Brahman, the *Jnāni* is not afraid of anything. This is thus further amplified: *Jnānam* means the essence of Knowledge, *i.e.*, the consciousness which is the very nature of *Ātman* or the Self. Brahman is that whose expression is the Knowledge thus described. In other words, Brahman is the one mass of sentiency. The word, “all-round” in the text, implies that this knowledge of Brahman is without⁴ break and all-pervading like the ether.*

(“Hindi²⁹⁹ passage omitted here”)

36. (*This Brahman is*) *birthless, free from sleep and dream, without name and form, ever-effulgent and omniscient. Nothing has to be done*³⁰⁰ *in any way (with respect to Brahman).*

ŚANKARA’S³⁰¹ COMMENTARY.

Brahman is both within and without as well as unborn, as there is no cause for its passing into birth. For, we have already stated that (the phenomenon of) birth is seen on account of the ignorance (of the real nature of a thing), as¹ is the case with the rope giving birth to the (illusion of the) snake. It is birthless because all ignorance is destroyed by the knowledge of Truth which is the *Ātman*. Hence it is free from sleep²; for, *Ātman*, which is, by nature, non-dual, is always free from sleep the nature of which is that of beginningless delusion characterised by ignorance. Therefore it is free from

⁴ *Without break, etc.*—That is to say, the *Jnāni* may be engaged in any activity, but in everything he realises Brahman alone. The experiences of a *Jnāni* have thus been described in the *Gītā* (4. 24): “Brahman is the offering, Brahman is the oblation poured into the fire of Brahman. Brahman verily shall be reached by him who always sees Brahman in action”.

* you see everything in Me. The original editor inserted footnote by hand

²⁹⁹ 223

CHAPTER III
ON ADVAITA

³⁰⁰ The original editor added underline by hand

³⁰¹ 224

CHAPTER III
ON ADVAITA

The nature of Brahman, which is the subject-matter under discussion, is thus described in other ways. The purport of the *Kārikā* is that apart from the realisation of one’s identity with the attributeless Brahman no action is to be done by him. The categorical imperative of Kant has no meaning for a knower of *Ātman*. *Yogic Samādhi* is not the same as the goal of *Jnāna Yoga* as described in the philosophy of Advaita Vedānta or the *Kārikā*.

¹ *As, etc.*—The phenomenon of the rope producing the snake is due to ignorance of the real nature of the rope.

² *Sleep*—Sleep or *Nidrā* means the non-apprehension of objects, as is the characteristic of the mind in deep sleep. In the causal world this *Nidrā* or ignorance is known as beginningless, as no beginning of it can be found.

dream.³ Names and forms that are ascribed to it are due to the ignorance of its real nature. These names and forms are destroyed⁺ by Knowledge. It is like the (destruction of the illusion of the) snake seen in the rope. Hence Brahman cannot be described by any name, nor can it be in any manner described by any form. To support this, there are such *Śruti* passages as, “From which words come back”,⁼ etc. Moreover, it⁴ is ever-effulgent or it is of the very nature of effulgence. For⁵, it is free from (the ideas of) manifestation and non-manifestation characterised by wrong apprehension and non-apprehension. Apprehension and non-apprehension are (as inseparable) as day and night. Darkness is the characteristic of ignorance. These are the causes of the non-manifestation (of the real nature of *Ātman*). These⁶ are absent in *Ātman*. Moreover, *Ātman* is always of the nature of consciousness and effulgence.* Therefore it is reasonable to speak of *Ātman*³⁰² as ever-effulgent. It is all-knowing, that is to say, *Ātman*

³ *Dream*—The dream or *Svapna* is characterised by wrong apprehension of objects. This is not possible in the case of *Ātman* which is of the nature of eternal purity, knowledge and illumination.

⁺ as separate entities different from Brahman, such a delusion is destroyed, albeit they still exist for us as Brahman.The original editor inserted footnote by hand

⁼ words can only tell about *drśyam*, never the *drik*.The original editor inserted footnote by hand

⁴ *It is, etc.*—The *Ātman* is that which gives us the idea of light. It is not itself what is described as light.

⁵ *For, etc.*—The ideas of non-apprehension and wrong apprehension are correlatives. One implies the other. Similarly the ideas of manifestation and non-manifestation are correlatives. When an empirical *Jiva* becomes oblivious of himself, as in deep sleep, he is said to be in a state of non-manifestation characterised by the non-perception of objects. Similarly, the empirical *Jiva* is said to be manifested, as in dream or waking state, when he apprehends objects in a wrong way, *i.e.*, not as they are in their true character which is the non-dual Brahman. But Brahman cannot be identified with the dualistic concepts of non-apprehension or wrong apprehension and non-manifestation or manifestation, as it is the witness of all these conditions.

⁶ *These are, etc.*—The ideas of manifestation and non-manifestation cannot inhere in *Ātman* from the standpoint of Reality. These are attributed to *Ātman*, as one says that *Ātman* is unmanifested to us previous to the realisation of knowledge and it is manifested to us subsequent to that realisation. These statements are made from the empirical standpoint. But Brahman is always of the nature of illumination which never decreases or increases by any extraneous circumstances. In common parlance the advent of day and night is associated with the rising and the setting of the sun. But the sun neither rises nor sets. It is always bright and effulgent. If one takes his stand in the sun he sees neither the night nor its correlative the day. But if a man is away from the sun, he imagines the rising and setting of the sun and consequently experiences day and night which have no meaning from the standpoint of the sun.

* aware of objects presentedThe original editor inserted footnote by hand

is all that exists and *Ātman* is sentiency itself. As regards such Brahman (*i.e.*, the knower of such Brahman) no action⁺ can be enjoined, as may be in the case of others, who (on account of their ignorance of the real nature of Brahman) are asked to practise concentration, etc., on the nature of *Ātman*. The⁷ purport is that besides the destruction of ignorance it is not possible to prescribe any duty⁼ (for the knowledge of Brahman), as Brahman is always of the nature of purity, knowledge and freedom.

(“Hindi³⁰³ passage omitted here”)

37. (*This Ātman is) beyond all expression by words, beyond all acts of mind; (It is) all peace, eternal effulgence, free from activity and fear and attainable by concentrated understanding (of the Jiva).*

ŚANKARA’S COMMENTARY.

Now is explained the reason for defining Brahman as without name, etc., as described above. The word *Abhilāpa*,³⁰⁴ meaning expression, denotes here the instrument of sound by which all sounds are expressed. Brahman is beyond speech. The instrument of sound is used in the sense of metonymy, *i.e.*, it also implies other instruments of sense-knowledge. The purport is that the *Ātman* is beyond all external sense-organs,* Similarly, it is beyond all activities of the mind. The word “*Chintā*” in the text stands for “mind” (or the internal organ of thought). For, the *Śruti* says, “It is verily without *Prāna* and without mind”, “It is higher than the imperishable Supreme”. It is all peace as it is free from all distinctions. The *Ātman* is ever-effulgent,—that is to say, being of the nature of³⁰⁵ consciousness which is its very essence, it is eternal light. The *Ātman* is denoted by the word *Samādhi*¹ as it can be realised only by the knowledge arising out of the deepest concentration (on its essence) or, the *Ātman* is denoted by

⁺ such as yoga practiceThe original editor inserted footnote by hand

⁷ *The purport, etc.*—All imaginations regarding *Samādhi*, etc., may have their application in the state of ignorance when one does not realise the ever-illuminated nature of his self.

⁼ practiceThe original editor inserted footnote by hand

³⁰³ 226

CHAPTER III
ON ADVAITA

³⁰⁴ 227

CHAPTER III
ON ADVAITA

* sense-organs which are externalThe original editor inserted footnote by hand

³⁰⁵ The original editor deleted “self” by hand

¹ *Samādhi*—This state of complete identity with non-dual Brahman, arrived at as a result of discrimination and negation of phenomena, is the Vedāntic conception of *Samādhi* (which is quite different from any mystical or mechanical state described as *Samādhi* in the *Yoga* system).

Samādhi⁼ because the *Jiva* concentrates his mind on *Ātman*. It is immovable, *i.e.*, beyond change. Hence, it is fearless as it is free from change.

(“Hindi passage omitted here”)

38. *In that Brahman which is free from all acts of mind there is neither any idea of acceptance nor any idea of*³⁰⁶ *giving up (of anything). Established in the Ātman (Self), knowledge attains to the state of birthlessness and sameness, that is to say, changelessness.*

ŚANKARA’S COMMENTARY.

As Brahman alone has been described in the previous text as *Samādhi* (*i.e.*, the sole object of concentration) and as free from activity and fear, therefore in that Brahman there¹ is nothing to accept nor is there anything to give up. For, acceptance or abandonment is possible only where there is change or the possibility of change. But both these are inconsistent with this Brahman—as nothing else exists which can cause a change in Brahman, and further because Brahman is without parts. Therefore, the meaning is that in Brahman there is no possibility of either accepting or giving up anything. The purport of the *Kārikā* is this: How can there be any acceptance or abandonment (in Brahman) where, in the absence of the mind, no² mentation whatsoever is possible? When the knowledge of Reality which is the Self, ensues, then Knowledge, for want of any object to rest upon, becomes³ established in *Ātman*, like the heat of fire (in the absence of fuel). *Ajāti*, *i.e.*, free from birth. It attains to the state of supreme non-duality. Thus is concluded, by means of reasoning and scriptural authority what was stated before as a proposition in the following words: “Now I shall describe the non-dual Brahman which is free from limitation and birth and which is the same everywhere”. Everything else, other than the knowledge of Reality³⁰⁷ which is the

⁼ the atman is perfect homogeneity; it is in this sense only that the word ‘samadhi’ is used here
The original editor inserted footnote by hand

³⁰⁶ 228

CHAPTER III ON ADVAITA

This *Kārikā* tells us that the changeless non-dual Brahman is beyond all injunctions, mandatory or prohibitory, as enjoined by the scriptures or society. These injunctions apply only to the realm of ignorance.

¹ *There is, etc.*—All ethics, prescribing moral codes to be followed or immoral acts to be shunned, apply to the dual world. They have no meaning in respect of Brahman or the Knower of Brahman, which are identical.

² *No mentation*—For, it is the activities of the mind alone which conjure up the phenomena of a dual world with all its injunctions, prohibitory or mandatory.

³ *Becomes, etc.*—Knowledge of Brahman is the same as Brahman.

³⁰⁷ 229

CHAPTER III

Self, birthless and homogeneous, implies limitation. The *Śruti* also says, “O Gārgi, he who departs from this world without knowing that Imperishable One, is, indeed, narrow-minded.” The purport is that everyone, realising this knowledge, becomes established in Brahman and attains to the fulfilment of all desires.*

(“Hindi passage omitted here”)

39. This (*Asparsa*)³⁰⁸ Yoga, which is not in touch with anything,⁺ is hard to be attained by all Yogis (in general). The Yogis are afraid of it, for they see fear in it where there is really fearlessness.

ŚANKARA’S COMMENTARY.

Though¹ such is the nature of the knowledge of the Supreme Reality, yet it is described in the Upanishads² as the *Yoga* not in touch with anything; for, it is free from all touch implying relations (between objects). It³⁰⁹ is hard to be attained by the *Yogis*³ who are devoid of the knowledge prescribed⁼ in the Vedānta philosophy. In other words, this truth can be realised only by the efforts* culminating in the knowledge of *Ātman* as the Sole Reality. The *Yogis* shrink from it, which is free from all fear, for⁴ they

ON ADVAITA

* when everything that you do or want is known to be Brahman, you have attained fulfilment. The original editor inserted footnote by hand

³⁰⁸ The original editor inserted “(*Asparsa*)” by hand

+ All yogas other than *Asparsayog* refer to a second, either body or mind; *asparsa* alone is non-dual. The original editor inserted footnote by hand

¹ *Though etc.*—The word “*Yoga*” signifying union, generally means contact between two. But the *Jnāna-Yoga* (i.e., discipline through knowledge) is not in touch with any idea or object, as there is nothing else but the non-dual Brahman. Therefore it is called the *Asparśa-Yoga*, i.e., a spiritual discipline which does not admit of relation or touch with anything else.

² *Upanishads*—The Upanishad says that the knowledge of *Ātman* is ever uncontaminated by any touch of work, sinful or virtuous.

³⁰⁹ 230

CHAPTER III ON ADVAITA

³ *Yogis*—That is to say, those who are called *Yogis* according to *Patanjali*. Their aim is to attain to the trance-condition by some mystical or mechanical means⁺ and thereby become oblivious of the miseries of the world. But Vedānta says that the world as it is, if seen in its true character, is Brahman.

+involving a duality

= indicated. The original editor inserted footnote by hand

* of enquiry. The original editor inserted footnote by hand

⁴ *For, etc.*—The so-called *Yogis* are afraid of losing their ego which is the pivot of enjoyments in the relative world. But Vedānta says that the true nature of an individual is his

think that this *Yoga* brings about the annihilation of their self. In other words, the *Yogis* who are devoid of discrimination and who, through fear, apprehend the destruction of their self, are afraid of it which is, in reality, fearlessness.⁵

identity with the non-dual Brahman. The idea of individual existence is due to the ignorance of one's own nature.

⁵ *Fearlessness*—Brahman is fearless because it is ever non-dual. There is nothing else of which it can be afraid. Fear comes from the sense of duality.

moksha,³¹⁰ self-knowledge & aviation of misery: not in reality.

("Hindi passage omitted here")

40. *The Yogis (who do not follow the method of Jnāna-Yoga as described in the Kārikā) mistakenly³¹¹ depend on the control of their mind for fearlessness, destruction of misery, the knowledge of egoistic³¹² self and eternal peace in relation to individuality.³¹³*

ŚANKARA'S COMMENTARY.

Those¹ Asparsa-Yogis³¹⁴ who regard mind and the sense-organs, when seen apart from their identity with the very nature of Brahman, as mere imagination (idea)³¹⁵—like that of the snake when seen apart from its identity with the rope—and who thus deny the sole reality of the mind and the sense-organs (independent of Brahman), *i.e.*, those who look upon themselves as of the very nature of Brahman, spontaneously enjoy, as quite natural to them, fearlessness and eternal peace known as Freedom, for which they (the *Jnānis*) do not depend upon any extraneous thing (such as

³¹⁰ 231

CHAPTER III
ON ADVAITA

Incomplete Para

The original editor inserted "moksha, self-knowledge & aviation of misery: not in reality." By hand

³¹¹ The original editor inserted "mistakenly" by hand

³¹² The original editor inserted "egoistic" by hand

³¹³ The original editor inserted "in relation to individuality." By hand

This *Kārikā* applies to those who look upon the mind as separate from *Ātman* and think that peace, knowledge, etc., depend upon its control.

¹ *Those, etc.*—The *Jnāni* knows the mind and sense-organs to be identical with the non-dual Brahman. It is like the identity of the snake with the rope. As the snake in the illusion of the rope has no existence apart from the rope, similarly the mind has no existence separate from Brahman. To see the mind as separate from Brahman is a freak of imagination. They, the *Jnānis*, knowing this truth, do not care for the control of the mind. For, the mind, as such, does not exist for them. One who realises mind as Brahman, finds spontaneously peace, fearlessness, etc. Fear, misery, etc., are the outcome of duality. Duality is seen on account of the activity of the mind. But the *Jnāni* sees the identity of the mind and Brahman. Therefore duality does not exist for him. Hence he does not experience any fear, misery, etc. Therefore, peace, fearlessness, etc., in his case, are natural.

³¹⁴ The original editor inserted "Asparsa-Yogis" by hand

³¹⁵ The original editor inserted "(idea)" by hand

the control of the mind, etc.). We have already stated that⁼ no duty, whatsoever, exists for the *Jnāni*. But⁵ those other *Yogis*^{*} who are also traversing the path (leading to Truth), but who possess inferior² or middling understanding and who³ look upon the mind as separate from but related to *Ātman*, and who⁴ are ignorant³¹⁶ of the knowledge regarding the reality of *Ātman*—the *Yogis* belonging to this class can[€] imagine they experience fearlessness as a result of the discipline of the mind. To them the destruction⁺ of misery delusive and³¹⁷ is also dependent upon mental control. The³¹⁸ ignorant can never experience the cessation of misery, if the mind, (considered) related⁺ to *Ātman*, becomes active. Besides, their knowledge of self is dependent on their control of the mind.⁼ And similarly, eternal peace, known as *Moksha* (or liberation), in their³¹⁹ (imagination)³²⁰ case, (or standpoint or idea)³²¹ depends upon the mental discipline.

⁼ there is nothing to be done by JnaniThe original editor inserted footnote by hand

⁵ *But, etc.*—The Raja *Yogis* think that misery is caused by the activities of the mind. Hence they direct all their energy to the suppression of the *Vrittis* of the mind. But the *Vrittis* reappear if the attempt is slightly relaxed. The *Yogis*, on account of their ignorance of the real nature of the mind, fight with their own shadows. The *Jnāni*, on the other hand, realises the mind as well as all its activities as identical with the non-dual Brahman. Hence the activities of mind do not stand in the way of his eternal happiness.The original editor inserted footnote by hand

^{*} such as Raja *Yogis*The original editor inserted footnote by hand

² *Inferior, etc.*—That is to say, they do not possess the sharp intellect which can distinguish the real from the unreal. For them, the *Yogic* practices are recommended.

³ *Who, etc.*—It is because they find the mind as separate from Brahman that they try to keep it under to control. According them, the mind is acted upon by *Ātman*.

⁴ *Who are, etc.*—For they see a duality of the *Ātman* and the mind.

³¹⁶ The original editor added underline by hand

[€] imagine they

⁺ This is from yogis standpoint only; it is NOT a real destruction of misery or fear, but a temporaryThe original editor inserted footnote by hand

³¹⁷ The original editor inserted “delusive and” by hand

³¹⁸ 232

CHAPTER III ON ADVAITA

⁺ The word ‘related’ can be used only in reference to two separate things. Those who deem Mind to be apart from atman are ignorant.The original editor inserted footnote by hand

⁼ knowledge of self, i.e. atman consciousness is already present even before yogic practice. Hence to say that yoga creates it, is untrue.The original editor inserted footnote by hand

³¹⁹ The original editor added underline by hand

³²⁰ The original editor inserted “(imagination)” by hand

³²¹ The original editor inserted “(or standpoint or idea)” by hand

("Hindi³²² passage omitted here")

41. *The mind can be brought under control only by an unrelenting effort like that which is required to empty an ocean, drop by drop, with the help of a (blade of) Kuśa-grass.*⁺

41: That patience which would empty the ocean drop by drop at the tip of a straw of kusha grass will, untiringly sustained, establish control over the mind. This is correct translation by Drivedi.³²³

ŚANKARA'S COMMENTARY.

As one may try to empty the ocean, by draining off its water drop by drop, with the help of a (blade of) *Kuśa*-grass; even so may one control the mind by making the same effort with a heart which becomes neither¹ depressed nor tired.

("Hindi passage omitted here")

42. *The mind distracted by desires and enjoyments as also the mind enjoying pleasure in³²⁴⁼ (trance-like condition)³²⁵ should be brought under discipline by the pursuit of proper means. For, the state of oblivion is as harmful as desires.*

ŚANKARA'S COMMENTARY.

³²² 233

CHAPTER III
ON ADVAITA

⁺ It is only possible to drive out some thoughts by yoga, but it is utterly impossible to drive out all thoughts whilst the mind is present (except by entering sleep). The original editor inserted footnote by hand

³²³ The original editor inserted "This is correct translation by Drivedi." By hand

This *Kārikā* gives us an idea of the effort that a *Raja Yogi* should make to control his mind completely. But it appears that the complete suppression of the mental *Vrittis* is impossible in this way. And as the happiness of a *Yogi* is dependent upon such suppression, he can never attain to eternal Truth by the *Yogic* method. *Jnāna-yoga* alone is the royal road for the attainment of eternal Truth and peace.

¹ *Neither depressed, etc.* – The *Yogi* at every step meets with defeat. While closing the eyes, he sees no object; with the eyes open, he perceives the phenomenal world. In either case, he does not realise Brahman. But these must not depress his heart.

³²⁴ The original editor deleted "oblivion" by hand

= yoga-nidra or yoga-raja. The original editor inserted footnote by hand

³²⁵ 234

CHAPTER III
ON ADVAITA

Is untiring effort the only way for bringing the mind under discipline? We say, in reply, no. One should, with untiring effort, follow the means, to be stated presently, in order to bring the mind under discipline, that is to say, bring it back to *Ātman*,¹ when the mind is turned towards objects of desires and enjoyments. The word "*Laya*"² in the text indicates *Sushupti*, i.e., deep sleep in which state one becomes oblivious of all things. The³ (injunction implied in the) words "should be brought under discipline", should also be applied in the case of the mind when it feels happy, that is to say, free from all worries in the state of *Laya* or oblivion. Why should it be further brought under discipline if it feels pleasure (in that state)? It is thus replied: Because the state of oblivion is as⁴ harmful as desire, the mind should be withdrawn from the state of oblivion as it should be withdrawn from objects of enjoyment.

("Hindi³²⁶ passage omitted here")

43. *The mind should be turned back from the enjoyment of pleasures,* remembering that all this is attended with misery. If it be remembered that everything is the unborn (Brahman), the born (duality) will not be seen.*

A student practising *Yoga* meets with four kinds of obstacles which are in his way of realising the Highest Reality. They are known as *Laya* (a state of oblivion analogous to *Yogic Samādhi* or deep sleep), *Vikshepa* (distraction), *Sukha* (happiness in temporary success) and *Rāga* (attachment to any particular phase of ecstasy. The mind should be trained to keep away from these obstacles. The means are described in the next *Kārikā*.

¹ *Ātman*—It is because the ultimate aim of all spiritual practices is the realisation of *Ātman* or the true nature of the Self.

² *Laya*—The state of *Laya* realised by the *Yogi* in *Samādhi* is non-different from the state of *Sushupti* or deep sleep. Both are characterised by the absence of subject-object relationship. Again in both these states, the student is not aware of the real nature of his self. The difference between the two states is this: The *Yogi* can induce *Samādhi* at his mere will, but *Sushupti*, for an ordinary man, is not under his control.

³ *The words, etc.*—The state of *Samādhi* induced by *Yoga* should not be considered as the goal. No doubt, one feels a sort of pleasure in such *Samādhi* on account of the absence of worries consequent on the withdrawal of the mind from external objects, but this does not indicate that the *Yogi* has realised the Supreme *Truth*. Seeking after pleasure or the avoidance of misery indicates the exhaustion of the inquiring mind. The real seeker after *Truth* cannot rest satisfied till he has attained to It.

⁴ *As harmful, etc.*—It is because both these states are characterised by the absence of the knowledge of *Ātman*. Thirst for external objects and attachment to the pleasure one feels in *Samādhi*, are equally harmful for the realisation of *Truth*. A *Yogi* can realise *Truth* if he supplements his own method by the Vedāntic discipline, of discrimination between the real and the unreal, and meditation on the nature of *Ātman*.

ŚANKARA'S COMMENTARY.

What is the way of disciplining the mind? It is thus replied: Remember that all¹ duality is caused by *Avidyā* or illusion and therefore afflicted with misery. Thereby dissuade the mind from seeking enjoyments produced³²⁷ by desires.⁼ In other words, withdraw the mind from all dual objects by impressing upon it the idea of complete non-attachment.² Realise from the teachings of the scriptures and the *Āchāryās* that all this is verily the changeless Brahman. Then you will not see anything to the contrary, *viz.*, duality; for it does not exist.

("Hindi passage omitted here")

44. *If the mind becomes inactive in a state of oblivion awaken it again.^ε If it is distracted, bring it back to the state of tranquillity. (In the intermediary state) know the mind containing within it desires in potential form. If the mind has attained to the state of equilibrium, then do not disturb it again.⁺*

ŚANKARA'S COMMENTARY.

* the mind may be in pleasures but it should not regard them as other than Brahman. Vedanta would be senseless if it meant that one should not enjoy the pleasurable side of life. The original editor inserted footnote by hand

It has been said in the previous *Kārikā* that the mind should be disciplined by following the right method. This verse of the *Kārikā* points out complete detachment* to be the right method.

*non-attachment.

¹ *All duality, etc.* – All dual objects, on account of their changeable and negatable nature, are attended with misery.

³²⁷ 236

CHAPTER III
ON ADVAITA

⁼ this does not mean withdrawing from world and sitting like stone. Understand that Brahman may appear as dual & thus in desired objects also. It is impossible to detach oneself from the world. The original editor inserted footnote by hand

² *Non-attachment* – It implies the spirit of dispassion for all dual objects, because they are always associated with misery.

^ε You will get Gnan only when you see duality and know it to be Brahman, not in sleep or trance. The original editor inserted footnote by hand

⁺ don't fall back to lower stage of attachments again. The original editor inserted footnote by hand

When¹ the mind is immersed in oblivion, *i.e.*, in *Sushupti*, then rouse it up by means of knowledge and by detachment. That is to say, turn the mind to the exercise of discrimination³²⁸ which leads to the knowledge of the Self. The word “*Chitta*” in the text bears the same meaning as “*Manas*” or mind. Bring³²⁹ the mind back to the state of tranquillity if it is distracted by the various objects of desires. When the mind is thus, by constant practice, awakened from the state of inactivity and also turned back from all objects, but not yet established in equilibrium,³ that is to say, when the mind still dwells in an intermediary state,—then know⁴ the mind to be possessed of attachment. That is to say, the mind contains within it the seeds of desires for enjoyment and inactivity. From⁵ that state also, bring the mind,⁼ with care, to the realisation[¢] of equilibrium. Once the mind has realised the state of equilibrium, that is to say, when it is on the way to realise that state, then do not disturb it again. In other words, do not turn it to the external objects.

(“Hindi³³⁰ passage omitted here”)

¹ *When the, etc.*—This is the warning given against pursuing the *Yogic Samādhi* as the state of the highest spiritual realisation. The mind seeking after Truth and frightened at the immensity of efforts necessary for its realisation, often seeks relief in *Samādhi*. The commentator exhorts us to practise discrimination even when the mind passes into the passivity of *Samādhi* and to extricate it from that state by cultivating the spirit of non-attachment to any pleasure experienced in the state of *Samādhi*. The object of life is not to enjoy any bliss arising out of inactivity as one experiences in *Samādhi* or deep sleep, but to know the real nature of the Self.

³²⁸ The original editor added underline by hand

³²⁹ 237

CHAPTER III ON ADVAITA

² *Bring, etc.*—The *Yogic* method may be followed with certain advantages by the student of mediocre intellect who wants to turn his turbulent mind from the pursuit of external objects. The *Yogic* method gives him control over his mind. But even in such case, *Yoga* serves only a temporary or subordinate purpose.

³ *Equilibrium*—That is to say, the non-duality which is characterised by sameness throughout.*

*This occurs in sleep, etc.

⁴ *Know, etc.*—This is another state of the mind. In this state the mind is roused from the state of inactivity. It is also withdrawn from objects. But it has not yet realised its identity with the non-dual Brahman. In this intermediary state, the mind contains, in potential form, the desires for the enjoyment of external objects or the bliss in a state of inactivity.

⁵ *From, etc.*—This intermediary state also should not be taken as the state of Ultimate Realisation.

⁼ keep mind uninfluenced by either extreme of sloth or of desire, be balanced. It should not run hither and thither, nor remain utterly inactive. The original editor inserted footnote by hand

[¢] attainment The original editor inserted footnote by hand

³³⁰ 238

45. (The mind) should not be allowed to enjoy the bliss that arises out of the condition of Samādhi.^c It should be freed from attachment to such happiness through the exercise of discrimination. If the mind, once attaining to the state of steadiness seek externality, then it should be unified with the Ātman,⁺ again, with efforts.

ŚANKARA'S COMMENTARY.

The seeker should not taste that happiness that is experienced by the Yogis seeking¹ after *Samādhi*. In other words, he is not to be attached to that happiness. What then should be done by the student? He should be unattached to such happiness, by gaining knowledge through discrimination, and think that whatever happiness is experienced is false^{*2} and conjured up by ignorance. In other words, the mind should be turned back from such happiness. When, however, having been once withdrawn from happiness and fixed to the state of steadiness, the mind again manifests its outgoing propensities, then control it by adopting the above-mentioned³ means; and with great care, make it one⁴ with *Ātman*. In other words, make the mind attain to the condition of pure existence and thought.

("Hindi³³¹ passage omitted here")

CHAPTER III
ON ADVAITA

^c cf Ashtavakra, 1:1. which is identical in meaning. The original editor inserted footnote by hand

⁺ practice thinking that every object seen is Atman. The original editor inserted footnote by hand

The purpose of this *Kārikā* is to dissuade the mind from enjoying the happiness that the Yogis experience in the state of *Samādhi*.

¹ *Seeking, etc.* – That is to say, in the state of *Samādhi*, the *Yogin* fails to see that the non-dual Brahman alone exists. He seeks *Samādhi* because he believes in the existence of the mind as separate from *Ātman*, and therefore tries to control it. By some mechanical means he brings the mind to a state of inactivity and thus makes himself free from all worries. But this is not the Vedāntic goal of Truth.

^{*} as apart from Brahman it is The original editor inserted footnote by hand

² *False* – All objects which are experienced by us are changeable and negatable. Therefore they are unreal.

³ *Above-mentioned* – i.e., discrimination, etc.

⁴ *One, etc.* – The real truth is that the mind is identical with *Ātman*. Mind is *Ātman*. It is only through ignorance that we separate the mind from *Ātman*.

³³¹ 239

CHAPTER III
ON ADVAITA

46. *When the mind does not merge in the inactivity of oblivion, or become distracted by desires, that is to say, when the mind becomes quiescent⁺ and does not give rise to appearances, it verily becomes Brahman.*

ŚANKARA'S COMMENTARY.

When the mind, brought under discipline by the above-mentioned¹ methods, does not fall into the oblivion of deep sleep, nor is distracted by external objects, that is to say, when the mind becomes quiescent² like the flame of a light kept in a windless place; or when³ the mind does not appear in the form of an object,⁼ – when the mind is endowed with these characteristics, it verily becomes one⁴ with Brahman.

(“Hindi³³² passage omitted here”)

47. *This highest bliss⁺ is based upon the realisation of Self; it is peace, identical with liberation, indescribable and unborn. It is further described as the omniscient Brahman, because it is one with the unborn⁼ Self which is the object sought by Knowledge.*

ŚANKARA'S COMMENTARY.

The above-mentioned bliss which is the highest¹ Reality and which is characterised by the knowledge of the *Ātman* is² centred in the Self. It is all peace,

⁺ undisturbed by temptation or trialThe original editor inserted footnote by hand

¹ *Above-mentioned, etc. – i.e.,* the practice of knowledge and discrimination.

² *Quiescent* – This steadiness is quite different from the condition of *Samādhi*. In this steady condition the mind perceives the non-dual Brahman alone everywhere.

³ *When, etc. –* The external objects are nothing but the activities of the mind itself. Comp. *Kārikā* 3. 31.

⁼ as other than itself or as different from BrahmanThe original editor inserted footnote by hand

⁴ *One, etc. –* That is to say, the mind realises its real nature.

332 240

CHAPTER III
ON ADVAITA

⁺ this term is used metaphorically; only by comparison with ordinary values is it called ‘bliss’. It is not ecstasy.The original editor inserted footnote by hand

⁼ the only thing known as not-born is the Drik.

Now is described the nature of the mind in the state of the highest realisation.The original editor inserted footnote by hand

¹ *Highest* – It is distinguished from the happiness described in *Kārikā* 45, which is of the same class as relative bliss.

² *Is centred, etc. –* This is to show that Self-realisation does not depend upon anything external to itself.

characterised by the cessation of all evils. It is the same as liberation.³ It is indescribable as⁴ nobody is able to describe it; for, it is totally different from all objects. This ultimate bliss is directly perceived by the *Asparsa*³³³ *Yogis*.⁵ It is unborn because it is not produced like anything resulting from empirical perceptions. It is identical with the Unborn which is the object sought by Knowledge. The Knowers of Brahman describe this bliss verily as the omniscient Brahman, as it is identical with that Reality which is omniscient.

(“Hindi³³⁴ passage omitted here”)

48. No Jiva⁺ is ever born. There does not exist any cause[°] which can produce it. This is the highest Truth that nothing is ever born, (in reality, but they are born in imagination)³³⁵

ŚANKARA’S COMMENTARY.

All these ideas regarding the discipline of the mind, evolution resembling the creation of forms from iron and clay, as well as the ideas regarding devotional exercises, are given as means¹⁼ to the realisation of the nature of the Ultimate Reality. They have,

³ *Liberation* – The state of liberation, on account of its identity with Truth, is characterised by the attainment of all-absorbing happiness* and cessation of all miseries.

* taken literally this term is misleading; here it is used relatively..

⁴ *As, etc.* – It is because this happiness transcends all subject-object relationship.

³³³ The original editor inserted “*Asparsa*” by hand

⁵ *Yogis* – These *Yogis* are not like the ordinary ones. The nature of their *Yoga* has been described as the *Asparśa Yoga* in *Kārikā* 3. 39. *Asparsha Yoga*

³³⁴ 241

CHAPTER III ON ADVAITA

⁺ that which is called *jiva* is found on analysis to be *Drik*. The original editor inserted footnote by hand

[°] because Cause exists only in the *drśyam*. The original editor inserted footnote by hand

³³⁵ The original editor inserted “(in reality, but they are born in imagination)” by hand

Various empirical means such as the practice of *Yoga*, etc., have been suggested above. If these means which naturally are related to the dual realm be true, then the position of the non-dual Brahman cannot be maintained. If these means be untrue, then they cannot serve any purpose. To remove this difficulty this *Kārikā* suggests that these means help us to realise Brahman; but they do not reveal Brahman.

¹ *Means* – These means have their applicability only in the realm of duality where a man, through ignorance, does not know his real nature.

⁼ at certain stages The original editor inserted footnote by hand

in themselves, no meaning whatsoever. The² truth regarding the Ultimate Reality is that no *Jiva* is ever born. The *Jiva* whom one knows as the agent and the enjoyer is not born in any way whatsoever. Therefore, no cause can ever exist which may produce the *Ātman* which is, by nature, unborn and non-dual. In other words,³³⁶ no *Jiva* can ever be born, as the cause which may produce it does not exist. Of all the (relative) truths described above as means (for the realisation of the Ultimate Reality), this alone is the Supreme Truth that nothing whatsoever is ever born in or of that Brahman which is of the nature of the Ultimate Reality.

Here ends the third chapter, on Illusion, of the *Kārikā* of Gaudapāda with the Commentary of Śri Śankara.

Aum³³⁷ Salutation to Brahman.

CHAPTER IV.

QUENCHING OF FIRE-BRAND.

("Hindi passage omitted here")

1. *I bow to that best among men i.e. the Guru³³⁸ who by means of knowledge³³⁹, which is like Ākāśa⁺ and non-different from the object of knowledge (i.e., the Dharma), realised the nature of the Dharmas (i.e., the Jivas) which are, again, like the Ākāśa.*

ŚANKARA'S COMMENTARY.

The proposition regarding *Advaita* (as the Supreme Truth) has been based upon scriptural evidence, by¹ determining the nature of *Aum*. That proposition has also³⁴⁰

² *The truth, etc.* – The Ultimate Truth is that there is only one entity which may be called either as *Jiva* or as Brahman. The *Jiva* as separate from Brahman, does never exist.

³³⁶ 242

CHAPTER III
ON ADVAITA

³³⁷ 243

³³⁸ The original editor inserted "i.e. the Guru" by hand

³³⁹ The original editor added underline by hand

⁺ Akasa means SPACE. It is not the nihilistic Void, but the Unlimited, Uncharacterisable, Indescribable Undifferentiated and Illimitable knowledge – all these being like space. The original editor inserted footnote by hand

¹ *By the, etc.* – This has been done in the first chapter of the book, *viz.*, the *Āgama Prakarana* which deals with the subject-matter from the scriptural standpoint.

³⁴⁰ The original editor inserted "also" by hand

been established by rationally³⁴¹ proving² the unreality of the distinction^c implied by the external objects (of experience). Again the third chapter dealing with *Advaita* has directly established the proposition on the authority of scripture and reason with the concluding statement³ that “This alone is the Ultimate Truth”. At the end of the previous chapter it has been hinted that the opinions of the dualists and the nihilists, who are opposed to the philosophy of *Advaita* which gives the true import of the scriptures, bear the name of true philosophy. But that is not true because of their mutual contradictions and also because of their being vitiated by attachment to their own opinions and aversion³⁴² to those of others. The philosophy of *Advaita* has been extolled as the right philosophy on⁴ account of its being free from any vitiation (referred to above regarding the theories of the dualists and nihilists). Now is undertaken the chapter styled *Alātasānti* (i.e., on the quenching of the fire-brand) in order to conclude the final examination for the establishment of the philosophy of *Advaita*, by following the process known as the method⁵ of disagreement, which is done by showing here in detail that other systems cannot be said to be true philosophy. For there are mutual contradictions implied in them. The first verse has for its purpose the salutation to the promulgator⁶ of the philosophy of *Advaita*, conceiving him as identical with the *Advaita* Truth. The salutation to the teacher is made in commencing a scripture in order to bring the undertaking to a successful end. The word “*Ākāsakalpa*” in the text means

³⁴¹ The original editor inserted “rationally” by hand

² *Proving, etc.* – This has been done in the second chapter.

^c between waking & dream. The original editor inserted footnote by hand

³ *Statement – Comp.* the 48th verse of the *Kārikā* of the third chapter.

³⁴² 244

CHAPTER IV

QUENCHING OF FIRE-BRAND

10

⁴ *On account, etc.* – One of the tests of Truth is that it does not contradict anything. The Ultimate Truth is that by knowing which everything else can be^c known. The fact of non-duality satisfies this condition and therefore it is called the Ultimate Truth or Reality.

^c becomes in similitude only.

⁵ *Method of, etc.* – This is one of the processes of inference; the other is known as the method of agreement. It has been shown in the second chapter that what is caused or what comes into being is unreal. Here it is shown that what is not untruth is not caused also. That is to say, the *Kārikā* will show in this chapter the absence of causality in *Ātman* and thus establish the Ultimate Reality of Self.

⁶ *Promulgator, etc.* – *Nārāyana* or the Lord Himself is said to be the promulgator of this philosophy which was handed down to Gaudapāda. The salutation is made to *Nārāyana* at the commencement of the chapter.

resembling *Ākāśa*, that is to say, slightly⁷ different from *Ākāśa*. What is the purpose of such knowledge which resembles *Ākāśa*? By such *Knowledge* is known the nature of the *Dharmas*⁸ (i.e., the attributes of *Ātman*). The attributes are the same as the substance. What is the nature of these *Dharmas*? They also can be known by the analogy⁹ of *Ākāśa*, that is to say, these *Dharmas* also resemble *Ākāśa*. The word “*Jneyābhinnā*” in the text is another attribute of “*Jñānam*” or Knowledge and means that this knowledge is not¹⁰ separate from the *Ātmans* (*Jivas*) which are the objects of knowledge. This identity of the knowledge and the knowable is like³⁴³ the identity of fire¹¹ and heat and the sun and its light. I bow^Δ to the God, known as *Nārāyana*^{*,12} who by knowledge, non-different from the nature of *Ātman* (the object of knowledge) and which resembles *Ākāśa*, knew the *Dharmas* which, again, may be compared to *Ākāśa*. The import of the words “*Dvipadām Varam*” (Supreme among the bipeds), is that *Nārāyana* is the greatest

⁷ *Slightly, etc.* – *Ākāśa* is slightly different from knowledge which is all sentiency. The analogy is made with reference to the all-pervading characteristic of *Ākāśa* which is similar to *Jñānam* or knowledge.

⁸ *Dharmas* – The word “*Dharma*” literally means “attribute”. Attribute, according to Vedanta, is non-different from substance. Hence “*Dharma*” also is non-different from Brahman. The word *Dharma* is, in the text, synonymous with knowledge or *Jñānam*. The word “*Dharma*” is used by Gaudapāda to mean “*Jīva*” or embodied being. “*Jīva*” is identical with “knowledge”, “Brahman”. The plural number is used on account of the plurality of “*Jivas*,” which is admitted from the empirical standpoint.

⁹ *Analogy, etc.* – The *Jīva* is, as Brahman is, in reality, as all-pervading as the *Ākāśa* (or *Jñānam*).

¹⁰ *Not separate, etc.* – If knowledge is intrinsically separate from its object, i.e., the *Jīva* or the Brahman, then one can never know, by such knowledge, the nature of *Jīva* or Brahman. The knower, knowledge and the object of knowledge are really identical and denote the same Reality.

³⁴³ 245

CHAPTER IV

QUENCHING OF FIRE-BRAND

10

¹¹ *Fire, etc.* – That is to say, from the standpoints of the fire and the sun, the heat and the light are identical with the fire and the sun.

^Δ This is merely to show his respect for the guru for only a gnani can make you realise Truth. The original editor inserted footnote “This is merely to show his respect for the guru for only a gnani can make you realise Truth.” By hand

* Space is Narayana, atman, guru, truth The original editor inserted footnote by hand

¹² *Nārāyana* – The story runs thus: – In ancient times Gaudapāda retired to *Badarikāśrama*,⁺ in the interior of the Himalayas,⁼ and there worshipped with great austerity the human figure of the Almighty Lord.*

⁺the same as Badrinath.

⁼in the latter years of his life

^{*}this is an imagined concoction.

of all men, characterised by two legs, that is to say, he is the “*Purushottama*”, the best of all men. By the adoration of the teacher it is implied that the purpose of this chapter is to establish, by the refutation of the opposite views, *Advaita* which gives the philosophy of the Ultimate Reality, characterised by the identity of the knower, knowledge and the object of knowledge.

(“Hindi³⁴⁴ passage omitted here”)

2. I salute this Yoga known as the *Asparśa* (i.e., free from all touch which implies duality), taught through the³⁴⁵ scripture, – the Yoga which promotes the happiness of all beings and conduces to the well-being of all and which is free from strife and contradictions.

ŚANKARA’S COMMENTARY.

Now salutation is made to the Yoga taught by the *Advaita* Philosophy, in order to extol it over all the other systems. The word *Asparśayoga*¹ in the text means the Yoga which is always and in all respects free from *sparśa* or relationship with anything and which* is of the same² nature as Brahman. This Yoga is well known as the *Asparśayoga* to all Knowers of Brahman. This Yoga is conducive³ to the happiness of all beings. There are certain forms of Yoga, such as *Tapas* or austerity, which, though conducive to the supreme^c happiness,⁺ are associated with misery. But this is not of that kind. Then, what is its nature? It tends to the happiness of all³⁴⁶ beings. It may however be

³⁴⁴ 246

CHAPTER IV QUENCHING OF FIRE-BRAND

³⁴⁵ 247

CHAPTER IV QUENCHING OF FIRE-BRAND

¹ *Asparśayoga* – As a matter of fact there is a contradiction involved in this word. For, the word “*Asparśa*”, meaning freedom from relation, indicates only non-duality which by its very nature has no contact with any external⁺ thing, as such a thing is ever non-existent. The word *Yoga*, meaning ‘contact’ implies more than one. Gaudapāda names the path of knowledge as *Asparśayoga*, as the word *Yoga* was used at his time also to denote the method for realising the Ultimate Truth.

⁺other

* stateThe original editor inserted footnote by hand

² *Same nature, etc.* – The *Jñānam* through which the aspirant realises Brahman is identical with Brahman itself.

³ *Conducive, etc.* – Because *Jñāna Yoga* is the surest and most direct method for the realisation of the highest Truth.

^cpersonalThe original editor inserted footnote by hand

⁺not the happiness of BrahmanThe original editor inserted footnote by hand

³⁴⁶ The original editor added underline by hand

contended that the enjoyment of certain desires gives pleasure but certainly does not tend to one's well-being. But this *Asparśayoga* conduces to both⁴ happiness and well-being. For,⁵ it never changes its nature. Moreover, this⁶ *Yoga* is free from strife, that is to say, it never indulges in any passage-at-words, which is inevitable in all disputes consisting of two opposite sides. Why so? For, it is non-contradictory⁷ in nature. To this kind of *Yoga*, taught in the scripture, I bow.⁸

("Hindi³⁴⁷ passage omitted here")

3. *Quarrelling among themselves, some disputants postulate that an existing entity undergoes evolution, whereas other disputants, proud of their understanding, maintain that evolution proceeds from a non-existing entity.*

ŚANKARA'S COMMENTARY.

How do the dualists* quarrel with one another? It is thus replied:¹ Some disputants, such as the followers³⁴⁸ of the *Sāṃkhya* system, admit production as the effect of an entity that is already existent. But this is not the view of all the dualists. For, the intelligent followers of the *Nyāya* and the *Vaiśeṣika* systems, that is to say, those who believe that they possess wisdom, maintain that evolution proceeds from a non-existing cause. The meaning is that these disputants, quarrelling among themselves, claim victory over their respective opponents.

⁴ *Both, etc.*—It is because the aim of this *Yoga* is the realisation of Self which is of the nature of Existence-Knowledge-Bliss Absolute.

⁵ *For, etc.*—The idea of duality and change, implying loss, is at the root of all miseries. This *Yoga* enables us to realise the Self which is free from all ideas of change.

⁶ *This Yoga, etc.*—The non-dualist knows that even those who come to quarrel with him are, in reality, his own self. Therefore he does not look upon any one as his opponent.

⁷ *Non-contradictory*—One who knows everything as his own self does not contradict others. For, one cannot contradict his own self.

⁸ *Bow*—The salutation is meant to direct the attention of the students to this most valuable and easy way of realising the Truth.

³⁴⁷ 248

CHAPTER IV

QUENCHING OF FIRE-BRAND

* It is only dualists who quarrel, not real Advaitins. Pseudo-advaitins who merely use advaitic language, also quarrel with others. The original editor inserted footnote by hand

¹ The disputation among the dualists is mentioned here in order to make clear the non-contradictory nature of the non-dualists. All the dualists believe in the act of creation or evolution.

³⁴⁸ 249

CHAPTER IV

QUENCHING OF FIRE-BRAND

("Hindi passage omitted here")

*4. *The existent cannot (again) pass into (birth) existence. Nor can the non-existent be born or come into being as existent. Thus disputing among themselves, they, as a matter of fact, tend to establish the Advaita view and support the Ajāti or the absolute non-evolution (of what exists).*

ŚANKARA'S COMMENTARY.

What do they, by refuting each other's conclusions and quarrelling among themselves, really establish? It is thus replied:—No¹ entity which is already in existence can again pass into birth. The reason is that as entity, it already exists. It is just like the *Ātman*, which already being in existence, cannot be born again as a new entity. Thus argues the supporter of³⁴⁹ evolution from *non-ens*⁺ (*i.e.*, from a non-existing cause) and refutes the *Sāmkhya* theory that an existing cause is born again as an effect. Similarly, the follower of the *Sāmkhya* theory refutes the supporter of the *non-ens*⁺³⁵⁰ view regarding creation by a non-existing cause. He declares that a non-existing² cause, on account of its very non-existence, cannot, like the horns of a hare, produce an effect.

* Here begins the enquiry into CausalityThe original editor inserted footnote by hand

¹ *No, etc.*—This is the view of the followers of the *Naiyāyika* and *Vaiāeshika* systems. According to them, an existing entity cannot be born as an effect. If an entity already exists, it is not said to be produced again. This view can be stated thus:—A cannot produce B, as A is always A and B is always B. It may be contended that A + C may produce B. Therefore C is something which does not exist in the cause A. Therefore the effect B does not come out of the cause A.

³⁴⁹ 250

CHAPTER IV

QUENCHING OF FIRE-BRAND

⁺ Non-ens means non-entityThe original editor inserted footnote by hand

³⁵⁰ The original editor inserted footnote by hand

² *Non-existing, etc.*—This is the view of the followers of the *Sāmkhya* system. According to them, the existing entity cannot undergo any annihilation; nor can the non-existing entity pass into existence. The existing entity is existent in times, past, present and future. A non-existing entity, such as the child of a barren woman, is always non-existent. By "birth", the *Sāmkhyas* mean manifestation and by "death", they understand the return of the effect into the cause. The sesame seed produces oil. It means that oil, already existent in the seed, manifests itself in the form of the effect when the seed (the cause) is pressed. But one cannot get oil by pressing sand, as oil is never present in the sand. The clay which contains in potential form the pot, manifests the pot. Again the destruction of the pot means its going back to the original cause, *viz.*, the clay. There is no absolute destruction of the pot.

Thus³ quarrelling among themselves, by supporting “existent” and “non-existent” causes, they refute their respective opponent’s views and declare, in effect, the truth that there is no creation at all.

(“Hindi³⁵¹ passage omitted here”)

5. *We approve the Ajāti or non-creation declared by them. We do not quarrel with them. Now, hear from us (the Ultimate Reality) which is free from all disputations.*

ŚANKARA’S COMMENTARY.

We simply accept the view of the *Ajāti* or the absolute non-causation declared by them¹ and say, “Let it be so”. We do not quarrel with them by taking either side in the disputation. In other words, like them, we do not quarrel with each other. Hence, Oh ye pupils, know from us the Ultimate Reality as taught by us, which is free from dispute.

(“Hindi³⁵² passage omitted here”)

6. *The disputants (i.e., the dualists) contend that the ever-unborn (changeless) entity (Ātman) undergoes a change. How does an entity which is changeless and immortal partake of the nature of the mortal?*

ŚANKARA’S COMMENTARY.

³ *Thus, etc.* – Both the theories are based upon causality. But by refuting each other, they, in fact, refute causality itself. For, if an existing thing is produced from an existing cause (as the *Sāmkhyas* profess) then there cannot be, in truth, any causal relation. Similarly, it is absurd to say that a positive thing can be produced by a non-existing cause. Thus the entire theory of causality is refuted. This only establishes the *Advaita* position of *Ajāti* which means that there is no act of creation or manifestation.

³⁵¹ 251

CHAPTER IV

QUENCHING OF FIRE-BRAND

¹ *Them* – The followers of the *Sāmkhya* as well as the *Nyāya* and the *Vaiśeshika* systems.

Both schools by finding fault with each other’s views regarding ‘causal’ relation, tend to establish the truth of *Ajāti* or the absolute non-manifestation of *Ātman*. With regard to causality, we accept that theory that is not refuted by any party, but which must be admitted by all, *viz.*, *Ajāti*.

³⁵² 252

CHAPTER IV

QUENCHING OF FIRE-BRAND

The word “disputant” in the text includes all the dualists, *viz.*, those who believe that evolution proceeds from an existing cause, as well as those who believe its opposite. This verse has already been commented upon.

For the commentary and the note of this *Kārikā* see *Kārikā* 20 of the previous chapter.

(“Hindi passage omitted here”)

7. *The immortal cannot become mortal, nor can the mortal ever become immortal. For, it is never possible for a thing to change its nature.*

(“Hindi passage omitted here”)

8. *How can he, who believes that the naturally immortal entity becomes mortal, maintain that the immortal, after passing through birth, retains its changeless nature?*

ŚANKARA’S³⁵³ COMMENTARY.

These verses have already been explained. They are repeated here in order to justify our view that the disputants mentioned above only contradict each other.

See *Kārikās* 21 and 22 of the previous chapter.

(“Hindi passage omitted here”)

9. *By Prakriti⁺ or the inherent nature of a thing is understood that which, when acquired, becomes completely part and parcel of the thing, that which is its very characteristic quality, that which is part of it from its very birth, that which does not depend upon anything extraneous for its origin and that which never ceases to be itself.*

ŚANKARA’S COMMENTARY.

Even¹ the nature of a thing in ordinary experience³⁵⁴ does not undergo any reversal.* What is meant by the nature of a thing? This is thus replied:—The word “*samsiddhi*” means “complete attainment”. The nature of a thing is formed by such complete attainment as in the case of the perfected *Yogis* who^c attain to such superhuman powers as *Animā*,² etc. These powers thus acquired by the *Yogis*⁼ never undergo any transformation in past and future. Therefore these form the very nature of the *Yogis*. Similarly, the characteristic quality of a thing, such as heat or light of fire and the like, never undergoes any change either in time or space. So also the nature of a thing which is³⁵⁵ part of it from its very birth, as the flying power of the bird, etc., through the sky, is called *Prakriti*. Anything else which is not produced by any other cause (except the thing itself), such as the running downwards of water is also called *Prakriti*. And lastly, anything which³ does not cease to be itself is known popularly to be its *Prakriti*. The purport of the *Kārikā* is that if in the case of empirical entities, which are only imagined,⁴ their *nature* or *Prakriti* does not undergo any change, then how should it be otherwise in the case of the immortal or unchanging nature regarding the Ultimate Reality, whose very *Prakriti* is *Ajāti* or absolute non-manifestation.

(“Hindi passage omitted here”)

10. *All the Jivas are, by their very nature,^Δ free from senility and death. They think, as it were, that they are subject to these and thus by this very thought they appear to deviate from their very nature.*

ŚANKARA’S³⁵⁶ COMMENTARY.

¹ *Even, etc.*—The purport is that if the unchangeability of the nature of a thing is noticed in ordinary experiences, then it applies with greater force to Brahman whose changeless and immortal nature can never undergo any transformation.

³⁵⁴ The original editor inserted footnote by hand

* Thus a horse does not become a cat even in this empirical world. The original editor inserted footnote by hand

^c thinks he The original editor inserted footnote by hand

² *Animā*—There are eight superhuman powers which the *Yogis* can attain to as the result of their *yogic* perfection. The word ‘*Animā*’ means the power of becoming as small as an atom.

⁼ they believe The original editor inserted footnote by hand

³⁵⁵ 254

CHAPTER IV

QUENCHING OF FIRE-BRAND

³ *Which, etc.*—As the characteristics of a jar or the *jarness* of it which depends entirely upon the jar and not upon anything else.

⁴ *Imagined*—According to *Advaita* Vedānta the characteristics of entities of ordinary experience, which are thought of as unchanging by the dualists, are mere imagination.

^Δ as atman The original editor inserted footnote “as atman” by hand

³⁵⁶ 255

What is the basis of that *Prakriti* whose change is imagined by the disputants? What, again, is the defect in such imagination? This is thus replied:—The words “Free from senility and death,” in the text signify freedom from all changes¹ characterised by senility, death, etc. Who are thus free (from all changes)? These are all the *Jivas*, who are, by their very nature, free from all changes. Though the *Jivas* are such by their very nature, yet they think, as it were, that they are subject to senility and death. By such imagination² about their selves, like the imagination of the snake in the rope, they (appear to) deviate from their nature. This happens on account of their identification, through thinking³⁵⁷, with senility and death. That is to say, they (appear to) fall from their real nature by this defect in their thought³⁵⁸.

(“Hindi passage omitted here”)

11. *The*³⁵⁹ *disputant*,* according to whom the cause itself is the effect, maintains that the cause itself is born as the effect. How is it possible for the cause to be unborn if it be said to be born (as the effect)? How, again, is it said to be eternal if it be subject to modification (i.e., birth)?

ŚANKARA’S COMMENTARY.

How is it that the *Sāmkhyas*, who believe in the evolution of an existing cause, maintain a view which is irrational? It is thus replied by the followers of the *Vaiśeṣhika* system: Those who say that the cause, that is to say, such material cause as clay, is, in itself, the effect; or in other words those disputants who assert that the cause itself

CHAPTER IV

QUENCHING OF FIRE-BRAND

¹ *Changes*—There are six changes associated with objects in nature. They are: birth, existence, growth, maturity, decay and death.

² *Imagination*—That the *Jivas* are subject to birth and death is a mere imagination* These states do not exist except in the thought of the thinker. Even when the *Jiva* thinks himself to be subject to birth and death, he is, in reality, free from these changes. Such imagination cannot affect his real nature as all the water of the mirage cannot soak a grain of sand in the desert. There is no change of Reality in *Prakriti*.⁺ If one sees any change it is due to his *Kalpanā*. The rope never becomes the snake.

* no more real than a similar imagination during dream.

+ here prakriti means ‘inherent-nature’ not ‘root-matter’

³⁵⁷ The original editor added underline by hand

³⁵⁸ The original editor added underline by hand

³⁵⁹ 256

CHAPTER IV

QUENCHING OF FIRE-BRAND

* the Sankhyas. The original editor inserted footnote by hand

changes into the effect, maintain, as a matter of fact, that the ever-existent and unborn cause, namely the *Pradhāna*,⁺ etc., is born again as the effect, such as *Mahat*, etc. If *Pradhāna* be born in the form of *Mahat*, etc., then how can it be designated as birthless? To say that it is *unborn*, i.e., immutable and at the same time *born*, i.e., passing into change, involves a contradiction. Further, the *Sāmkhyas* designate *Pradhāna* as eternal. How is it possible for *Pradhāna* to be eternal¹ if even a part of it be affected by change? In other words, ordinary experience does not furnish us with the instance of a jar, composed of parts, which, if broken in any part, can still be called permanent or immutable. The purport is that a contradiction is obvious in the statement that it is affected partly by change and at the same time it is unborn and eternal.

(“Hindi³⁶⁰ passage omitted here”)

12. *If, as you say, the cause is non-different from the effect, then the effect also must be unborn. Further, how can the cause be permanent if it be non-different from the effect which is born?*

ŚANKARA’S COMMENTARY.

This verse is meant to make the meaning of the previous one clearer. If your object be to maintain that the unborn cause is identical with the effect, then it necessarily follows that the effect also becomes equally unborn. But this¹ is certainly a contradiction to say that a thing is an effect and at the same time unborn. There is a further difficulty. In the case of identity² of the cause and the effect, how can, according to you, the cause, which³ is non-different from the born effect, be permanent and

⁺ Pradhana is matter, Purusha is mind. The original editor inserted footnote by hand

¹ *Eternal* – According to the *Sāmkhya* theory, the *Pradhāna* or *Prakṛiti* is composed of three parts, viz., *Sattva*, *Rajas* and *Tamas*. An entity composed of parts can never be termed eternal or permanent. That which is composed of parts, must, in course of time, undergo decomposition.

³⁶⁰ 257

CHAPTER IV

QUENCHING OF FIRE-BRAND

If the identity of cause and effect be maintained then it may be asked if the cause be identical with the effect or if the effect be identical with the cause. In the former case of identity, the effect becomes unborn and in the latter case the cause becomes something born and loses its immutable and permanent character.

¹ *This, etc.* – For, an effect is that which is born out of a cause.

² *Identity, etc.* – If the cause and effect be identical, then how can one distinguish between the cause and the effect?

³ *Which is, etc.* – If the cause is identical with the born effect then the cause cannot be called permanent and immutable, as birth means change.

immutable? It is not possible to imagine that a part of a hen is being cooked and that another part is laying eggs.

("Hindi³⁶¹ passage omitted here")

13. *There is no illustration to support the view of him who says that the effect is born from the unborn cause. Again, if it be said that the effect is produced from a cause which is itself born then it leads to a regressus ad infinitum.*

ŚANKARA'S COMMENTARY.

Moreover, the disputant¹ who says that the effect is produced from an unborn cause, cannot furnish an illustration to support his view. In other words, it is consequently established that nothing is born from an unborn cause as there is no illustration to support this view. If,² on the other hand, it be contended that the effect is born from a born cause, then that cause must be born from some other born cause and so on, which position never enables us to reach a cause which is, in itself, unborn. In other words, we are faced with an infinite regress.

("Hindi³⁶² passage omitted here")

14. *How can they, who assert that the effect is the cause of the cause and the cause is the cause of the effect, maintain the beginninglessness of both the cause and the effect?*

ŚANKARA'S COMMENTARY.

This view avoids this difficulty by denying any *act* of birth in the cause. There is only one existence, *viz.*, Brahman, which is called the cause by the ignorant people whose mind is still moving in the causal plane.

³⁶¹ 258

CHAPTER IV

QUENCHING OF FIRE-BRAND

¹ *Disputant*—The follower of the *Sāmkhya* system contends that such effects as *Mahat*, etc., are evolved from the unborn *Pradhāna*, the cause being non-different from the effect. The *Kārikā* disproves this theory of the *Sāmkhyas* as well as the creation theory of some Vedāntists. This theory is a matter of inference. But there is no illustration to draw the inference.

² *If, etc.*—If the effect be produced from a born cause (*i.e.*, a cause which is the effect of some other cause), then there will be an endless regress and we shall never arrive at a cause which is, itself, unborn.

³⁶² 259

CHAPTER IV

QUENCHING OF FIRE-BRAND

The Śruti, in the passage, “When all this has, verily, become his Ātman,” declares, from the standpoint of the Ultimate Reality, the absence of duality. From this standpoint of the scriptural text, it is said: The cause,¹ i.e., the merit (Dharma) and the demerit (Adharma), etc., has, for its cause, the effect, viz., the aggregate of the body, etc. Similarly, the cause,² viz., merit and demerit, etc., is the cause of the effect, viz., the aggregate of the body, etc. How can disputants³ who maintain this view, that both the cause and the effect are with⁴ beginning on account of mutual interdependence of the cause and the effect, assert that both the cause and the effect are without beginning? In other words, this position implies an³⁶³ inherent contradiction.⁵ The Ātman,⁶ which is eternal and immutable, can never become either the cause or the effect.

(“Hindi passage omitted here”)

15. Those who maintain that the effect is the cause⁼ of the cause and the cause is the cause of the effect, describe, as a matter of fact, the evolution after the manner of the birth of the father from the son.⁺

ŚANKARA’S³⁶⁴ COMMENTARY.

¹ Cause, etc. – The birth in a body produces the effect, viz., the merit and the demerit.

² Cause, etc. – The merit and the demerit determine the birth in a body. Thus it is seen, according to this view, the cause produces the effect and the effect, in its turn, produces the cause.

³ Disputants – This is the view held by the Mimāṃsakas. They maintain that the endless chain of life and death, consisting of the cause and the effect, is without beginning. It is just like the beginninglessness of the hen and the egg. This view is true from the relative standpoint.

⁴ With beginning – It is because the cause has its beginning in the effect and the effect has its beginning in the cause.

³⁶³ 260

CHAPTER IV

QUENCHING OF FIRE-BRAND

⁵ Contradiction – It is because the Mimāṃsakas admitting the beginning of the cause and the effect, again assert that both are without beginning.

⁶ Ātman, etc. – The opponent may contend that the Ātman has become both the cause and the effect. The cause and the effect may have a beginning because both are the modifications of Ātman. But from the standpoint of their substratum, viz., the Ātman, they are without beginning. This contention is baseless – as the Ātman which is immutable, eternal and without parts cannot undergo any modification in the forms of cause and effect.

⁼ this refers to Final Cause.

⁺ The mango fruit contains a new seed, hence is both cause & effect Use of word ‘cause’ here is dangerous & ambiguous The original editor inserted footnote by hand

³⁶⁴ 261

CHAPTER IV

QUENCHING OF FIRE-BRAND

How does the contention of the opponent imply a contradiction? It is thus replied:—The admission that the cause is produced from an effect, which is itself born of a cause, carries with it the contradiction which may be stated to be like the birth of the father from the son.

(“Hindi passage omitted here”)

16. *In case causality be still maintained, the order in which cause and effect succeed each other must be stated.* If it be said that they appear simultaneously, then they, being like the two horns of an animal, cannot be mutually related to each other.*

ŚANKARA’S COMMENTARY.

If it be contended that the contradiction, pointed out above, cannot be valid, then the opponent should determine the order in which cause and effect succeed each other. The opponent has to show that the “cause” which is antecedent, produces the “effect” which is subsequent. For the following reason also, the order of “cause” and “effect” must be shown. For if cause and effect arise simultaneously, then they cannot be related as the cause and the effect, as it is impossible to establish the causal relation between the two horns of a cow produced simultaneously.

This *Kārikā* refutes causality from the point of time.

(“Hindi³⁶⁵ passage omitted here”)

17. *Your cause cannot be established if it be produced from the effect. How can the cause, which is itself not established, give birth to the effect?*

ŚANKARA’S COMMENTARY.

How can there be no causal relation? It is thus replied:—The cause¹ cannot have a definite existence if it is to be born of an effect which is, itself, yet unborn, and

* of J.S. Mill’s ‘antecedent & consequent’ The original editor inserted footnote by hand
365 262

CHAPTER IV QUENCHING OF FIRE-BRAND

This *Kārikā* proves that the very idea of the causal relation involves an absurdity. The contention of the opponent is this:—The cause and the effect are dependent upon each other for their mutual production. A house is built for the purpose of living. The thought of living results in the building of the house. The absurdity of this contention is thus shown:—The general law of causality is that the cause is antecedent and the effect is subsequent to and dependent upon a cause. If the effect be the cause of a cause, then the cause is said to be born

therefore which is non-existent like the horns of a hare. How² can the cause contemplated by you, which is, itself, indefinite and which is non-existent like the horns of a hare, produce an effect? Two things which are mutually dependent upon each other for their production and which are like³ the horns of a hare, cannot be related as cause and effect or in⁴ any other way.

(“Hindi³⁶⁶ passage omitted here”)

18. *If the cause is produced from the effect and if the effect is, again, produced from the cause, which of the two is born first upon which depends the birth of the other?*

ŚANKARA’S COMMENTARY.

Though any relation between cause and effect has been found to be an impossibility, yet it may be contended by the opponent that the cause and the effect, though not causally related, yet depend upon each other for their mutual existence. As a reply to this contention we ask: Which of the two, the cause and the effect, is antecedent to the other, upon the previous existence of which, the subsequent existence of the other is dependent?

If both the cause and the effect are mutually dependent, then how can we say that one is prior to the other? If the priority of one³⁶⁷ cannot be established, then it cannot be proved that one is dependent upon the other for its existence.

from something which is not yet in existence. If the cause is to be produced from a non-existent effect, then the cause itself becomes non-existent. And the cause, being itself non-existent, can but produce an effect which also is non-existent. Thus both cause and effect become non-existent like the horns of a hare. Therefore they cannot be related as cause and effect, which relation can subsist only between two existing entities.

¹ *Cause, etc.*—If you say that the cause is produced from the effect (which, itself, on account of its appearing after cause, is yet non-existent), then cause cannot be established. For, in that case it is also non-existent, as it is admitted to be the product of an effect which is, itself, non-existent.

² *How can, etc.*—If the cause itself be thus proved to be non-existent, how can it, then, produce an effect? If it cannot produce an effect, how do you call it the cause?

³ *Like, etc.*—It is because both the cause and the effect have been proved to be non-existent.

⁴ *In any, etc.*—Any other relation, such as that of the container and the contained, between two things which are non-existent becomes an absurdity.

³⁶⁶ 263

CHAPTER IV

QUENCHING OF FIRE-BRAND

³⁶⁷ 264

CHAPTER IV

("Hindi passage omitted here")

19. *The inability (to reply), the ignorance (about the matter) and the impossibility of (establishing) the order of succession (of the cause and the effect) clearly lead the wise to stick to their theory of absolute non-evolution (Ajāti).⁺*

ŚANKARA'S COMMENTARY.

If you think that this¹ cannot be explained then this inability shows your ignorance, that is to say, it demonstrates that you are deluded regarding the Knowledge of Reality. Again, the order of succession, pointed out by you—that the effect comes from the cause and the cause comes from the effect—is also inconsistent.² Thus is shown the impropriety of the causal relation between the cause and the effect. This³ leads the wise among the disputants, by showing the fallacy in each other's arguments, to declare, in effect, the non-evolution of things³⁶⁸

("Hindi³⁶⁹ passage omitted here")

20. *The illustration of the seed and the sprout is itself a matter which is yet to be proved. The middle term (that is, the illustration) which is itself yet to be proved (to be true) cannot be used for establishing a proposition to be proved.*

ŚANKARA'S COMMENTARY.

(Objection)—We have asserted the causal relation between the cause and the effect. But you have raised mere verbal¹ difficulties to show the inconsistency in our

QUENCHING OF FIRE-BRAND

⁺ Vedantins say: "We do not know that there is any causality. We do not want to beat ourselves by accepting it on faith. So we leave it as unproved." The original editor inserted footnote by hand

¹ *This, etc.*—That is to say, which one of the cause and the effect is antecedent and which is subsequent. It is because both are mutually dependent.

² *Inconsistent*—See the previous *Kārikā*.

³ *This, etc.*—The followers of the *Sāṃkhya* as well as of the *Nyāya* and *Vaiśeṣika* systems, supporting respectively the evolution of things from an existing and non-existing cause, indicate the fallacy in each other's arguments. It has also been demonstrated that there cannot be any order of succession of cause and effect in the evolution. Thus the disputants ultimately support the view of *Ajāti* or non-evolution of things as stated by us.

³⁶⁸ The original editor deleted "(which is our opinion)" by hand

³⁶⁹ 265

CHAPTER IV

QUENCHING OF FIRE-BRAND

statement and made a caricature of our standpoint by pointing out its absurdity like the birth of the father from the son or a causal relation between the two horns (of a bull), etc. We do not, for a moment, admit the production of an effect from a cause not already existent or of a cause from an effect not established.

(Reply) – What is, then, your contention!

(Objection) – We admit the causal relation as² in the case of the seed and the sprout.

(Reply) – To this we reply as follows: – The illustration of the causal relation existing between the seed and the sprout is itself the same as the major term in my syllogism, that is to say, the³³ illustration itself is to be proved.

(Objection) – It is apparent that the causal relation of the seed and the sprout is without beginning.

(Reply)³⁷⁰ – It is not so. The beginning of all antecedents must be admitted, as is the case with the consequents. As⁴ a sprout just produced from a seed is with beginning, similarly the seed also, produced from another sprout (existing in the past), by the very succession implied in the act of production, is with beginning. Therefore all antecedent sprouts as well as seeds are with beginning. As every seed and every sprout, among the seeds and the sprouts, are with beginning, so it is unreasonable to say that any one of these is without beginning. This is also equally applicable to the argument of the cause and the effect.

(Objection) – Each⁵ of the series of the seeds and the sprouts is without beginning.

¹ *Verbal, etc.* – The opponent contends that the difficulties raised are merely verbal.

² *As in, etc.* – It is like the production of the seed from the sprout and *vice versa*.

³ *The illustration, etc.* – Śankara contends that it is to be proved that the seed is produced from a beginningless sprout or the sprout is produced from a beginningless seed.

³⁷⁰ 266

CHAPTER IV

QUENCHING OF FIRE-BRAND

⁴ *As a sprout, etc.* – The opponent contends that the *bija* (seed or cause) is without beginning (*Anādi*) because he wants to make it *Aja* or beginningless. But Śankara says that every *bija* or seed is produced and therefore every *bija* is with beginning. Hence the cause cannot be *Aja* or birthless.

⁵ *Each, etc.* – The opponent contends that there is a series of seed and there is another series of sprout. From the 'seed series' is produced the 'sprout series' and *vice versa*. Similarly, from the 'cause series' is produced the 'effect series' and *vice versa*.

(Reply)—No. The unity or oneness of such series cannot be justified. Even those who maintain the beginninglessness of the seed and the sprout, do not admit the existence of a thing known as the series of the seed and the sprout apart from the seed and the sprout. Nor do they admit such a series in the case of the cause and the effect. Therefore it has been rightly asked, “How do you assert the beginninglessness of the cause and the effect?” Other explanations being unreasonable, we have not raised any verbal difficulty. Even⁶ in our ordinary experience expert logicians do not use anything, which is yet to be established, as the middle term or illustration in order to establish relation between the major and the minor terms of a syllogism. The word *Hetu* or the middle term is used here in the sense of illustration, as it is the illustration³⁷¹ which leads to the establishment of a proposition. In the context illustration is meant and not reason.

(“Hindi passage omitted here”)

21. *The ignorance regarding the antecedence and the subsequence of the cause and the effect clearly proves the absence of evolution or creation. If the effect (Dharma, i.e.,³⁷² the Jiva) has really been produced from a cause, then why can you not point out the antecedent cause?*

ŚANKARA’S COMMENTARY.

How do the wise assert the view of *Ajāti* or absolute non-evolution? It is thus replied:—The¹ very fact that one does not know the antecedence and the subsequence of the cause and the effect is, in itself, the clearest indication of absolute non-evolution. If² the effect (*Dharma, i.e., the Jiva*) be taken as produced (from a cause) then why cannot its antecedent cause be pointed out? It goes without saying that one who accepts birth

⁶ *Even, etc.*—The illustration of the seed and the sprout has been given by the opponent to prove the beginninglessness of the cause and the effect. But Śankara contends that the beginninglessness of the seed and the sprout in the illustration has not yet been proved. As a matter of fact it has been shown that both the seed and the sprout are with beginning. Hence this illustration which is, itself, not proved cannot be admitted in support of the contention.

³⁷¹ 267

CHAPTER IV

QUENCHING OF FIRE-BRAND

³⁷² 268

CHAPTER IV

QUENCHING OF FIRE-BRAND

¹ *The very, etc.*—The fact of birth can be said to be established if the order of the succession of cause and effect be established. In the absence of such order there cannot be any birth or evolution.

² *If, etc.*—The idea of ‘cause’ cannot be thought of without the idea of ‘effect’ and *vice versa*. Therefore we cannot say which one is antecedent. Hence the idea of evolution (*Janma*), *i.e.,* an antecedent cause giving birth to a subsequent effect, is due to ignorance or *Avidyā*.

as a fact must also know its antecedent cause. For, the relationship of the cause and the effect is inseparable and therefore cannot be given up. Therefore the absence of knowledge (regarding the cause) clearly indicates the fact of absolute non-evolution.

("Hindi passage omitted here")

22. *Nothing, whatsoever, is born either of itself or of another. Nothing is ever produced whether it be being or non-being or both being and non-being.*

ŚANKARA'S³⁷³ COMMENTARY.

For this reason, also, nothing whatsoever is born. That¹ which is (supposed to be) born cannot be born of itself, of another or of both. Nothing,² whether it be existing, or non-existing, or both, is ever born. Of such an entity, birth is not possible in any manner whatsoever. Nothing³ is born out of itself, *i.e.*, from its own form which in itself has not yet come into existence. A jar cannot be produced from the self-same jar. A thing cannot be born from another thing, which is other than itself; as a jar cannot be produced from another jar, or a piece of cloth from another piece of cloth. Similarly, a thing cannot be born both out of itself and another, as that involves a contradiction.⁴ A⁵ jar or a piece of cloth cannot be produced by both a jar and a piece of cloth.

(Objection) – A jar is produced from clay, and a son is born of a father.

(Reply) – Yes, the deluded use a word like "birth" and have a notion corresponding to the word. Both the word and the notion are examined by men of discrimination who wish to ascertain whether these are true or not. After examination

³⁷³ 269

CHAPTER IV

QUENCHING OF FIRE-BRAND

There are six possible alternatives in the case of the birth of a thing. It is either born of itself, or of another, or of both. That which is born is either existing or non-existing or both. This *Kārikā* shows the absurdity of all these positions and conclusively establishes the theory of absolute non-evolution.

¹ *That, etc.* – That is to say, the three alternatives are denied regarding the cause.

² *Nothing, etc.* – In other words, the three alternatives are denied regarding the effect.

³ *Nothing, etc.* – Birth always means change. If a thing produces another thing, it cannot do so without a change in itself. If it undergoes a change, it ceases to be the thing itself. Therefore a thing cannot be the cause of the same thing. A jar cannot be the cause of the very same jar.

⁴ *Contradiction* – For, a cause cannot, at the same time, combine within it two contradictory aspects.

⁵ *A jar, etc.* – Therefore an object which is supposed to be born cannot be born from a cause which is both existing and non-existing.

they come to the conclusion that things, such as a jar or a son, etc., denoted by the words and signified by the notions, are mere verbal⁶ expressions. The scripture also corroborates it, saying, "All effects are mere names and figures of speech". If the thing is ever-existent, then it cannot be born again. The very⁷ existence is the reason for non-evolution. A father⁸ or clay is the³⁷⁴ illustration to support the contention. If these objects, on the other hand, be non-existent, even then they cannot be said to be produced. The very non-existence is the reason. The horns⁹ of a hare are an illustration. If things be both existent and non-existent, then also, it cannot be born. For, such contradictory ideas cannot be associated with a thing. Therefore it is established that nothing whatsoever is born. Those¹⁰ who, again, assert that the very fact of birth is born again, that the cause, the effect and the act of birth form one unity, and also that all objects have only momentary existence, maintain a view which is very far from reason. For a thing immediately after being pointed out as "It is this," ceases to exist and consequently no memory of the thing is possible in the absence of such cognition.

("Hindi³⁷⁵ passage omitted here")

⁶ *Verbal, etc.* — It is because the birth of a son or the production of a jar cannot be proved.

⁷ *The very, etc.* — Birth signifying a change would indicate that the thing, before it was born, had been non-existent. This previous non-existence cannot be reconciled with the idea of its ever-existence.

⁸ *Father, etc.* — If the son or the jar be ever-existent, then they cannot be born from a father or clay.

³⁷⁴ 270

CHAPTER IV

QUENCHING OF FIRE-BRAND

⁹ *Horns, etc.* — Horns of a hare are ever non-existent. Hence no birth can be predicated of them.

¹⁰ *Those, etc.* — This is the view of the Buddhist idealists. According to them, no external objects, corresponding to our idea of them, exist. Idea alone is real. One idea gives birth to another idea. These ideas are momentary. The moment an idea is cognised as such, it vanishes giving birth to another idea. All our notions regarding the cause, the effect and the act of birth form only one unit idea. But this position is absolutely untenable. If one idea be immediately succeeded by another idea, then the antecedent idea is no longer cognised by us. In the absence of such cognition, no memory is possible. If an idea has only a momentary existence, then our very possibility of experience becomes an absurdity. If there cannot be any memory of the antecedent idea, then it is not possible to establish a causal relation between the antecedent and the subsequent ideas.

³⁷⁵ 271

CHAPTER IV

QUENCHING OF FIRE-BRAND

23. *The cause cannot be produced from an effect which is without beginning, nor is the effect born of its own nature (itself). That which is without beginning is necessarily free from birth.*

ŚANKARA'S COMMENTARY.

In accepting the beginninglessness of the cause and the effect you are forced to admit the absence of birth, regarding³⁷⁶ them. How is it so? The¹ cause cannot be produced from an effect, which is without beginning. In other words, you do not certainly mean that the cause is produced from an effect which is, itself, without beginning and free from birth. Nor do you² admit that the effect, by following its own inherent nature, (*i.e.*, without any extraneous cause) is produced from a cause which is unborn and without beginning. Therefore³ by admitting the beginninglessness of the cause and the effect, you, verily, accept the fact of their being never produced. It is because we know from common experience that what is without beginning is also free from birth which means a beginning. Beginning is admitted of a thing which has birth, and not of a thing which has none.

("Hindi passage omitted here")

24. *Subjective knowledge must have an objective cause; otherwise both must be non-existent. For this reason³⁷⁷ as well as that of the experience of pain, the existence of external objects, accepted by other thinkers, should be admitted.*

ŚANKARA'S COMMENTARY.

³⁷⁶ 272

CHAPTER IV

QUENCHING OF FIRE-BRAND

¹ *The cause, etc.*—The *beginningless* effect cannot produce a cause. For, otherwise it cannot be itself an effect. An effect, signifying birth, must have a beginning. Again, if the cause be produced from an effect, then the cause, itself, cannot be without beginning.

² *You, etc.*—It is because if the effect be produced from a cause, it cannot be beginningless.

³ *Therefore, etc.*—If the cause and the effect, on account of their being never born, be ever free from birth, they cannot be cause and effect. For, the words are always associated with birth. Hence the opponent by admitting the beginninglessness of cause and effect accepts, as a matter of fact, the theory of *Ajāti*⁺ or he stultifies himself.

⁺ It is not a theory. Nobody has proved jati; hence we are forced to hold to a-jati

³⁷⁷ 273

CHAPTER IV

QUENCHING OF FIRE-BRAND

An objection is raised in order to strengthen the meaning already stated. The word *Prajñapti* in the text signifies “knowledge”, *i.e.*, the experience of such notions as that of sound, etc. This (subjective) knowledge has a cause, *i.e.*, an (external) agent or object corresponding to it. In other words, we premise that knowledge is not merely subjective but has an object outside the perceiving subject. Cognition of sound, etc., is not possible without objects. For, such experience is always produced by a cause. In¹ the absence of such (external) object, the variety and multiplicity of experiences such as sound, touch, colour, *viz.*, blue, yellow, red, etc., would not have existed. But the varieties are not non-existent, for these are directly perceived by all. Hence, because the variety of manifold experiences exist, it is necessary to admit the existence—as supported by the system of the opposite school—of external objects which are outside the ideas of the perceiving subject. The subjective knowledge has one characteristic alone, *i.e.*, it is of the very nature of illumination³⁷⁸ (*i.e.* being aware)³⁷⁹. It does not admit of any *i.e.* being aware variety within itself. The variety of experiences of colour, such as blueness, yellowness, etc., cannot possibly be explained, by merely imagining a variety in the subjective knowledge, without admitting variety of³⁸⁰ external objects which are the substratum of these multiple colours. In other words, no variety of colour is possible in a (white) crystal without its coming in contact with such adjuncts as the external objects which possess such colours as blueness, etc. For this additional reason also one is forced to admit the existence of external object,—supported by the scripture of the opposite school,—an object which is external to the knowledge (of the perceiving subject): Misery² caused by burns, etc., is experienced² by all. Such pain as is caused by burns, etc., would not have been felt in the absence of the fire, etc., which is the cause of the burns and which exists independent of the knowledge (of the perceiving subject).

This *Kārikā* gives the views of the dualists who believe in the reality of external objects. They argue thus: Perceptual Knowledge is not possible without the contact with an external object. Mental impressions are always created by our coming into contact with objects that lie outside of us. Besides, no variety is possible in the knowledge of the perceiving subject without a corresponding variety existing outside of it. From the experience of such knowledge as that of colour, form, etc., one must admit the existence of objects outside the perceiving mind corresponding to the subjective impressions. Again, different experiences give rise to different feelings, such as pleasant or otherwise, which also are impossible in the absence of external objects. All these arguments compel one to believe in the reality of external=

= causes for the impressions which we have in mind

¹ *In, etc.* — Otherwise there would be no idea of variety and objects corresponding to such ideas.

³⁷⁸ The original editor added underline by hand

³⁷⁹ The original editor inserted “(*i.e.* being aware)” by hand

³⁸⁰ 274

CHAPTER IV

QUENCHING OF FIRE-BRAND

² *Misery, etc.* — A man may create ideas, but he cannot create pain. Therefore, the pain must have an external cause.

But such pain is experienced by all. Hence,³ we think that external objects do exist. It is not reasonable to conclude that such pain is caused by mere subjective knowledge. For,⁴ such misery is not found elsewhere.

(“Hindi³⁸¹ passage omitted here”)

VSI quoted this verse to Max Planck at interview

25. *From the point of view of reason a cause for the subjective impression must be assigned. But from the standpoint of the highest Reality or the true nature of things, we find that the (so-called) cause (of the subjective impression) is, after all, no cause.*

ŚANKARA’S COMMENTARY.

To¹ this objection, we reply as follows:—We admit that you posit a cause of the subjective experience on account of such arguments as the existence of the variety (in the objective world) and because of the experience of pain. Stick for a while to your argument that reason demands that an external object should exist to produce a subjective impression.

(The opponent)—Please let us know what you (*Advaitin*) are going to say next.

(Reply)—Yes, the² jar, etc., posited by you as the cause, that is to say, the cause of the subjective impression, are not, according to us, the external cause, the substratum³⁸² (of the impression); nor are they the cause for our experiences of variety.

(Objection)—How?

³ *Hence, etc.*—The contention of the opponent is that there must exist causal relation between objects and our knowledge of them.

⁴ *For*—That is to say, that the pain of burn is experienced only when the limb comes in contact with fire and not when it is besmeared with sandal-paste, etc. Therefore, misery, pain, etc., are not possible in the absence of a cause.

³⁸¹ 275

CHAPTER IV

QUENCHING OF FIRE-BRAND

Realism which is always associated with causality is now refuted by idealism.

¹ *To, etc.*—That is to say, the objection as set forth in the previous *Kārikā*.

² *The jar, etc.*—The external jar is not the cause of our mental impression (idea) of the jar. Nor is the external jar the substratum upon which the idea of the jar is superpose

³⁸² 276

CHAPTER IV

QUENCHING OF FIRE-BRAND

(Reply) – We say so from³ the standpoint of the true nature of Reality. When the true nature of clay is known, a jar does not exist apart from the clay as exists a buffalo in entire independence of the horse. Nor does cloth exist apart from the thread. Similarly the threads have no existence apart from the fibres. If we thus proceed to find out the true³⁸³ nature of the thing, by going from one cause to another, till language or the object denoted by the language fails us, we do not still find any (final) cause.

“*Bhūtadarsanād*” (from the true nature of the thing) may be “*Abhūtadarsanād*” (from the unreality of the experiences). According to this interpretation, the meaning of the *Kārikā* is that we do not admit external objects as the cause on⁴ account of the unreality of these (external) objects, which are as unreal as the snake seen in the place of the rope. The (so-called) cause⁵ ceases to be the cause as the former is due to the illusory perception of the perceiver. For,⁶ it (the external world) disappears in the absence of such illusory knowledge. The man in dreamless sleep and trance (*Samādhi*) and he who has attained the highest knowledge do not experience any object outside their self as they are free⁷ from such illusory cognition. An object which is cognised by a lunatic is never known as such by a sane man. Thus⁸ is answered the contention

³ *From the, etc.* – It is because from the standpoint of ultimate Truth the external jar does not, as such, exist. That which really exists is clay (without form) which, being associated with name and form, appears as the jar. Name and form, being mere ideas of the mind, are illusory. Therefore, the jar has no real existence independent of the clay. If the opponent contends that the external objects create the subjective ideas, we ask for a cause for the external objects. The opponent cannot point out such a cause. Hence the argument of causality fails.

³⁸³ The original editor added double underline by hand

⁴ *On account of, etc.* – That is to say, no external object exists as such.* What is taken as the external object is merely the idea of the perceiver. When the snake is perceived in the rope, that perception, being illusory, cannot be called the knowledge of any independent reality called snake. Similarly, the perception of the external object, being illusory, cannot point to the existence of any such object as an independent reality.

* as external to the mind

⁵ *Cause, etc.* – Seeking a cause for subjective ideas is due to ignorance (*Avidyā*).

⁶ *For, etc.* – When this ignorance, *i.e.*, the belief in causality, disappears the external world itself disappears.

⁷ *Free, etc.* – That is to say, they are no longer subject to the law of causality. Hence they do not see any external world as an independent reality.

⁸ *Thus, etc.* – The opponent contends that external objects must exist as we are conscious of the variety of subjective impressions. Another reason for the existence of the external object is our experience of pain. The mind may create an idea, but it will not cause pain to itself. To this contention the following reply is given: – We may have consciousness of variety or pain in the absence of external objects. One is conscious of the variety of objects in dream. He feels pain in dream. But the dream experiences are only the subjective impressions in the mind of the dreamer. No external object exists, at that time, which corresponds to the dream experiences. Therefore, subjective impressions need not be necessarily produced by a really existing external object. There is no proof that external objects independently of the mind exist. The subjective

regarding the causality based upon the arguments³⁸⁴ of the perception of variety and the existence of pain.

(“Hindi³⁸⁵ passage omitted here”)

26. *The mind is not related to the (external) objects. Nor are the ideas^Δ which appear as external objects, reflections upon the mind. It is so because the objects are non-existent and the ideas (which appear as external objects) are not separate from the mind.*

ŚANKARA’S COMMENTARY.

Because there are no external³⁸⁶ (i.e. external to the mind)³⁸⁷ objects as cause, the mind does not relate itself to external objects which are supposed to be the cause of the subjective impression. Nor is the mind related to the ideas which appear as external objects, as the mind, like¹ the dream-mind, is identical with such ideas. It² is because the external objects such as sound, etc., perceived in the waking state, are as unreal[□] as dream-objects, for³ reasons stated already.³⁸⁸ Another reason is that the ideas

impression of the snake in place of the rope is produced in the absence of an external snake. From the standpoint of reality, nothing exists but the self or *Ātman*. Perception of any other existence is due to illusion. The mind, in ignorance, seeks a cause, and thereby infers[⊗] an external world.

⊗ to infer is to imagine.

³⁸⁴ 277

CHAPTER IV QUENCHING OF FIRE-BRAND

11

³⁸⁵ 278

CHAPTER IV QUENCHING OF FIRE-BRAND

^Δ mental constructs The original editor inserted footnote “mental constructs” by hand

³⁸⁶ The original editor added underline by hand

³⁸⁷ The original editor inserted “(i.e. external to the mind)” by hand

¹ *Like, etc.*—In dream one experiences various external objects,⁺ But it is found in the waking state that it is mind alone which appears as objects seen in dream. The mind is identical with these ideas. Therefore there cannot be any causal relation between the mind and the ideas.

⁺ external to the dream body.

² *It is, etc.*—Therefore there cannot be any causal relation between the mind and the non-existing external objects.

[□] as external realities The original editor inserted footnote “as external realities” by hand

³ *For reasons, etc.*—This has been treated in the second chapter of the *Kārikā* and in other places of the *Kārikā*.

³⁸⁸ 279

appearing as external objects are not different from the mind. It⁴ is the mind alone which, as in dream, appears as external objects such as the jar, etc.

(“Hindi passage omitted here”)

27. *The mind does not enter into causal relation in any of the three periods of time. How can the mind be ever subject to delusion, as there is no cause^o for any such delusion?*

ŚANKARA’S COMMENTARY.

(Objection)—The mind appears as the jar, etc., though such objects are non-existent. Therefore there¹ must exist false knowledge. Such being the case, there must be right knowledge somewhere (in relation to, or as distinguished from, which we point out false knowledge).

(Reply)³⁸⁹—Our reply to this contention is as follows:—The mind certainly does not come in contact with a cause—an external object—in any of the three periods of time, past, present or future. If the mind had ever truly come in contact with such objects then such relation would give us an idea of right knowledge from the standpoint of Reality. And in relation to that knowledge, the appearance of the jar, etc., in the mind, in the absence of the jar, etc., could have been termed as false knowledge. But never does the mind come in contact with an external object (which does not in reality exist). Hence how is it possible for the mind to fall into error when there is no cause for such an assumption? In other words, the mind is never subject to false knowledge. This² is, indeed, the very nature of the mind that it takes the forms of the jar, etc., though in reality, such jar, etc., which may cause the mental forms, do not at all exist.

CHAPTER IV QUENCHING OF FIRE-BRAND

⁴ *It is, etc.*—It is self alone which exists.⁼ All that are perceived by the deluded as external objects are nothing but the Self. There is only non-dual *Ātman*. The duality is due to illusion.

⁼ as a reality.

^o no second thing The original editor inserted footnote “no second thing” by hand

¹ *There must, etc.*—Otherwise one could not be aware of the external jar, etc., which do not really exist. One cannot be aware of wrong knowledge unless one knows what right knowledge is. The opponent intends to prove the positive existence of *Avidyā*—which causes illusory knowledge.

³⁸⁹ 280

CHAPTER IV QUENCHING OF FIRE-BRAND

² *This is, etc.*—This is what is known as *Avidyā* or the ignorance of the real nature of Reality. On account of this ignorance the mind, which is the same as the non-dual *Ātman*, appears to take the form of the external objects. This false knowledge is not a *correlative* of true knowledge. This false knowledge regarding the existence of the external objects is due to the

("Hindi³⁹⁰ passage omitted here")

28. *Therefore neither the mind nor the objects perceived by the mind are ever born. Those who perceive such birth may as well discover the foot-prints (of the birds) in the sky.*

ŚANKARA'S COMMENTARY.

The verses of the *Kārikā* from 25 to 27 give the views of a class of Buddhistic thinkers, known as the *Vijnānavādins*¹ (the subjective idealists) who thus refute the views of those who maintain the reality of external objects. The² Advaitic teacher (Gaudapāda) approves of these arguments. Now he makes use of these very arguments of the *Vijnānavādins* as the ground (middle term) for refuting the conclusions of the subjective idealists. This *Kārikā* has this end in view. The subjective idealist admits that the mind, even in the absence of the (external) jar, etc., takes the form of the jar, etc. We also agree with this conclusion because this is in conformity with the true³⁹¹ nature of things. In the like manner, the mind, though never produced, appears to be produced and cognised as such.³⁹² Therefore the mind is never produced, as is the case with the object cognised by it. The *Vijnānavādins* who affirm the production of the mind and also assert that the mind is momentary, full of pain, non-self in nature, etc., forget that the real³ nature of the mind can never be understood by the mind³⁹³ (as described by them).

ignorance of the nature of Reality. Seeking after the cause of *Aviḍyā* is itself the characteristic of the ignorant mind which has not yet been able to free itself from the delusion of causality.

³⁹⁰ 281

CHAPTER IV

QUENCHING OF FIRE-BRAND

The three *Kārikās*, viz., 25, 26 and 27, give the views of the Buddhist idealist who refutes those that believe in the reality of the external objects. This *Kārikā* refutes the position of the *Vijnānavādin*.

¹ *Vijnānavādins*—They belong to the school of subjective idealism in the Buddhistic system of thought. According to this school, all objects are pre-existent in the subject in the form of *Vāsanās* (ideas). Cause is only a subjective idea. It does not exist as external object with which we associate it. Further, according to this school, all ideas are momentary.

² *The Advaita, etc.*—Gaudapāda accepts the views of the *Vijnānavādins* only in respect of the non-existence of external objects. He also agrees with the *Vijnānavādins* that the so-called external objects are nothing but the state of the mind (*chittaspandanam*).

³⁹¹ The original editor strike out and replaced "real" to "true" by hand

³⁹² The original editor added underline by hand

³ *Real nature, etc.*—It is because the mind, according to the *Vijnānavādins*, is momentary. The consciousness of one moment is unrelated to that of the next moment. Such being the case, in the absence of an unchanging entity it is not possible to know the change of consciousness from one moment to another. Therefore it is absurd to assert that the mind is born every moment and that it is full of misery, etc. For, there is no perceiver, according to the

Thus the *Vijnānavādins* who see the production of the mind resemble those who (profess to) see in the sky foot-prints left by birds, etc. In other words, the *Vijnānavādins* are more audacious than the others, viz., the dualists. And the Nihilists⁴ who, in spite of the perception of the visible world, assert the absolute non-existence of everything including their own experiences, are even more audacious than the *Vijnānavādins*. These Nihilists^x take the position of those who claim to compress the whole sky in the palms of their hands.

("Hindi³⁹⁴ passage omitted here")

29. (In the opinion of the disputants) that which is unborn is said to be born. For, its very nature is to be ever unborn. It is never possible for a thing to be other than what it is.

ŚANKARA'S COMMENTARY.

For reasons already stated it is established that Brahman is one and unborn. This verse summarises the conclusion of what has already been stated in the form of proposition. The unborn mind, which¹ is verily Brahman, is imagined by the disputants to be born. Therefore (according to them) the ever-unborn is said to be born. For, it is unborn by its very nature. It² is simply impossible for a thing, which is ever-unborn by nature, to be anyhow born, that is to say, to be anyhow otherwise than what it is.

("Hindi³⁹⁵ passage omitted here")

Vijnānavādins, which can cognize this momentary change of consciousness as well as its painful and non-*Ātman* character.

³⁹³ 282

CHAPTER IV

QUENCHING OF FIRE-BRAND

⁴ *Nihilists*—The position of the Nihilists who affirm the non-existence of everything, including the perceiver, is even more untenable. If all that exists is really a void, then there must be a perceiver of this void. Otherwise who will assert that everything is void?

^x *Sunyavadino*The original editor inserted footnote "Sunyavadino" by hand

³⁹⁴ 283

CHAPTER IV

QUENCHING OF FIRE-BRAND

¹ *Which, etc.*—It has been already seen that the mind is never born. Therefore the mind is Brahman, non-dual and immutable. The disputants, on account of ignorance, see the modifications and change in the mind. The very nature of the mind is that it is one and without a second, and free from change or birth.

² *It is, etc.*—The absolute mind does not in any way undergo any change. Even through delusion the mind cannot be said to pass into birth. If it were so then it cannot be said to be unborn and unchanging in nature.

³⁹⁵ 284

CHAPTER IV

30. If^Δ the world be admitted to be beginningless (as some disputants assert), then it cannot be non-external. Moksha or liberation cannot have a beginning and be eternal.

ŚANKARA'S COMMENTARY.

Here is another defect in the arguments of those who maintain that the *Ātman* is, in reality, subject¹ to both bondage and liberation. If the world (*i.e.*, the state of bondage of the *Ātman*) be without beginning or a definite past, then its end cannot be established by any reason. In ordinary experience, there is no instance of an object which has no beginning but has an end.

(Objection) – We² see a break in the beginningless continuity of the relation of the seed and the sprout.

(Reply) – This illustration has no validity; for,³ the seed and the sprout do not constitute a single entity. In the like manner, liberation cannot be said to have no end if it be asserted that liberation which is attained by acquisition of knowledge has a (definite) beginning. For, the jar, etc., which have a beginning have also an end.

(Objection) – There⁴ is no defect in our argument as liberation, not being any substance,* may be like the destruction of a jar, etc.

QUENCHING OF FIRE-BRAND

^Δ our experience of The original editor inserted footnote “our experience of” by hand

This *Kārikā* gives us the reason for the statement that *Ātman* is ever-pure, ever-free and ever-existent. *Ātman*, conceived as such, is not a theological dogma, nor is it based upon the intuition of the mystic, but it is a metaphysical fact.

¹ *Subject, etc.* – That is to say, the *Ātman* is bound during the state of ignorance and it becomes free with the acquisition of knowledge. Those who make this contention accept the bondage of *Ātman* as a fact.

² *We see, etc.* – The opponent contends that the relation of a seed and a tree, though without beginning, is seen to come to an end when the tree dies without leaving a seed.

³ *For the seed, etc.* – The seed and sprout do not constitute a single series. Every time a new seed and a new sprout are seen to be produced. Therefore both the seed and the tree have definite beginning.

⁴ *There is, etc.* – The opponent contends that a non-entity results from the breaking of a jar. This non-entity has a beginning (in the breaking of the jar) but it is eternal. Liberation (*Moksha*) in the form of the destruction of the bondage (*bandha*), not being any substance, can be eternal like the destruction of a jar which, though not a substance and though with beginning, is without end. This is the contention of the opponent.

* anything that can be gained positively The original editor inserted footnote “anything that can be gained positively” by hand

(Reply)—In that case it will contradict your proposition that liberation has a positive existence from the³⁹⁶ standpoint of the Ultimate Reality. Further, liberation being a non-entity, like the horn of a hare, cannot, ever, have a beginning.

(“Hindi passage omitted here”)

31. *That which is non-existent at the beginning and in the end, is necessarily so (non-existent) in the middle. The objects we see are illusions, still they are regarded as if real.*

(“Hindi³⁹⁷ passage omitted here”)

32. *The serving of some purpose by them (i.e., the objects of waking experience) is contradicted in dream. Therefore they are doubtlessly recognised to be illusory (by the wise) on account of their having a beginning and an end.*

ŚANKARA’S COMMENTARY.

These two verses have been explained before in the chapter on Illusion (Chapter II. 6, 7). They are quoted here again in connection with the topics which are discussed in relation to the unreality of the universe and liberation.

The opponent may contend thus:—Let the state of liberation have a beginning and an end. What is the harm in thus conceiving the state of liberation? The reply is that if a thing has a beginning and an end, it does not exist in the middle also. That is to say, it has no existence whatsoever. That we see its existence is due to our ignorance. The familiar instance is that of the mirage. The mirage has no existence prior to its vision by the deluded and it does not exist when the illusion vanishes. That we see the mirage at all is due to our ignorance. Therefore if we accept the idea of liberation as conceived by the opponent then it would be non-existent. The opponent may again contend that one cannot quench his thirst with the water of the mirage. But liberation is conducive to our infinite happiness. The reply to this contention is that liberation as conceived by the opponent, being illusory, serves no purpose whatsoever. If liberation has both beginning and end, then it would be like our dream or waking experiences. In the waking state a man may feel that he has enjoyed a hearty feast, but immediately after going to sleep he may experience in dream ravenous hunger. In that case the

³⁹⁶ 285

³⁹⁷ 286

waking experiences do not serve him a lasting purpose. Any experience which has a beginning or an end is illusory from the standpoint of Reality.

("Hindi³⁹⁸ passage omitted here")

33. *All objects cognised in dream are unreal, because they are seen within the body. How is it possible for things, that are perceived to exist, to be really in Brahman which is indivisible and homogeneous?*

ŚANKARA'S COMMENTARY.

This and the following verses are meant to explain in detail one of the previous *Kārikās* which states that the (so-called) cause (of the opponent) is, really speaking, no cause at all. (Ref. Verse 25, Chapt. IV.)

The purpose of the *Kārikā* is to show that Brahman, birthless and non-dual, is alone existent; for, the waking experiences, on account of their having a beginning and an end, are unreal like the dream ones. Therefore, what is seen is Brahman alone. The dream objects are seen within the body; hence they are unreal as things like a mountain, etc., cannot exist within the body. Similarly, all our waking experiences are supposed to be within the body (of the *Virāt*). Hence they are also illusory from the standpoint of Reality. The *Virāt* itself is in the self (*Ātman*) which cannot, in reality, contain multiplicity. Therefore waking experiences are illusory. The dream experiences are considered illusory as time and space corresponding to such experiences do not conform to the time and space of the dreamer. In like manner waking experiences are also illusory as they, really speaking, cannot exist in the Self (*Ātman*) which is one, non-dual and homogeneous and which cannot contain any space for the existence of alien objects.

("Hindi passage omitted here")

34. *It is not possible for a dreamer to go out in order to experience the (dream) objects on account of the discrepancy³⁹⁹ of the time involved in such journey. Again, on being awake, the dreamer does not find himself in the place (where he dreamed himself to be).*

ŚANKARA'S COMMENTARY.

³⁹⁸ 287

CHAPTER IV
QUENCHING OF FIRE-BRAND

³⁹⁹ 288

CHAPTER IV
QUENCHING OF FIRE-BRAND

The time and space involved in undertaking a journey and in coming back, have a definite and fixed standard in the waking state. These are seen to be reversed¹ in dream. On account of this inconsistency it can be positively said that the dreamer does not actually go out to another place during his dream experiences.

(“Hindi passage omitted here”)

+35. *The dreamer on being awake, realises as illusory all the conversation he had had with friends, etc., during the dream state. Further, he does not possess, in the waking state, anything which he had acquired in dream.*

ŚANKARA’S COMMENTARY.

A man, in dream, holds conversation with his friends, etc. But, on being awake, he finds it all as unreal. Further, he possesses in dream, gold, etc., but, in the awakened state he realises all these possessions to be unreal. Though he goes to other countries in dream, he does not, in reality, make any such journey.

The⁴⁰⁰ conversations, etc., held in dream, become unreal in the waking state. Similarly, scriptural discussions, etc., with the sages, held in the waking state, are known to be illusory when one attains the ultimate Reality. For, all beings are ever free. There is no bondage or ignorance, really speaking, which requires to be removed by religious practices. The wise man knows the study of the scriptures, etc., undertaken for the attainment of knowledge, as illusory as dream experiences; for, the *Ātman* is ever free, pure and illumined. Even the eating, drinking, etc., which a knower of Truth performs, are dissociated from all ideas of subject-object relationship. Even while talking, doing, etc., he is conscious of the non-dual Brahman alone. The aim of the scriptural study, religious practices, etc., is to dehypnotise us from the hypnotic idea that we are not Brahman.

(“Hindi passage omitted here”)

¹ *Reversed*—In dream which may last for a few minutes, a man may have experience of events which may take years to happen. Therefore the idea of time and space experienced in dream is illusory.

+ This verse is to be reversed and its arguments applied to waking state, to show latter as unreal. The original editor inserted footnote “This verse is to be reversed and its arguments applied to waking state, to show latter as unreal.” By hand

36. *The body active in dream is unreal as the other body, quite distinct from it, is perceived. Like the body, everything, cognised by the mind, is unreal.*

ŚANKARA'S COMMENTARY.

The body, which appears to be wandering in the dream, is unreal; for, another body, quite different from it, is seen in the spot where the dreamer lies. As the body perceived in the dream is unreal, so also all that is cognised by the mind, even in the waking state, is unreal; for, all these perceived objects are very important⁴⁰¹ mere different states of the mind⁴⁰². The significance of this chapter is that even the waking experiences, on account of their being similar to the dream experiences, are unreal.

The body which is active in the waking state lies motionless in the bed when the dreamer perceives that he is wandering at various⁴⁰³ places. Therefore from the standpoint of the waking state, this dream body is unreal. Similarly, from the standpoint of the ultimate Reality the body perceived in the waking state—the body which is felt to be honoured or insulted by the friends or enemies—is also unreal. It is because this body is also an idea in the mind of the perceiver⁴⁰⁴. As dream objects are unreal on account of their being perceived by the mind, so also the objects of the waking experience are unreal on account of the very same reason. Being perceived by the mind⁴⁰⁵ is the common factor in both waking and dream states. Therefore the experiences of both the states bear with them the stamp of unreality.

(“Hindi passage omitted here”)

Important Verse⁴⁰⁶ 37. *As the experience (of objects) in dream is similar to the experience (of objects) in the waking state, therefore it is thought that the waking experiences are the cause of the dream-experiences. On account of this reason, the waking experiences (supposed to be the cause of the dream) appear as real to the dreamer alone (but not to others).*

ŚANKARA'S COMMENTARY.

For this reason also, the objects experienced in the waking state are unreal. The dream experiences, like the waking ones, are characterised by the subject-object

⁴⁰¹ The original editor inserted “very important” by hand

⁴⁰² The original editor added underline by hand

⁴⁰³ 290

CHAPTER IV

QUENCHING OF FIRE-BRAND

⁴⁰⁴ The original editor added underline by hand

⁴⁰⁵ The original editor added underline by hand

⁴⁰⁶ The original editor inserted “Important Verse” by hand

relationship. On account¹ of this similarity of perception, the waking state is said to be the cause of the dream state. In other words, it is contended that the dream state is the effect of the waking one which is the cause. If that be the case, *i.e.*, if the dream be the effect of waking experiences, then the waking experiences are real to the perceiver of the dream alone (*i.e.*, who took⁴⁰⁷ the dream to be real) and⁴⁰⁸ to no one else. The purport² of this *Kārikā* is that the dream appears to be⁴⁰⁹ real, that is to say, dream objects appear as objects of common experience and therefore real to the dreamer alone. So also the experiences of the waking state, being the cause of the dream, appear as if they were within the common experience of all and therefore real. But the objects perceived in the waking state are not the same⁴¹⁰ to all.* Waking experiences are verily like the dream ones.

(“Hindi⁴¹¹ passage omitted here”)

¹ *On account, etc.*—In the dream state, dream objects appear as real. To the dreamer, the dream state is the waking state. One knows the dream state to be unreal only from the waking state. As a matter of fact, we are aware of a succession of waking states alone. When we know a previous waking state to be unreal, we call it dream state. Without dream one could not know the waking state to be real. Similarly one could not know the waking state as real without the unreal dream state. We speak of the waking state as the cause of the dream state on account of the cognition of the subject-object idea present in both the states. But, really speaking, there is no causal relation between the two states. The waking state appears real only to him who looks upon dream also as real and who seeking a cause for the dream, takes the waking state as the cause of the dream.

⁴⁰⁷ The original editor strike out and replaced “taken” to “took” by hand

⁴⁰⁸ 291

CHAPTER IV

QUENCHING OF FIRE-BRAND

² *The purport, etc.*—It may be contended that dream experience is private, its objects and actions being cognised by the dreamer and none else. But the waking experience is not private. It is universal. But this is not a fact. The dream universe has not only its suns, moons and stars, but also its human denizens who perceive them as our fellow-beings of the waking universe do in the waking world. The distinction of private and public to mark the objects of one state from those of the other is futile. The truth is that as in the dream, the action of the mind^Δ creates the idea of a universe with the sun, the moon, friends and foes, etc., similarly in the waking state also, the mind creates the idea of a universe with all its contents.

^Δ This has nothing to do with mind individual, but it refers to mind universal; not the ego but the common mind

⁴⁰⁹ The original editor strike out and replaced “us” to “be” by hand

⁴¹⁰ The original editor strike out and replaced “common” to “the same” by hand

* They are only imagined to be common to all, as in dream. The original editor inserted footnote “They are only imagined to be common to all, as in dream.” By hand

⁴¹¹ 292

CHAPTER IV

QUENCHING OF FIRE-BRAND

38. *All these are known as unborn, as creation or evolution cannot be established as a fact. It is ever impossible for the unreal to be born of the real.*

ŚANKARA'S COMMENTARY.

(Objection)—Though the waking experiences are the cause of the dream ones, still the former cannot be unreal like the latter. The dream is extremely evanescent whereas the waking experiences are seen to be permanent.

(Reply)—This¹ is true with regard to the people who do not possess discrimination. Men of discrimination do not see the production² or the birth of anything, as creation or evolution i.e., causality cannot be established as a fact. Hence all this is known in the Vedāntic books as unborn³ (i.e., non-dual Brahman)⁴¹². For the Śruti declares, "He (the Ātman) is both within and without and is, at the same time, unborn." If you contend that the illusory dream is the effect of the real waking state, we say that your contention is untenable. In our common experience, we never see an unreal⁴¹³ thing produced from an real⁴¹⁴ one. Such non-existing thing as the horn of a hare is never seen to be produced from any other object.

("Hindi⁴¹⁵ passage omitted here")

39. *Being deeply impressed with the (reality of the) unreal objects which a man sees in the waking state, he sees those very things in dream as well. Moreover the unreal objects cognised in the dream are not seen again in the waking state.*

ŚANKARA'S COMMENTARY.

(Objection)—It is you who stated that the dream is the effect of the waking experience. That being the case, how do you refute causality?

¹ *This, etc.*—It is true that the time standard of the waking state does not apply to the dream state. But the standard with which the dreamer measures the time of his dream experiences seems to him perfectly consistent in the dream state.

² *Production, etc.*—That is to say, wise men do not believe in causality.

³ *Unborn*—That is to say, wise men see everywhere the non-dual Brahman alone which has no birth or change.

⁴¹² The original editor inserted "(i.e., non-dual Brahman)" by hand

⁴¹³ The original editor changed "a non existing" to "an unreal" by hand

⁴¹⁴ The original editor strike out and replaced "existing" to "real" by hand

⁴¹⁵ 293

(Reply)—Listen to our explanation of the causality, referred to in that instance. One perceives in the waking state objects which are unreal like the snake imagined in the rope. Being deeply impressed by such (illusory) perception, he imagines in the dream, as in the waking state, the subject-object relationship and thereby perceives (dream) objects. But though full of the unreal seen in the dream, he does¹ not see those (unreal) objects, over again, in the waking state. The reason is the absence of the imaginary subject-object relationship (one experiences in dream). The word “*cha*,” “moreover” in the text denotes that the causal relationship between the waking and the dream states is not always observed. Similarly,² things⁴¹⁶ seen in the waking state are not, sometimes, cognised in dream. Therefore the statement that the waking condition is the cause of the dream is³ not made from the standpoint of the ultimate Reality.

(“Hindi passage omitted here”)

40.^Δ *The unreal cannot have the unreal as its cause, nor can the real be produced from the unreal. The real cannot be the cause of the real. And it is much more impossible for the real to be the cause of the unreal.*

ŚANKARA’S COMMENTARY.

From the standpoint of the ultimate Reality, things can, in no way, enter into causal relation. How? An unreal cannot be the cause of another unreal. An¹ unreal

¹ *Does not, etc.*—This shows that the causal law is not seen between the waking and the dream states.

² *Similarly, etc.*—This is another reason to show that the causal relation does not exist between the waking and the dream states.

⁴¹⁶ 294

CHAPTER IV

QUENCHING OF FIRE-BRAND

³ *Is not made, etc.*—Waking state is said to be the cause of the dream only from the empirical standpoint.[⊗]

[⊗] of those that have not enquired

From the subsequent waking standpoint we call the antecedent dream state as unreal. But we do not find a causal relation between the antecedent dream state and the subsequent waking one because we view it from the waking standpoint—when the dream is over. Objects seen in dream could have been seen even now in the waking state if the waking state were a part or continuation of the previous dream state.

^Δ This analysis means that there is no proof of causality. The original editor inserted footnote “This analysis means that there is no proof of causality.” By hand

The causal relation between the waking and the dream states has been stated from the empirical standpoint alone. But it cannot be established from the standpoint of Truth. Further, no causal relation, whatsoever, is admissible.

¹ *An unreal, etc.*—This refutes the contention of the Buddhistic nihilists.

entity such as the horns of a hare, which may be said to be the cause of another unreal entity such as a castle in the air, has no existence whatsoever. Similarly^{417,2} an object like a jar, which is perceived and which is the effect of an unreal object like the horns of the hare, is never existent. In³ like manner, a jar which is perceived and which is the effect of another jar that also is perceived to exist, is, in itself, non-existent. And⁴ lastly, how is existence possible of a real object which is the effect of an unreal one? No other causal relation is possible nor can be conceived of. Hence the men of knowledge find that the causal relation between any objects whatsoever is not capable of being proved.

All the four systems of thought refuted above believe in causality, in some form or other.

(“Hindi passage omitted here”)

41. *As one in the waking state, through false knowledge, handles, as real, objects whose nature cannot be described^Δ; similarly, in dream also, one perceives, through false knowledge, objects whose existence is possible in that condition* alone.*

ŚANKARA’S⁴¹⁸ COMMENTARY.

This verse intends to remove the slightest possibility of the causal relation between the waking and the dream states, though both are unreal. As in the waking state, one, through want of proper discrimination, imagines the snake seen in place of the rope as really true, – the nature of which, in fact, cannot be really determined,^Δ – so also in dream, one, through want of discrimination, imagines as if one really perceives

⁴¹⁷ 295

CHAPTER IV

QUENCHING OF FIRE-BRAND

² *Similarly, etc.* – This is the refutation of the *Nyāya* school.

³ *In like, etc.* – This refutes the *Sāṃkhya* school of causality.

⁴ *And lastly, etc.* – A class of *Vedāntists* hold that the ever-existent Brahman is the cause of these illusory phenomena. This is the refutation of that school of thought. (*Vivartavada*)

^Δ like snake superimposed on ropeThe original editor inserted footnote “like snake superimposed on rope” by hand

* of ignoranceThe original editor inserted footnote “of ignorance” by hand

⁴¹⁸ 296

CHAPTER IV

QUENCHING OF FIRE-BRAND

^Δ before enquiry, the snake is real; after enquiry it is unreal: hence it is paradoxical, indeterminate, but after all only an ideaThe original editor inserted footnote “before enquiry, the snake is real; after enquiry it is unreal: hence it is paradoxical, indeterminate, but after all only an idea” by hand

such objects as elephant, etc. These dream objects, such as elephant, etc., are peculiar to the dream condition alone; they are not the effect of the waking experiences.

The nature, etc.—The snake seen in place of the rope cannot be called either existent or non-existent. If it be really existent then it cannot cease to exist. And if it be really non-existent then it cannot appear as existing. This is called *Anirvachaniya* or the indescribable nature of the sense-objects.

(“Hindi passage omitted here”)

42. *Wise men support causality only for the sake of those who, being afraid of absolute non-manifestation* (of things), stick to the (apparent) reality of (external) objects on account of their perception (of such objects) and their faith in religious observances.*

ŚANKARA’S COMMENTARY.

Wise men, *i.e.*, the exponents of Advaita Philosophy, have, no doubt, supported causality. But they have done so only for those who have little discrimination but who are eager (to know the Truth) and⁴¹⁹ who are endowed with faith. These people assert that external objects exist* because they perceive them, and also because they cling to the observances of various duties associated with the different *Varnās*¹ and *Āśramas*.² Instructions regarding causality are only meant for them as³ a means to (some other) end. Let them hold on to the idea of causality. But the students who practise

* non-causalityThe original editor inserted footnote “non-causality” by hand
419 297

CHAPTER IV

QUENCHING OF FIRE-BRAND

* are realThe original editor inserted footnote “are real” by hand

If causality be a fiction, then, it may be asked, why the scriptures speak of Brahman as the cause of the universe. This *Kārikā* gives a reply to this question. The aim of the scripture is to enable the students of mediocre or dull intellect to understand the Supreme Reality with the help of causal arguments.

¹ *Varnās*—That is, the four castes, *viz.*, the *Brahmin*, the *Kshatriya*, the *Vaisya* and the *Sūdra*.

² *Āśramas*—The four stages of life, *viz.*, *Brahmacharya* (student period), *Gurhasthya* (the householder’s stage), *Vānaprastha* (the period of retirement from the active duties of life) and *Sannyāsa* (the monastic stage).

³ *As a means, etc*—The ordinary people on account of the perception of the apparently real objects and also on account of their attachment to life, cannot understand the truth regarding the non-dual

disciplines^Δ in accordance with Vedānta Philosophy will, without such belief in causality, spontaneously get the knowledge⁴ of Self, unborn and non-dual. This causality is declared not from the standpoint of the ultimate Reality. These students, who⁵ believe in scriptures, and who are devoid of discrimination, fear the idea of absolute non-manifestation on account of their gross intellect, as they are afraid of the annihilation of their selves. It⁶ has also been stated before that these scriptural statements (regarding creation) are meant as a help to our higher understanding of Reality. (In reality, there is no multiplicity.) and⁴²⁰ changeless Brahman. They believe in the illusory idea of causality. For the benefit of such people⁴²¹, the wise men admit that Brahman is the cause of creation (*vide Vedānta Śūtra*, 1st chapter, second aphorism). But as the cause is identical with the effect, therefore the universe is identical with Brahman. In this way, the students are taught that all that exists is Brahman. Thus by the constant study and meditation on the scriptures, the students gradually realise the nature of Supreme Reality which is free from all change and evolution. Duality cannot be established as the Supreme Reality either by reason or scripture. The apparent duality is admitted from the relative standpoint.

("Hindi passage omitted here")

43. *Those who, being afraid of the truth of absolute non-manifestation, and also on account of their perception (of phenomenal objects), do not admit Ajāti (absolute non-creation), are not much affected by the evil consequent on the belief in causality. The evil effect, if any, is rather insignificant.*^Δ

ŚANKARA'S COMMENTARY.

^Δ enquiry, preliminary qualifications, purification and preparation of mind The original editor inserted footnote "enquiry, preliminary qualifications, purification and preparation of mind" by hand

⁴ *Knowledge, etc.*—This knowledge can be directly obtained by students of clear perception, following the methods given in this Upanishad and the *Kārikā*.

⁵ *Who believe, etc.*—That is to say, those who accept the literal meaning of the scriptural statements regarding creation, etc.

⁶ *It has, etc.*—*Vide Kārikā* 3. 15.

420 298

CHAPTER IV

QUENCHING OF FIRE-BRAND

⁴²¹ The original editor added underline by hand

^Δ Those who cannot grasp non-causality but are obeying high ideals, are getting on satisfactorily anyway. The original editor inserted footnote "Those who cannot grasp non-causality but are obeying high ideals, are getting on satisfactorily anyway." By hand

Those who on account of their perception (of the phenomenal objects) and attachment¹ to the various duties of caste and other stages of life, shrink from the non-dual and unborn *Ātman*, and believing in the existence of dual objects, go away from the self, that is to say, pin their faith in duality, – these people who⁴²² are thus afraid of the truth of absolute non-manifestation, but who are endowed with faith and who stick to the path² of righteousness, are not³ much affected by the evil results consequent on such belief in causality. For, they also try to follow the path of moral⁴²³ discrimination. Even if a little blemish attaches to such persons, it is insignificant, being due to their not having realised the Supreme Truth.

(“Hindi passage omitted here”)

44. *As an elephant conjured up by the magician, on account of its being perceived and also on account of its answering to the behaviours (of a real animal), is said to exist, so also are objects said to exist,^Δ as real⁴²⁴ on account of their being perceived and also on account of their answering to our dealings with them. (In truth, the objects of sense perception are as unreal as the magician’s elephant.)*

(Objection)⁴²⁵ – Objects answering to the fact of duality do exist, on account of such evidence as our (direct) perception of them and also on account of the possibility of our dealings with them.

This shows the catholicity of Advaita Vedānta which is a sharp contrast to the narrowness of theologians. Advaita philosophy recognises the value of different religious practices suited to diverse temperaments. This *Kārikā* further admonishes us not to find faults with others.

¹ *Attachment, etc.* – See the previous *Kārikā*.

⁴²² 299

CHAPTER IV

QUENCHING OF FIRE-BRAND

² *Path, etc.* – That is to say, those who strictly observe the formal injunctions of religion. These people also, at last, acquire the virtue of discrimination which alone enables one to realise Truth.

³ *Not much, etc.* – The *Gītā* also says that a sincere soul which is anxious to realise Truth, surmounts all difficulties. The adherents of religions, if they are sincere and earnest, ultimately acquire those virtues which enable them to realise Truth.

⁴²³ The original editor inserted “moral” by hand

^Δ by the ignorant The original editor inserted footnote “by the ignorant” by hand

⁴²⁴ The original editor inserted “as real” by hand

⁴²⁵ 300

CHAPTER IV

QUENCHING OF FIRE-BRAND

(Reply)—No, this objection is not valid. For, direct perception and the possibility of dealing practically with objects do not always prove the reality⁴²⁶ of objects.

(Objection)—How do you say that our contention admits of irregularity?

(Reply)—It is thus stated: The elephant^o conjured up by a magician, is, verily, perceived as the real elephant. Though unreal, it (the magic elephant) is called the (real) elephant, on account of its being endowed with such attributes of an elephant as the possibility of its being tied up with a rope or being climbed upon, etc. Though unreal, the magic elephant is looked upon as (a real) one. In like manner, it is said that multiple objects, pointing to duality, exist on account of their being perceived and also on account of the possibility of our dealing practically with them. Hence the two grounds, adduced above, cannot prove the existence of (external) objects establishing the fact of duality.

(“Hindi passage omitted here”)

45. *Consciousness which appears to be born or to move or to take the form of matter, is really ever unborn, immovable⁴²⁷ and free from the character of materiality; it is all peace and non-dual.*

ŚANKARA’S COMMENTARY.

What is that entity—the ultimate Reality—which is the substratum¹ of all false notions⁴²⁸ as causality (creation), etc.? It is thus replied:—Though unborn it appears to be born. As for example, we say that Devadatta is born. Again it appears to move (though it is free from all motion); as we say, “That Devadatta is going”. Further, it appears as an object in which inhere certain qualities. For instance, we say “That

⁴²⁶ The original editor strike out and replaced “existence” to “reality” by hand

^o Shankara could have replied by the illustration of dream, but as the objection is made from point of view of waking state he gives an illustration from waking only. It is however antiquated now, like the rope trick. So we must turn to science for a more effective argument. The original editor inserted footnote “Shankara could have replied by the illustration of dream, but as the objection is made from point of view of waking state he gives an illustration from waking only. It is however antiquated now, like the rope trick. So we must turn to science for a more effective argument.” By hand

⁴²⁷ 301

CHAPTER IV

QUENCHING OF FIRE-BRAND

¹ *Substratum*—From the standpoint of Reality, the *Ātman* is not even a substratum; for, nothing whatsoever exists, in relation to which the Self can be called the substratum. The epithet of “Substratum” is used in connection with *Ātman* only from the relative standpoint.

⁴²⁸ The original editor strike out and replaced “cognitions” to “notions” by hand

Devadatta is fair and tall". Though from the standpoint of the ultimate Reality, Consciousness² is ever unborn, immovable, and not of the character of material objects, yet it appears as a Devadatta who is born, who moves and who is known to be fair and tall. What is that entity which answers to these descriptions? It is Consciousness which, being free from birth, change, etc., is all peace and therefore non-dual.

("Hindi passage omitted here")

46. Thus the mind is never subject to birth or change. All brings are, thus, free from birth. Those who know the Truth are never subject to false knowledge.*

ŚANKARA'S⁴²⁹ COMMENTARY.

Thus, that is to say, for the reasons stated above, the mind is free from birth. Similarly the *Dharmas*, that is, the *Jivas*, are also unborn. This is the statement of the Knowers of Brahman. The¹ word "*Dharmāh*" (i.e., "Selves") is metaphorically used in the plural sense[×], in consequence of our perception of variety which is, in reality, the appearance of the non-dual *Ātman* as different corporeal beings. Those who know the consciousness,² stated above, which is the essence of the Self, non-dual and free from birth, etc., and, accordingly, renounce the hankering after all external objects, — they do not fall any more into this ocean of the darkness of *Avidyā*.[°] The *Śruti* also says, "Where is grief or delusion for the one who realises non-duality?"

² *Consciousness* — That is, *Ātman*.

* Those who are gnanis are never subject to doubts, questions or arguments, which are always symptoms of not-knowing, error. The original editor inserted footnote "Those who are gnanis are never subject to doubts, questions or arguments, which are always symptoms of not-knowing, error." By hand

⁴²⁹ 302

CHAPTER IV

QUENCHING OF FIRE-BRAND

¹ *The word, etc.* — The ultimate Reality cannot be said to be one or many. For, these predicates, being correlatives, apply to the relative world. The word "*Dharmāh*" has been used in the plural number to indicate that all that exists is *Ātman*. If one sees multiplicity, it is also the non-dual *Ātman*. The reflections of the sun, caught in the millions of waves and bubbles, are nothing but the reflection of the self-same sun. Similarly the same *Ātman* alone is perceived whether as objects of our waking state, or the ideas of dream or the undifferentiated consciousness of dreamless sleep.

[×] the plural is used only to help explain the teaching, not as a statement of fact. The original editor inserted footnote "the plural is used only to help explain the teaching, not as a statement of fact." By hand

² *Consciousness* — That is, Brahman or *Ātman*.

[°] error, mistake, doubt, ignorance. The original editor inserted footnote "error, mistake, doubt, ignorance" by hand

("Hindi passage omitted here")

47. *As a fire-brand, when set in motion, appears as straight, crooked, etc., so also Consciousness, when set in motion,⁴³⁰ appears as the perceiver, the perceived, and the like.*

ŚANKARA'S COMMENTARY.

In order to explain the truth regarding the ultimate Reality already stated, it is thus said:—As in common experience it is noticed that a fire-brand¹ when moved,[×] appears straight, crooked, etc., so does Consciousness appear as the perceiver,[°] the perceived,[°] and the like. What is that which appears as the perceiver, the perceived, etc.? It² is Consciousness set in motion. But There is no motion in Consciousness. It only appears to be moving. This appearance is due to *Avidyā* or ignorance. No motion is possible in Consciousness which is ever immovable. It has already been stated that Consciousness is unborn and immovable.

("Hindi passage omitted here")

48. *As the fire-brand, when not in motion, is free from all appearances and remains changeless, similarly, consciousness, when not in motion (imaginary action), is free from all appearances and remains changeless.*

+ŚANKARA'S COMMENTARY.

430 303

CHAPTER IV

QUENCHING OF FIRE-BRAND

¹ *Fire-brand, etc.*—If a fire-brand be moved swiftly it makes a circle, a straight line, or a crooked line according to the movement. When the fire-brand is moved, it does not really make any figure. In reality, there is only a point which appears as various figures.

[×] especially in making the figure of 8. Science now explains that the impression made on the retina is retained for some times, i.e., philosophically by the mind longer than the retina-impression itself. The original editor inserted footnote "especially in making the figure of 8. Science now explains that the impression made on the retina is retained for some times, i.e., philosophically by the mind longer than the retina-impression itself." By hand

[°] Both are in consciousness and are also consciousness. The original editor inserted footnote "Both are in consciousness and are also consciousness." By hand

² *It is, etc.*—Consciousness only exists. It is ever undifferentiated. Motion in Consciousness makes it appear as the perceiver, the perceived, etc. There is no motion, really speaking, in Consciousness. The ignorant not only imagine illusory subjects and objects which are the basis of our sense-perception, but take them to be different from mind.

⁺ The purpose of this verse is to show that all the appearance is are only mind; they come out {eligible} they go back to it. In this sense deep sleep is the cause of the other two states. Dream shows that a; thing can be in motion and not really be so, simultaneously. The

As that very fire-brand, when not in motion, does not take any form, straight or crooked, etc., becomes free from all appearances and remains changeless, so also the consciousness, which appears as moving through¹ ignorance, when dissociated from the idea of motion on the disappearance of ignorance, becomes² free from all appearances, as those of birth, etc., and remains unborn and motionless.

("Hindi passage omitted here")

49. *When the fire-brand is in motion the appearances (that are seen in it) do not come from elsewhere.° When the fire-brand is not moved, the appearances do not go elsewhere from the motionless fire-brand. Further, the appearances, when the fire-brand is not moved, do not enter into the fire-brand itself.*

ŚANKARA'S COMMENTARY.

Moreover, when that very fire-brand is in motion, the appearances, straight or crooked, etc., do not come to⁴³¹ it from anywhere else outside the fire-brand. Nor do the appearances go elsewhere from the fire-brand when it is motionless. Nor, again, do the appearances enter into the fire-brand when it is motionless.×

original editor inserted footnote "The purpose of this verse is to show that all the appearance is are only mind; they come out {eligible} they go back to it. In this sense deep sleep is the cause of the other two states. Dream shows that a; thing can be in motion and not really be so, simultaneously." By hand³⁰⁴

CHAPTER IV

QUENCHING OF FIRE-BRAND

¹ *Through, etc.*—The appearance of forms in Consciousness is due to the projecting power (*Vikshepa Sakti*) of *Avidyā*.

² *Becomes, etc.*—That is to say, the Consciousness (i.e., *Ātman*) is seen as it really is. The fire-brand, when only appears as a circle or straight line. Similarly, even during the state of ignorance, Consciousness always remains what it is, *viz.*, changeless and motionless. It appears to be changing and possessing forms only on account of the ignorance of the perceiving mind.

° The figure is seen in one place although the hand has move elsewhere, why? Because the mind sticks to its sense-impression, to which it's attached, thinking it to be real. The original editor inserted footnote "The figure is seen in one place although the hand has move elsewhere, why? Because the mind sticks to its sense-impression, to which it's attached, thinking it to be real." By hand

⁴³¹ 305

CHAPTER IV

QUENCHING OF FIRE-BRAND

× nobody has proof that the figure of entered into or emerged from the band. We can only say that it appeared with the motion of the brand. Similarly we see the world with the activity of mind, but we cannot say that it was put in the mind or put out by mind. The original editor inserted footnote "nobody has proof that the figure of entered into or emerged from the

("Hindi passage omitted here")

50. *The appearances do not emerge from the fire-brand because they are not of the nature of a substance.*^o *This also applies to Consciousness on account of the similarity of appearances (in both cases).*

ŚANKARA'S COMMENTARY.

Moreover, those appearances do not emerge from the fire-brand as something that comes out of a house. The reason is that appearances are not of the nature of substance. The appearances have no reality. Entrance, etc., can be said of a real thing but not of anything unreal. The appearance of birth, etc., in the case of consciousness is exactly similar; for,¹ appearances are of the same nature in both the cases.

("Hindi passage omitted here") ("Hindi⁴³² passage omitted here")

51-52. *When Consciousness is associated with the idea of activity (as in the dream and waking states), the appearances (that are seen in it) do not come from elsewhere. When Consciousness is inactive (as in deep sleep) appearances do not go elsewhere from the inactive Consciousness. Further, appearances do not enter into it. The appearances do not emerge from Consciousness because they are not of the nature of a substance. These are always beyond our comprehension on account of their not being subject to the relation of cause and effect.*

ŚANKARA'S COMMENTARY.

band. We can only say that it appeared with the motion of the brand. Similarly we see the world with the activity of mind, but we cannot say that it was put in the mind or put out by mind." By hand

^o The brand is a substance, the appearance of the '8' is not of the same nature, hence unreal, a thing may be seen but this is not enough to make it real. The appearance should have some fundamental characteristic of the reality. The original editor inserted footnote "The brand is a substance, the appearance of the '8' is not of the same nature, hence unreal, a thing may be seen but this is not enough to make it real. The appearance should have some fundamental characteristic of the reality." By hand

What actually exists is a point. But the mind, on account of its ignorance, sees in it various forms.

¹ *For, etc.*—In both cases, appearances are due to the ignorance of the perceiver. Birth, death, etc., are, really speaking, illusory. They have no real existence. Therefore these are called mere appearances.

⁴³² 306

CHAPTER IV

QUENCHING OF FIRE-BRAND

How are the two appearances similar? It is thus replied:—The fire-brand and the Consciousness are alike in all respects. The only special feature of Consciousness is that it always remains immutable.¹ What is the cause of such appearances as birth, etc., in Consciousness which is ever immutable? In² the absence of causality, it is not reasonable to¹ establish the relationship of the producer and the produced (between Consciousness and appearances). The appearances, being illusory, are ever unthinkable⁺³ The purport of the whole thing is this:—As the fire-brand (which is merely a point) is associated with forms, straight, crooked, etc., though, in reality, such crooked or straight forms are ever non-existent, so also, pure Consciousness is associated with the ideas of birth, etc., though such ideas as birth, etc., are ever non-

When Consciousness is said to be active as in the waking and the dream states, the forms of birth, etc., that are cognised in those states do not come from elsewhere outside Consciousness. For, such forms are not seen to exist elsewhere outside one's own consciousness. Again, when, as in deep sleep, Consciousness remains inactive, the forms of birth, death, etc., do not go elsewhere from the Consciousness in which they were perceived during the waking and the dream states. For, no one is conscious of such a happening. No one ever knows the existence of anything outside one's own consciousness.^o Further, when Consciousness remains inactive, as in deep sleep, the forms, etc., perceived in the waking, and the dream states, do not seem to merge in Consciousness. For, Consciousness which is non-dual and beyond the ideas of time, space, etc., cannot be the cause of multiple objects existing in time and space. The objects seen in the dream and the waking states, being ever unreal,^Δ cannot be said to emerge from or merge in Consciousness.

^o as Berkeley says, mind is measureless. Everything known is known within mind.

^Δ even when they are seen, the objects are non-separate from the atman, are yourself

¹ *Immutable*—Consciousness (Drik) is called immutable as it is free from the idea of space and time, which are {dr??gam}.

² *In the, etc.*—The idea of causality is due to *Avidyā*

⁺ cannot be expressed in term of causal relation. Thinking is carried to it's farthest point and then only dropped. We cannot say rope has produced the snake; hence it is called unthinkableThe original editor inserted footnote "cannot be expressed in term of causal relation. Thinking is carried to it's farthest point and then only dropped. We cannot say rope has produced the snake; hence it is called unthinkable" by hand

³ *Ever unthinkable*—The ideas seen in the dream and the waking states cannot be said to be non-existent because they are perceived. Nor can they be said to exist because they are not perceived in deep sleep. Therefore it is impossible to determine their real nature than words or thoughts, when they are all mind for there is then nobody to out seek think distinguish. Hence they are as illusory as the snake seen in the rope.

existent^o. Hence these ideas⁴³³ of birth, etc., associated with Consciousness are illusory.^x

(“Hindi passage omitted here”)

53. Substance[□] may be the cause^v of another substance. That which is not substance may be the cause of another which is not substance.[◇] But the Jivas (or beings) cannot be possibly anything like substance or other than substance.

ŚANKARA’S⁴³⁴ COMMENTARY.

It has already been established that the essence of Self is one¹ and unborn.² Those who imagine causal relation in *Ātman* must admit that substance may be the cause of another substance and that³ which is other than substance may be the cause of something else which is also other than substance. But a thing itself cannot be the cause of itself. Further, we do not find in common experience a non-substance which is independently the cause of something. The selves (*i.e.*, the *Jivas* or beings) can be called neither substance⁴ nor other⁵ than substance. Hence the *Jivas* or selves cannot be the cause or effect of anything. Therefore *Ātman*, being neither substance nor other than substance, is neither the cause nor the effect of anything.

^o as a separate entity, as separate from mind, The original editor inserted footnote “as a separate entity, as separate from mind,” by hand

⁴³³ 307

CHAPTER IV

QUENCHING OF FIRE-BRAND

^x individuals are seen but they are nothing else Than mind; what is seen is your imagination, idea, of them; what is really there is the non-dual mind, Nothing has been produced or caused in reality, only we infer it. Seer and seen are of same substance. The original editor inserted footnote “individuals are seen but they are nothing else Than mind; what is seen is your imagination, idea, of them; what is really there is the non-dual mind, Nothing has been produced or caused in reality, only we infer it. Seer and seen are of same substance.” By hand

[□] *That which does not change in a thing, which is apart from its attributes or qualities*

^v *producer*

[◇] *attribute cannot cause substance, but only attributes again.*

⁴³⁴ 308

CHAPTER IV

QUENCHING OF FIRE-BRAND

¹ *One* — That is to say, *Ātman* which is free from any attribute.

² *Unborn* — That is to say, *Ātman* being without parts, is not a substance.

³ *That which, etc.* — That is to say, an attribute such as colour or form.

⁴ *Substance.* — It is because a substance has always parts.

⁵ *Other than, etc.* — It is because a non-substance (*i.e.*, an attribute) cannot be conceived of independently of a substance.

("Hindi passage omitted here")

54. *Thus (external) appearances (objects) are not caused by the mind^x nor is the mind produced by them. Hence men of discrimination hold the principle of the absolute non-evolution or negation of causality.*

ŚANKARA'S⁴³⁵ COMMENTARY.

Thus, for¹ reasons already stated, the mind is verily of the nature of the essence of the Self. External² objects are not caused by the mind nor is the mind the product of the external objects. That is because all (external) entities are mere appearances in Consciousness. Thus neither the (so-called) effect comes from the (so-called) cause nor the cause from the effect. In this way is reiterated the absolute non-evolution of causality. In other words, the knowers of Brahman declare the absence of causality with regard to Ātman.

("Hindi passage omitted here")

55. *As long as a man persists in the belief^x in causality he will find the working of cause and effect. But when attachment to causality vanishes, cause and effect become non-existent.*

ŚANKARA'S COMMENTARY.

What happens with regard to those who cling to the belief in cause and effect? In reply, it is said:— As long as there is faith in causality, as long as a man⁴³⁶ thinks, "I am

^x 'mind' is used ambiguously here, for here it means atman and not do usual western since asfor that which honorsThe original editor inserted footnote "'mind' is used ambiguously here, for here it means atman and not do usual western since asfor that which honors" by hand
435 309

CHAPTER IV

QUENCHING OF FIRE-BRAND

¹ *For, etc.*— The reason is that the real nature of Ātman is free from all modifications and not of the nature of an empirical substance.

² *External, etc.*— The popular belief that the thought of the pot in the potter's mind is the cause of the pot and that the external pot gives rise to the idea of the pot in the mind is entirely erroneous. For, the idea of causality has been proved to be an illusion.

^x the complex working in your mind forces you to see world accordingly.The original editor inserted footnote "the complex working in your mind forces you to see world accordingly." By hand
436 310

CHAPTER IV

QUENCHING OF FIRE-BRAND

the agent; these virtuous and vicious deeds belong to me. I shall enjoy the results of these actions, being born in course of time, as some being,” in other words, as long as a man falsely attributes causality to *Ātman* and devotes his mind to it, cause and effect must operate for him; that is to say, the man must without intermission be subject to birth and death, which are the result of his attachment to the belief in causality⁴³⁷. But when attachment to causality, due to ignorance, is destroyed by the knowledge of non-duality as described above, – like the destruction of the possession of a ghost through the power of incantation, medicinal herb, etc., – then on account of the wearing away of the illusion of causality, do cause and effect cease to exist.

This *Kārikā* tells us that the chief duty of the student is to analyse the law of causality and find its illusory nature. The attainment of knowledge solely depends upon this understanding of the causal law.

(“Hindi passage omitted here”)

56. *As long as there is faith in causality, the (endless) chain of birth and death will be there^x. When that faith is destroyed (by knowledge) birth and death become non-existent.*

ŚANKARA’S COMMENTARY.

What is the harm if the law of cause and effect continues to operate? In reply we say: – As long as faith in causality is not destroyed by right knowledge, our⁴³⁸ course (of birth and death) in this world will continue. But when that faith is destroyed (by right knowledge) the world also ceases to exist^o for want of any other cause for its existence.

(“Hindi passage omitted here”)

^o ego presupposes duality, and so long as gon think there is a second thing the belief in causality to Galley to remain. It can only differ by understanding non-duality as truth. The original editor inserted footnote “ego presupposes duality, and so long as gon think there is a second thing the belief in causality to Galley to remain. It can only differ by understanding non-duality as truth.” By hand

⁴³⁷ The original editor added underline by hand

^x with all their attendant sufferings

⁴³⁸ 311

CHAPTER IV

QUENCHING OF FIRE-BRAND

^o as an independent entity: it is still mind only The original editor inserted footnote “as an independent entity: it is still mind only:” by hand

57. All this is seen to be born^x on account of the illusion of experience (due to Avidyā); therefore nothing is permanent. All, again, as one with the Ultimate Reality is unborn. And therefore there is nothing like destruction. □

ŚANKARA'S COMMENTARY.

(Objection) – Nothing else verily exists except the unborn *Ātman*. Then how can you speak of the origin and destruction of the cause and the effect as well as of (the chain of birth and death constituting) the world?

(Reply) – Listen. The word *Samvṛiti* in the text signifies the (illusory) experiences of the empirical world which are caused by ignorance. All this is born of this power of ignorance which brings into existence the illusory experiences of the world. For this reason, nothing is permanent in the realm of ignorance. Therefore it is said that the world, having the characteristics of origination and destruction, is spread before us (*i.e.*, the ignorant persons). But as one with the ultimate Reality, all this is nothing but the unborn *Ātman*. Therefore, in the absence of birth, there cannot be any destruction, *viz.*, the destruction of cause or effect.

The⁴³⁹ opponent contends that if nothing but birthless and non-dual *Ātman* exists, then the statements regarding the origin and the destruction of the universe as given in the previous *Kārikā* become irrelevant and contradictory. The reply is that there is no contradiction as the two statements are made from two different standpoints. From the standpoint of the ultimate Reality^x there is neither birth nor death. But from the relative standpoint^Δ, which conjures up before our vision the world of name and form, there are birth and death. Imagine a rope lying on the road. The wise man knows it as the rope alone. But the deluded person sees it as the snake and being afraid of it, takes to his heels in spite of the assurance of the wise man that it is the rope and not the snake. Now the rope and the snake are both facts from the two standpoints. The wise man sees the rope and the ignorant person sees the snake.

^x {a??on} think all this is producedThe original editor inserted footnote “{a??on} think all this is produced” by hand

□ these pundits and yogis who behave Brahman is world-disappearance in Nirvikalpa Samadhi, talk nonsense, usually, ignorance. The world is there in Brahman and is one with it.The original editor inserted footnote “these pundits and yogis who behave Brahman is world-disappearance in Nirvikalpa Samadhi, talk nonsense, usually, ignorance. The world is there in Brahman and is one with it.” By hand

⁴³⁹ 312

CHAPTER IV

QUENCHING OF FIRE-BRAND

^x paramarthaThe original editor inserted footnote “paramartha” by hand

^Δ vyaviharikaThe original editor inserted footnote “vyaviharika” by hand

Therefore the statement of the ignorant man does not contradict the statement of the wise one

The ideas of birth and death are possible only from the relative standpoint. The wise man sees everything as the non-dual *Ātman*. Therefore he cannot see the possibility of destruction of anything. Comp. *Kārikā*, 1. 17 and 1. 18.

(“Hindi passage omitted here”)

58. *Those Jivas (entities) or beings are said to be born. But that birth is never possible from the standpoint of Reality. Their birth is like that of an illusory object. That illusion, again, is non-existent. (as a separate entity)*⁴⁴⁰

ŚANKARA’S COMMENTARY.

Those, again, who imagine the birth of the *Jivas* and other entities, do so only through *Samvriti* or the power of ignorance as stated in the preceding *Kārikā*. The *Jivas* are seen to be born only through ignorance. But from the standpoint of the Supreme Reality no such⁴⁴¹ birth is possible. This¹ (supposed) birth of the *Jivas* through ignorance, described above, is like the birth of objects through illusion (*Māyā*).

(Opponent) – Then there must be something real known as *Māyā* or illusion?

(Reply) – It is not so. That *Māyā* or illusion is never existent. *Māyā* or illusion is the name we give to something which² does not (really) exist (but which is perceived).

(“Hindi passage omitted here”)

59. *The illusory sprout comes froth from the illusory seed. This illusory sprout is neither permanent nor destructible. The same applies to Jivas.*

⁴⁴⁰ The original editor inserted “(as a separate entity)” by hand

⁴⁴¹ 313

CHAPTER IV

QUENCHING OF FIRE-BRAND

¹ *This, etc.* – The birth of *Jivas* is exactly like the production of things by a Juggler. These things such as a mango tree or the hare produced by the Juggler do not exist. Similarly, the *Jivas*, etc., whose birth and death are seen by us in ignorance, do not exist, when the Truth is known.

² *Which, etc.* – That is to say, *Māyā* or illusion does not exist^x from the standpoint of Reality.

^x in the sense that it is the same thing; so too the world, being the same as atman, may be said to be non-existent (as a second).

ŚANKARA'S COMMENTARY.

Now is the birth of *Jivas*, that are seen to exist, illusory? To this question, our reply is as follows:—From¹ an illusory mango seed is born a mango sprout which is equally illusory. This sprout² is neither permanent nor destructible, simply because it does not exist.^o In³ the like manner, ideas of birth and death are applied to the *Jivas*. The purport is that from⁴⁴² the standpoint of the ultimate Reality, neither birth nor death is applicable to *Jivas*.

(“Hindi passage omitted here”)

60. *The epithets of permanence or impermanence cannot be applied to birthless⁴⁴³ Jivas.^o That which is indescribable by words cannot be discriminated (as real or unreal).*

ŚANKARA'S COMMENTARY.

From the standpoint of the ultimate Reality, no epithet such as permanence¹ or impermanence, nor any word⁴⁴⁴ corresponding to such names, can be applied to *Jivas* (selves or beings) which are eternal, birthless, and which are always of the nature of a homogeneous^o consciousness. That by which an object is designated is known as “*Varna*” or name associated with a sound. The words fail to denote the nature of

¹ *From, etc.*—This is a familiar illustration often used by the Vedāntic writers. In India, certain Jugglers produce from illusory seeds illusory trees full of illusory fruits.^x

^xSuch illustration are now too antiquated, but science can supply good mes

² *This sprout, etc.*—Birth and death can be predicated of objects that exist. But the mango tree produced by a Juggler is non-existent. Hence neither birth nor death is possible for such a mango tree.

^o other than as itself

³ *In the, etc.*—The *Jivas*, endowed with birth and death, are seen on account of our ignorance. From the standpoint of Truth, such *Jivas* do not exist. Hence birth and death are unreal from the standpoint of Truth. But birth and death are true, as in the case of the illusory mango tree, from the standpoint of ignorance.

⁴⁴² 314

CHAPTER IV

QUENCHING OF FIRE-BRAND

⁴⁴³ The original editor strike out and replaced “unborn” to “birthless” by hand

□ I way to which you cannot attribute birth, which belongs only to drsyam

^o Drik.The original editor inserted footnote “Drik.” By hand

¹ *Permanence, etc.*—Such epithets as permanence or impermanence which are correlatives, are applied to the objects of the relative word.

⁴⁴⁴ The original editor strike out and replaced “sound” to “word” by hand

^o where there is no variety.The original editor inserted footnote “where there is no variety.” By hand

Ātman. It cannot be discriminated as this or that, permanent or impermanent.⁴⁴⁵ The *Śruti* also says, “Whence words[×] fall back”, etc.

(“Hindi passage omitted here”)

61–62. *As in dream, the mind is seen to act through Māyā[□] manifesting the appearance of duality, so also in the waking state the mind is seen to act, through Māyā, producing the appearance of duality.[°]*

There is no doubt that the mind which is, in fact, non-dual, appears as dual in dream; in the like manner, undoubtedly, the waking state, which is non-dual, appears as dual.

ŚANKARA’S COMMENTARY.

That pure consciousness which is non-dual (from the standpoint of the Supreme Reality) is sought to be described by words, is due to the active condition of the mind (which is due to *Avidyā*). This description (of the non-dual *Ātman* by words) has no meaning from the standpoint of the Ultimate Truth. These¹ verses have already been explained.

(“Hindi⁴⁴⁶ passage omitted here”)

445 315

CHAPTER IV

QUENCHING OF FIRE-BRAND

[×] Because words imply thought, doing am, and they can yield only another thought, not I T. The original editor inserted footnote “Because words imply thought, doing am, and they can yield only another thought, not I T.” by hand

[□] Maya here means ignorance of the truth. The original editor inserted footnote “Maya here means ignorance of the truth” by hand

[°] It is not caused, as a seed produces a tree, but it is the mind itself and nothing else; no second thing is produced. The original editor inserted footnote “It is not caused, as a seed produces a tree, but it is the mind itself and nothing else; no second thing is produced” by hand

It may be contended that if the *Ātman* cannot be described by words, why then should the scholars have taken the pains to use words to denote *Ātman*. In reply it is said that what is described by words by scholars is not the non-dual *Ātman* but a duality, perceived on account of the activity of the mind, associated with the subject-object relationship which is the characteristic of the relative plane of existence. The Ultimate Reality is the absence of ideas or descriptions. (not to be confused with samadhi.)

¹ *The verses, etc.* – Vide Chapter III, 29-30.

446 316

CHAPTER IV

QUENCHING OF FIRE-BRAND

63. *The whole variety of Jivas, born of eggs, moisture, etc., always seen by the dreamer when he goes about (in his dream) in all ten directions (have no existence apart from the mind^x of the dreamer).*

ŚANKARA'S COMMENTARY.

Here is another reason which also shows us that duality describable by words, does not exist. The beings or *Jivas*, born¹ of eggs or moisture, which a dreamer going about in all ten directions perceives in his dream condition as existing, (have, as a matter of fact, no existence apart from the mind of the dreamer).

(Objection) – Suppose we admit this. But what are you driving at?

(Reply) – Our reply is as follows: –

(“Hindi passage omitted here”)

64. *These (beings) which are objects of the mind[□] of the dreamer have no existence apart from his mind.[○] Similarly,⁴⁴⁷ this mind of the dreamer is admitted to be the object of perception of the dreamer only.^x (Therefore the mind of the dreamer is not separate from the dreamer himself.)^x*

ŚANKARA'S COMMENTARY.

^x They are not other than his mind The original editor inserted footnote “They are not other than his mind” by hand

¹ *Born of, etc.* – The beings that are perceived to exist may be divided into four classes, e.g., those that are born of the womb, the egg, the moisture and the soil.

[□] chitta The original editor inserted footnote “chitta” by hand

[○] as separate from it The original editor inserted footnote “as separate from it” by hand

⁴⁴⁷ 317

CHAPTER IV

QUENCHING OF FIRE-BRAND

f

^x When you talk of individual or you, the mind is treated as an object, but nothing ourself you may drop such {Illegible} The original editor inserted footnote “When you talk of individual or you, the mind is treated as an object, but nothing ourself you may drop such {Illegible}” by hand

^x In the dream, the mind is a part of the dream and neither is separate from each other. Nor is the dreamer himself other than his mind. The original editor inserted footnote “In the dream, the mind is a part of the dream and neither is separate from each other. Nor is the dreamer himself other than his mind.” By hand

Those¹ beings perceived by the mind of the dreamer have no existence outside the mind of the person who dreams about them. It² is the mind alone which imagines itself to have assumed the forms of many diversified beings. Similarly,³ that mind of the dreamer is, again, perceived by the dreamer alone. Therefore there is no separate thing called mind which is apart from the dreamer himself.

("Hindi passage omitted here")

65-66. *The whole variety of Jivas, born of eggs, moisture, etc., always seen by the waking man when he goes about (in his waking condition) in all ten directions, is⁴⁴⁸ only the object of the mind of the waking man. These Jivas are in no way apart from the waking mind.^x Similarly, the mind of the waking man is admitted to be the object of perception of the waking person only. (Therefore the mind is not separate from the perceiver.)*

ŚANKARA'S COMMENTARY.

The *Jivas*, perceived in the waking state, do not exist anywhere except in the mind of the perceiver, for, they are not seen independent of the mind. These *Jivas* are similar to the *Jivas*, perceived in the dream, which are cognized by the mind of the dreaming person alone. That mind, again, having the characteristic of perception of *Jivas* is non-different from the perceiver of the waking condition, because¹ it is seen by the perceiver, as² is the case with the mind which perceives the dream. The rest has already been interpreted (in the previous verses).

¹ *Those, etc.*—The truth about this statement is clearly understood in the waking state.

² *It is, etc.*—In the dream, the mind alone objectifies itself into the perceiver and the perceived.

³ *Similarly, etc.*—The mind of a man is not perceived by any other being excepting himself. The perceiving ego is also created by the mind. The ego and the non-ego come into existence together. Therefore, the charge of solipsism cannot be levelled against the Vedāntist.

⁴⁴⁸ 318

CHAPTER IV

QUENCHING OF FIRE-BRAND

^x Berkeley discovered this; Kant based half his philosophy on it: that mind can only know what is of same nature. The original editor inserted footnote "Berkeley discovered this; Kant based half his philosophy on it: that mind can only know what is of same nature." By hand

¹ *Because, etc.*—Mind is identical with the Reality or *Ātman*, When the Reality is characterised by the perception of the subject-object idea (through ignorance), it is called the mind. And when it remains free from any such idea, it is called *Ātman*. From the standpoint of Reality, the perceiver, the object and the instrument of perception are one. The causal relation, like the external objects, is in the mind of the perceiver.

² *As is the case, etc.*—In dream, the dream-mind which sees objects (non-different from itself) is identical with the dreamer

("Hindi passage omitted here")

67. Both (the mind and the Jiva) are objects of perception to each other. Which then can be said to exist⁴⁴⁹ independent of the other? (The reply of the wise is in the negative). Both are devoid of the marks by which they could be distinguished. For, either can be cognized only through the other.^x

ŚANKARA'S COMMENTARY.

Both the mind and the *Jivas*,¹ or in other words, the mind and its modifications (which are seen as external objects) are each an object of perception to the other. In other words, one is perceived only through the other. The mind exists only in relation to the *Jiva*, etc., and the *Jiva* and objects exist only in relation to the mind. Therefore they are each an object of perception to the other. Hence² wise men assert that nothing whatsoever, neither the mind nor its object, can be said to have any existence (if either be considered by itself).⁴⁵⁰ As in the dream the elephant as well as the mind that perceives the elephant, are not really existent^o, so also is the case with the mind and its objects of the waking condition. How is it so? For both the mind and its objects have no proof of their existence (independent of each other). They are each an object of perception to the other. One cannot cognize a Jar without the cognition of a Jar; nor can one have a cognition of a Jar without a Jar. In the case of the Jar and the cognition of the

449 319

CHAPTER IV

QUENCHING OF FIRE-BRAND

^x When do you use the words drik, perceiver, consciousness? Only when you have a drsgam, a correlative, and vice versa therefore they go together always. This implies that they are one and the same thing. They have never been seen separate from each other. That which enables you to know both, is atman. The original editor inserted footnote "When you talk of individual or you, the mind is treated as an object, but nothing ourself you may drop such {Illegible}" by hand

This verse refutes the contention of the school of thought which asserts that the ego creates the non-ego.

¹ *Jivas*. – They include all objects perceived by the mind.

² *Hence, etc.* – They exist, with relation to one another, only in the relative plane of consciousness.

The existence of the variety of objects is possible only when one object is perceived only in relation to the other. Therefore the triad of "Knower," "Known" and "Knowledge," mutually dependent upon one another, is possible only in the realm of ignorance.

⁴⁵⁰ The original editor deleted "(from the standpoint of either the idealist or the realist)" by hand

^o apart from each other The original editor inserted footnote "apart from each other" by hand

Jar, it is not possible to conceive the distinction between the instrument of knowledge and the object of knowledge.□

("Hindi⁴⁵¹ passage omitted here")

68-70. *As the dream-Jiva comes into being and disappears so also all Jivas (perceived in the waking condition)⁺ appear and disappear.*

As the magician's Jiva^o comes into being and passes away so also all Jivas (perceived in the waking condition) appear and disappear.

As the artificial Jiva[□] (brought into existence by incantation, medicinal herb, etc.) comes into being and passes away so also all the Jivas (perceived in the waking condition) appear and disappear.

ŚANKARA'S COMMENTARY.

The "magician's *Jiva*" means that which is conjured up before our vision by the feat of a magician. The⁴⁵² "artificial *Jiva*" is that which is brought into existence by means of incantation, medicinal herb, etc.

As the *Jivas* born of egg, etc., and created in dream, are seen to come into existence and then to pass away, so also the *Jivas*, such as human beings, etc., seen in the

□ you cannot really separate the mind from what it knows. {Theoretic??} may do so, but try it!The original editor inserted footnote "you cannot really separate the mind from what it knows. {Theoretic??} may do so, but try it!" by hand

⁴⁵¹ 320

CHAPTER IV

QUENCHING OF FIRE-BRAND

⁺ as Bergeon and science show, the body is constantly changing. We go father and say not only the body hit also the jiva passes away every moment.The original editor inserted footnote "mesmerism, where the mesmerised person assumes different personalities" by hand

^o apparently a reference to rope-trick, where man appears and vanishesThe original editor inserted footnote "as Bergeon and science show, the body is constantly changing. We go father and say not only the body hit also the jiva passes away every moment." by hand

□ mesmerism, where the mesmerised person assumes different personalitiesThe original editor inserted footnote "mesmerism, where the mesmerised person assumes different personalities" by hand

⁴⁵² 321

CHAPTER IV

QUENCHING OF FIRE-BRAND

waking state, though really non-existent (appear to come into existence and then pass away). These¹ are merely the construction⁴⁵³ of the mind.

("Hindi passage omitted here")

71. *No kind of Jiva is ever born^x nor is there any cause^o for any such birth. The Ultimate Truth is that nothing whatsoever is born.*

ŚANKARA'S COMMENTARY.

It has already been stated that the appearances of birth, death, etc., of the *Jivas* are possible only in the empirical plane, as is the case with the dream-beings. But the Ultimate Truth is that no *Jiva* is ever born. The rest has already been stated.

("Hindi⁴⁵⁴ passage omitted here")

72. *This perceived world of duality, characterised by the subject-object relationship, is verily an act of the mind. The mind, again, (from the standpoint of Reality) is without touch with any object⁺ (as it is of the nature of Ātman). Hence it is declared to be eternal and unattached.*

ŚANKARA'S COMMENTARY.

The whole world of duality consisting of the subject and the object is, verily, an act of the mind. But from the standpoint of the ultimate Reality, the mind, which is

It may be contended that if the *Jivas* perceived in the waking state be unreal, then their birth and death, which are objects of common experience, become an impossibility. This *Kārikā* says in reply that as in the case of dream-beings, etc., really non-existent, birth and death are possible, so also the appearance of birth, etc., is possible in the case of beings that are perceived in the waking state.

¹ *There are, etc.* – In other words, the *Jivas*, perceived in the waking state, with all concomitant appearance of birth, death, etc., are mere results of the objectifying tendency of the mind, and nothing more.

⁴⁵³ The original editor strike out and replaced "imagination" to "construction" by hand

^x because there is only one substance- not two. The original editor inserted footnote "because there is only one substance- not two." By hand

^o causality is impossible in unity: whatever seems to be produced is really the same thing. The original editor inserted footnote "causality is impossible in unity: whatever seems to be produced is really the same thing." By hand

⁴⁵⁴ 322

CHAPTER IV

QUENCHING OF FIRE-BRAND

⁺ outside The original editor inserted footnote "outside" by hand

verily the *Ātman*, is¹ unrelated to any object.° On account of the absence of relation (with any object), the mind is declared as eternal and unattached. The *Śruti* also says, “The *Purusha* is always free from relation.” That which perceives objects outside of it, is related to such objects. But the mind, having no such external object□, is free from all relations.

(“Hindi⁴⁵⁵ passage omitted here”)

73. *That which exists on the strength of the illusory experiences does not, really speaking, exist. That which, again, is said to exist on the strength of the views supported by the other schools of thought,[×] does not, really speaking, exist.*

ŚANKARA’S COMMENTARY.

(Objection)—It has been said that the mind is free from the relation° with any objects, as such objects do not exist. But this non-attachment regarding the mind cannot be maintained inasmuch as objects in the forms of the teacher, the scripture and the pupil exist.

This is the repetition of the last verse of the third chapter of the *Kārikā*.

¹ *Is unrelated, etc.* – The objects and their relation with the mind are perceived only in the state of ignorance. Even when the ignorant person perceives the mind to be associated with the subject-object relationship, the mind, truly speaking, is non-dual, unattached and absolute.

The mind is, in reality, free from all ideas of the subject-object relationship. The idea of the object is superimposed upon the mind through ignorance. These objects have no existence apart from the mind. This has been already established by the dream-analogy. Therefore from the standpoint of the ultimate Reality, the mind is ever unrelated to objects, as such objects do not exist. Hence mind is *Ātman* or Reality.

° any second thing. Causality depends on the unconscious assumption that there are two, i.e. relation. The original editor inserted footnote “any second thing. Causality depends on the unconscious assumption that there are two, i.e. relation.” By hand

□ nothing is outside it The original editor inserted footnote “nothing is outside it” by hand

455 323

CHAPTER IV

QUENCHING OF FIRE-BRAND

[×] They can only yield more thoughts. Thus Kant may give you a 1000 more thoughts, illegal may give you a million thoughts, and so on; all this is not Truth. For all the other school’s {??et} a second thing. The original editor inserted footnote “They can only yield more thoughts. Thus Kant may give you a 1000 more thoughts, illegal may give you a million thoughts, and so on; all this is not Truth. For all the other school’s {??et} a second thing.” By hand

° Go in dream, dualistic relation between them is not there The original editor inserted footnote “Go in dream, dualistic relation between them is not there” by hand

(Reply) – There is no such defect in our contention.

(Objection) – How?

(Reply) – The¹ existence of such objects as the scripture,[□] etc., is due to the empirical experience which is illusory. The empirical knowledge in respect of scripture, teacher and taught is illusory and imagined only as a means to the realisation of the ultimate Reality. Therefore scripture, etc., which exist only on the strength of illusory empirical experiences, have no real existence. It has already been said that duality vanishes when the ultimate Reality is known. Again, the² objects (which appear to come into existence through the illusory experiences), supported⁴⁵⁶ by other schools of thought as existent, do not, when analysed from the standpoint of the ultimate Reality, verily exist. Hence it has been rightly said in the previous *Kārikā* that the mind is unattached.

(“Hindi passage omitted here”)

74. *Ātman is called unborn (Aja) from the standpoint of the illusory empirical experiences. It is, truly speaking, not even unborn.[×] That unborn Ātman appears to be born from the standpoint of the belief of the other schools of thought.*

ŚANKARA’S COMMENTARY.

¹ *The existence, etc.* – That is to say, the scripture, the teacher and the taught have meaning only in the state of ignorance. The purpose of these ideas is to help the ignorant person to realize Truth. Compare with the *Kārikā* 28 in the *Āgama Prakarana*.

[□] scripture is useful in the vyavaharic world but what is it? Only words, i.e. thoughts. The original editor inserted footnote “scripture is useful in the vyavaharic world but what is it? Only words, i.e. thoughts.” By hand

² *The objects, etc.* – The *Vaiseshika* school of thought maintains the existence of Six categories. But these categories are non-existent from the standpoint of the ultimate Reality. These are perceived to exist only in the plane of our empirical experiences.

⁴⁵⁶ 324

CHAPTER IV

QUENCHING OF FIRE-BRAND

[×] advaita call atman ‘unborn’ only to refute those who say it is born, i.e. created, produced. So we say it is ‘uncreated’ in reply for ‘birthless’ is only a word, i.e. a thought, i.e. a drsyam, i.e. not the Truth. It is a thorn to pick out the thorn of causal-grounded ideas. The original editor inserted footnote “advaita call atman ‘unborn’ only to refute those who say it is born, i.e. created, produced. So we say it is ‘uncreated’ in reply for ‘birthless’ is only a word, i.e. a thought, i.e. a drsyam, i.e. not the Truth. It is a thorn to pick out the thorn of causal-grounded ideas.” By hand

(Objection)—If scriptural teaching, etc., were illusory, then the birthlessness of *Ātman*, as taught by scripture, is also due to illusory imagination.

(Reply)—This is, indeed, true. The *Ātman* is said to be unborn only in relation to illusory empirical experiences which comprehend ideas of scripture, teacher and taught. From¹ the standpoint of the ultimate Reality, *Ātman* cannot be said to be even unborn. The² *Ātman* which is said to be unborn only as⁴⁵⁷ against the conclusion of those schools (which maintain that *Ātman* comes into existence), appears to be born to the ignorant. Therefore, the notion (based upon illusion) that *Ātman* is unborn has no bearing on the ultimate Reality.

("Hindi passage omitted here")

75. *Man has mere persistent belief in the reality of the unreal (which is duality). There is no duality (corresponding to such belief). One who has realised the absence of duality is never born again as there remains, no longer, any cause (for such birth).*

ŚANKARA'S⁴⁵⁸ COMMENTARY.

As objects are, really speaking, non-existent, therefore people who believe in their existence have, in fact, attachment for duality which is unreal. It is a mere belief in the (existence of) objects which (really speaking) do not exist. There is no duality. The

¹ *From, etc.*—The idea of birthlessness is the correlative of the idea of birth. Hence both the ideas belong to the realm of ignorance. *Ātman*, as it really is, cannot be described either as born or unborn. Nothing can be predicated of *Ātman* from the standpoint of the ultimate Reality.

² *The Ātman, etc.*—The Samkhya School of thought, believing in causality, asserts the birth of *Ātman*. As against this conclusion, it is maintained that *Ātman* is unborn (*Aja*). This assertion regarding the birthlessness of *Ātman* is also due to *Avidyā* inasmuch as it aims at the refutation of the opposite theory. This theory of the *Ātman* being ever unborn is based upon the illusory idea regarding its birth. It may be contended that the birthlessness of *Ātman* is not an illusory idea but truth. In reply it is said that the predicate of birthlessness cannot have any application with regard to the ultimate Reality.^{*} Because *Ātman* is considered to be unborn only from the standpoint of an illusion that it is born. Hence, being correlative of an illusion, the birthlessness of *Ātman* also becomes illusory. The real nature of *Ātman* cannot be determined by any instrument of knowledge which has its applicability only in the relative plane.

^{*} The Drik

⁴⁵⁷ 325

CHAPTER IV
QUENCHING OF FIRE-BRAND

⁴⁵⁸ 326

CHAPTER IV
QUENCHING OF FIRE-BRAND

cause of birth is this attachment. Therefore one who has realised the unreality of duality is never born again as he is free from the cause (of birth), *viz.*, attachment^x to the illusory duality.

("Hindi passage omitted here")

76. *When the mind does not find any cause, superior, inferior or middling, it becomes free from birth.*^o *How can there be an effect without a cause?*

ŚANKARA'S COMMENTARY.

The superior cause consists of those *Dharmas* (*i.e.*, duties of life), wholly virtuous, which are prescribed according to different castes and stages of life, and which when performed without any attachment to the result, enable one to attain to the position of gods, etc. The middling cause consists of those duties, mixed with certain irreligious practices, the observance of which enables one to attain to the position of man, etc. The inferior cause consists of those particular tendencies, characterised by undutiful⁴⁵⁹ practices alone, which lead one to the position of lower creatures, such as beasts, birds, etc. When the mind, realising the essence⁴⁶⁰ of Self which is one and without a second and which is free from all (illusory) imaginations, does not find the existence of any of the causes, superior, inferior or middling, all imagined through ignorance, —like a man of discrimination not seeing any dirt which a child sees in the sky — then it does not undergo any birth, *i.e.*, it does not objectify itself as god, man or beast, which are the effects of their respective causes (enumerated above). No effect can be produced in the absence of a cause, as sprouts cannot come forth in the absence of the seed.

All, etc. — All beings, from god⁴⁶¹ to the beast and the bird, belong to the realm of ignorance.

("Hindi passage omitted here")

77. *The non-evolution (i.e., the state of knowledge) of the mind, which is unborn and free from causal relation, is absolute and constant. Everything else is also equally unborn.*^o (So

^x the root of attachment is ego. The original editor inserted footnote "the root of attachment is ego." By hand

^o When causality goes, the idea of birth goes with it. The original editor inserted footnote "When causality goes, the idea of birth goes with it." By hand

⁴⁵⁹ The original editor strike out and replaced "irreligious" to "undutiful" by hand

⁴⁶⁰ 327

CHAPTER IV

QUENCHING OF FIRE-BRAND

⁴⁶¹ The original editor strike out and replaced "the angel" to "god" by hand

what is true of the mind is true of everything else as well.) For, all duality is merely an objectification of the mind.[×]

ŚANKARA'S COMMENTARY.

It has already been stated that in the absence of a cause, the mind is not subject to birth. But what is the nature of that non-evolution of the mind? It is thus replied:—The causes of birth are meritorious actions and their opposite. The state of absolute non-manifestation of the mind,—known as liberation (knowledge)⁴⁶² and free from causality¹ on account of the realisation of the Supreme—is² always constant under all conditions and absolute, that is, ever non-dual. Even³ before the attainment of knowledge, the mind always remains non-manifest and non-dual. Even prior to the realisation of the highest knowledge, the idea of duality (*i.e.*, the subject and the object) and the idea of birth are merely an objectification of the mind. Hence the non-evolution of the mind which is always⁴ free from change or birth is constant and absolute. In other words, it cannot be said that this non-evolution or liberation sometimes exists and sometimes disappears. It is always the same and changeless.

◦ When you know that everything else is the mind, not-different, so they too are uncreate
The original editor inserted footnote "When you know that everything else is the mind, not-different, so they too are uncreate" by hand

[×] as in dream. The original editor inserted footnote "as in dream." By hand

462 328

CHAPTER IV

QUENCHING OF FIRE-BRAND

It may be contended from the previous *Kārikā* that liberation depends upon the external factor of time. This contention is answered in this verse.

¹ *Which, etc.*—The causes of birth, in the form of meritorious and vicious deeds, are seen to exist only during the state of ignorance.

² *Is always, etc.*—All duality, due to the objectification of the mind, is unreal. There is no cause for the mind which is absolute, eternal, immutable and all-sufficient, to pass into birth. Therefore from the standpoint of Reality, the mind or *Jiva* is always liberated. He is ever free from bondage which is non-existent.

³ *Even before, etc.*—It may be objected that liberation is possible only during the state of knowledge, while the *Jiva* is bound during the state of ignorance. In reply it is said that from the standpoint of Reality ignorance does not exist. Even when a man looks upon himself as subject to birth and death and living in the plane of ignorance, he is, really speaking, *Ātman* free and non-dual. Even when the rope is seen to be the snake by the ignorant mind, it is nothing but the rope. Similarly the *Ātman* never deviates from his real nature though he appears as *Jiva* during ignorance. The idea of birth, death, etc., is mere unreal construction of mind.

⁴ *Always*—That is to say, the mind is really free from birth, etc., even when the persons see it coming into existence and again disappearing.

("Hindi⁴⁶³ passage omitted here")

78. *Having (thus) realised the absence of causality as the ultimate Truth, and also not finding any other cause (for birth), one attains to that (the state of liberation) which is free from grief, desire and fear.*

ŚANKARA'S COMMENTARY.

Through¹ the reasoning indicated above, one knows the absence of duality, which is the cause of birth, and thus realises absolute non-causation as the ultimate Truth. Further, he² does not see the reality of anything else as cause, such as religious merit, etc., which may enable one to attain to the position of gods, etc. Thus freeing himself from all desires, he attains to the highest state, *i.e.*, liberation (knowledge) which is free from desire, grief, ignorance and fear. That is to say, he no longer becomes subject to birth and death.

("Hindi passage omitted here")

79. *On account of attachment to the unreal objects, the mind runs after such objects.[×] But it comes back (to its own⁴⁶⁴ pure state) when it becomes unattached (to objects) realising their unreality.*

ŚANKARA'S COMMENTARY.

Attachment to the unreal objects is due to the firm belief that duality exists, though in reality such duality is ever non-existent. On¹ account of such attachment which is of the nature of delusion caused by ignorance, the mind runs after objects corresponding to those desires. But when a man knows the unreality² of all duality of

⁴⁶³ 329

CHAPTER IV

QUENCHING OF FIRE-BRAND

¹ *Through, etc.*—All dual objects are illusory like dream objects on account of their being perceived. See *Kārikā* 4, Chapter II.

² *He, etc.*—The meritorious or vicious deeds, as well as gods, men or birds and beasts which are the results of those actions, belong to the realm of ignorance.

[×] The mind makes the objects: it is of the same substance as them. The original editor inserted footnote "The mind makes the objects: it is of the same substance as them." By hand

⁴⁶⁴ 330

CHAPTER IV

QUENCHING OF FIRE-BRAND

¹ *On account, etc.*—It is desire, due to ignorance, that creates objects around us.

² *Unreality, etc.*—The only way to become detached from the world is to know its unreal nature by following the Vedāntic method of reasoning. The Yogic method of mechanical

objects,¹ then he becomes indifferent to them and turns away his mind from the unreal (objects) to which he feels attached.

(“Hindi passage omitted here”)

80. *The mind, thus freed from attachment (to all external objects)⁺ and undistracted (by fresh objects)⁺ attains to its state of Immutability. Being actually^{465Δ} realised by the wise, it is undifferentiated[◦], birthless[◦] and non-dual[◦].*

ŚANKARA’S COMMENTARY.

When the mind is withdrawn[□] from all duality of objects, and when it does not attach itself to any other objects,⁴⁶⁶ – as no such objects exist – then the mind attains to the state of immutability which¹ is of the same nature as Brahman. This² realisation of the mind as Brahman is characterised by the mass of unique non-dual consciousness. As that condition of the mind is³ known[×] (only) by the wise who have known the ultimate[◦] Reality, therefore that state is supreme and undifferentiated, birthless and non-dual.

concentration may make the mind oblivious of the world for the time being, but when that concentration is relaxed, the world with its objects again appears as before. Vedāntic Knowledge alone convinces one of the illusory nature of the world.

⁺ you must also give up internal objects. The original editor inserted footnote “you must also give up internal objects.” By hand

⁴⁶⁵ The original editor added underline by hand

^Δ not imagined as being this or that The original editor inserted footnote “not imagined as being this or that” by hand

[◦] Note that all these descriptive words are negative ones. The original editor inserted footnote “Note that all these descriptive words are negative ones” by hand

[□] seeing the something in all duality. The original editor inserted footnote “seeing the something in all duality.

“ by hand

⁴⁶⁶ 331

CHAPTER IV

QUENCHING OF FIRE-BRAND

¹ *Which is, etc.* – The mind free from relativity and objectification is the Brahman.

² *This, etc.* – The mind[□] free from the subject-object relationship has the same characteristic as Brahman.

[□] not to be confused with nirvikalpa

³ *Is known, etc.* – This state of the mind, which is the highest Reality, can be known with the help of reasoning. Scripture, which also belongs to the realm of relativity, cannot describe Brahman or the Supreme Reality.

[×] realized as a fact The original editor inserted footnote “realized as a fact” by hand

[◦] as such P.B inserted footnote “as such” by hand

("Hindi passage omitted here")

81. (*Reality which is*) free from birth[◦], and (*which is*) free from sleep[□] and dream, reveals itself by itself. For, this Dharma (i.e., Ātman) is from its very nature ever-luminous[×].

ŚANKARA'S COMMENTARY.

The nature of that which is realisable by the wise is again described:— It (*Ātman*) reveals itself by itself. It does not depend for its revelation upon any external¹ light, such as the sun, etc. Self-luminosity² is its very nature. It is ever-luminous. This is the inherent characteristic of the *Dharma*, known as *Ātman*.

("Hindi⁴⁶⁷ passage omitted here")

82. On account of the mind apprehending single objects,[△] the Bliss (i.e., the real essence of the self) always remains concealed[×] and misery comes to the surface. Therefore the ever-effulgent Lord (is not realised though taught again and again by scriptures and teachers).

ŚANKARA'S COMMENTARY.

◦ not caused or produced. The original editor inserted footnote "not caused or produced." By hand

□ this refutes those who regard sleep as Brahman. The original editor inserted footnote "this refutes those who regard sleep as Brahman" by hand

× in all 3 states the turiya is always present. The original editor inserted footnote "in all 3 states the turiya is always present." By hand

¹ *External, etc.*— The *Ātman* itself is the substratum of everything. Therefore it cannot be dependent upon anything else.

² *Self-luminosity*— The *Ātman* is called self-luminous as, in the state of deep sleep, the real nature of *Ātman* is present though all external instruments such as the sense-organs, the mind, etc., then remain inactive.

The text characterises *Ātman* as free from dream and sleep. Dream indicates the wrong apprehension of truth while sleep stands for its non-apprehension. The waking state is omitted as because either it is included in the dream state or it stands for the state of knowledge.

⁴⁶⁷ 332

CHAPTER IV

QUENCHING OF FIRE-BRAND

[△] So long as the mind has the idea of separateness, it cannot realise Brahman. The original editor inserted footnote "So long as the mind has the idea of separateness, it cannot realise Brahman." By hand

× Brahman is not absent but ever present. The original editor inserted footnote "Brahman is not absent but ever present" by hand

How is it that the people at large, do not realise *Ātman*, which is the Supreme Reality, though It is again and again thus explained? To this the following reply is given:—On¹ account of the mind apprehending through attachment, single objects of the world of duality, the blissful nature of *Ātman* is easily covered. The reason for this concealment is only the perception of duality. There is no other cause for it. Moreover, misery^{2°} is brought to the surface. The knowledge of the Supreme Reality is extremely hard to attain. The Lord, the non-dual *Ātman*, the effulgent Being,⁴⁶⁸ though again and again taught by the Vedānta scriptures and the teachers, is not therefore comprehended. The *Śruti* also says, “One who speaks of *Ātman* is looked upon with wonder and he who has obtained and who has realised it, is equally an object of wonder.”

(“Hindi passage omitted here”)

83. *Childish persons verily cover It (fail to know It) by predicating of It such attributes as existence, non-existence[°], existence and non-existence and absolute[□] non-existence, derived respectively from their notion of change, immovability, combination of both and absolute negation.*

ŚANKARA’S COMMENTARY.

Attachment of the learned to such predicates¹ as existence, non-existence, etc., serves verily as a veil between them and the Supreme Reality. What wonder is there that childish persons on account of their undeveloped intellect are unable to grasp

¹ *On account of, etc.*—That is to say, people on account of their false prejudices associate *Ātman* with various illusory ideas. *Ātman* is free from all *ideas* (*Kalpana*). See next *Kārikā*.

² *Misery*—In reality there is no misery. Bliss^x alone, which is the characteristic of *Ātman*, exists. But misery is experienced when the Blissful *Ātman* is not known.

^x not to be taken as a positive attribute, but only as them to remove them of ignorance then itself be discarded.

[°] We have to be thankful for the existence of misery, as without it people would never think of searching for truth. The original editor inserted footnote “We have to be thankful for the existence of misery, as without it people would never think of searching for truth” by hand

CHAPTER IV

QUENCHING OF FIRE-BRAND

[°] Theory that world came into existence but no longer exists. The original editor inserted footnote “Theory that world came into existence but no longer exists” by hand

[□] *sunyvada* : theory that world has never existed. The original editor inserted footnote “*sunyvada* : theory that world has never existed” by hand

¹ *Predicates, etc.*—These predicates of *Ātman* are due to the illusory ideas (*Kalpana*) regarding its real nature.

Ātman! This *Kārikā* brings out the aforesaid idea. Some² disputant asserts that *Ātman* exists. Another³ disputant, *viz.*, the Buddhist, says that it is non-existent. A⁴⁶⁹ third⁴ disputant, the Jaina, who is a pseudo-nihilist, believing in both the existence and non-existence of Self, proclaims that *Ātman* both exists and does not exist. The⁵ absolute nihilist says that nothing exists at all. He⁶ who predicates existence of *Ātman* associates it with changeability in order to make it distinct from such impermanent objects as a jar, etc. The⁷ theory that *Ātman* is non-existent, *i.e.*, inactive, is held on account of its undifferentiated nature. It⁸ is called both existent and non-existent on account of its being subject to both changeability and immutability. Non-existence is predicated of *Ātman* on account of everything ending in absolute negation or void. All the four classes of disputants, mentioned above, asserting existence, non-existence, existence and non-existence, and total non-existence (about *Ātman*), derived respectively from their notion of changeability, immutability, combination of both and total negation, reduce themselves to the position of the childish, devoid of all discrimination; and by

² *Some disputant*—This refers to the follower of the *Vaisesika* theory. He asserts there is an *Ātman* which is separate from the body, sense-organ, *Prāna*, etc. It is the knower and enjoyer of misery and happiness.

³ *Another, etc.*—This refers to the followers of subjective idealism among the Buddhists known as *Kshanika Vignānavādins*. According to them, the *Ātman*, though separate from body, etc, is identical with *Buddhi* or intellect. It is not permanent. Our consciousness which disappears after only a moment's existence is the only reality. Any reality, in the sense of a permanent entity, is non-existent.

⁴⁶⁹ 334

CHAPTER IV

QUENCHING OF FIRE-BRAND

⁴ *The third, etc.*—This refers to the followers of the *Jaina* school of thought. According to this school, *Ātman* is both existent and non-existent. Though *Ātman* is separate from the body, yet it has the same size as the body. It exists as long as the body exists and it is destroyed with the destruction of the body.

⁵ *The Absolute, etc.*—This refers to the extreme school of Buddhism known as the Nihilistic school. According to the follower of this theory, there is no permanent Reality like *Ātman*. All things end in destruction. Therefore absolute negation is the highest truth. The word “non-existence” has been repeated in the verse in order to show the determined belief of the nihilist in his own opinion.

⁶ *He who, etc.*—According to the *Vaisesika* theory the nature of *Ātman* is changeable as it, at different times, becomes subject to happiness, misery, desire, knowledge, etc. The *Ātman* is designated as existent in order to distinguish it from all objects of an impermanent nature, such as a pot, etc.

⁷ *The theory, etc.*—The subjective idealist asserts that *Ātman* has a momentary existence, and as having existed only for a moment, it cannot be subject to any change or modification.

⁸ *It is, etc.*—The *Jaina* school predicates both existence and non-existence of *Ātman* as it partakes of the nature of both.

associating *Ātman* with all these illusory ideas (*Kalpana*) cover Its⁹ real nature. If these (so-called) learned men act as veritable children on account of their ignorance of ultimate Reality, what is to be said regarding those who are, by nature, unenlightened!

(“Hindi⁴⁷⁰ passage omitted here”)

84. *These are the four alternative theories regarding (the nature of) Ātman, on account of attachment to which It⁴⁷¹ always remains covered (from one’s view). He who has known that Ātman is ever-untouched by any of these (predicates) indeed sees all.*

ŚANKARA’S COMMENTARY.

What is the nature of the essence, *i.e.*, the ultimate Reality, by knowing which people are purged of their stupidity and are really made to attain to wisdom? It is thus replied: There are four alternate theories regarding *Ātman* such as, It exists, It does not exist, etc., mentioned in the works of those who are fond of disputations. The *Ātman* always remains covered and hidden from these vain talkers on account of their attachment to their theories. The thoughtful person who has realised the *Ātman*, known only by the (correct understanding of) Upanishads, as ever-untouched by any of the four alternative predicates such as It exists, It does not exist, etc., is the seer¹ of all, the omniscient and the real knower of the ultimate Reality.

(“Hindi passage omitted here”)

85. *What else remains for him to be desired when he has attained to the state of the Brāhmana—a state of complete omniscience, non-duality and a state which is without beginning, end or middle+?*

ŚANKARA’S⁴⁷² COMMENTARY.

⁹ *Its real nature*—The real nature of *Ātman* is that it is free from all ideas or *Kalpana*. People clinging to their pet theories, on account of their false attachment, cannot know the real nature of *Ātman*.

⁴⁷⁰ 335

CHAPTER IV

QUENCHING OF FIRE-BRAND

⁴⁷¹ 336

CHAPTER IV

QUENCHING OF FIRE-BRAND

¹ *Seer of all*—All that exists is *Ātman*. Therefore one who knows *Ātman* knows all. There remains nothing else for him to be known.

+ these 3 imply change and a state liable to change at any moment is not worth having. The original editor inserted footnote “these 3 imply change and a state liable to change at any moment is not worth having” by hand

The¹ state of the *Brāhmana* signifies the state in which one is established in Brahman. The *Śruti* says, “This is the eternal² glory of the *Brāhmana*.” That state of *Brāhmana* is free from beginning, end or middle. That is to say, that state of non-duality is free from the (illusory ideas of) creation, preservation and destruction. Having obtained the whole³ of omniscience, described⁴ above, *i.e.*, the state of *Brāhmana*, a non-dual state without beginning, end or middle, which is the same as the realisation of Self, the *summumbonum* of existence—what else remains for him to be desired? In other words, all other strivings become useless for him. It is thus said in *Gitā*, “He has nothing to gain by the activities (of the relative world).”^Δ

(“Hindi passage omitted here”)

86. This (*i.e.*, the realisation of Brahman) is the humility[◦] natural to the *Brāhmanas*. Their tranquility (of⁴⁷³ mind) is also declared to be spontaneous (by men of discrimination). They are said to have attained to the state of sense-control (not through any artificial method) as it comes quite natural to them. He who thus realises Brahman which is all-peace, himself becomes peaceful and tranquil.

ŚANKARA’S COMMENTARY.

472 337

CHAPTER IV

QUENCHING OF FIRE-BRAND

The contention of the opponent that even a Knower of Brahman should observe the ritualistic duties of daily life is refuted by this *Kārikā*.

¹ *The state, etc.*—He alone is the real *Brāhmana* who has directly realised himself as Brahman.

² *Eternal glory*—That is to say, this state is free from all modifications and changes, such as birth, death, etc.

³ *Whole, etc.*—Having realised that state one becomes totally omniscient. There is nothing else for him to know. It is because that state is the very essence of knowledge itself.

⁴ *Described above*—That is to say, the Brahman is free from the four alternative attributes or predicates referred to in *Kārikā* 83.

^Δ does not mean he sits idle. He will not work for himself now but will do so for others. The original editor inserted footnote “does not mean he sits idle. He will not work for himself now but will do so for others” by hand

[◦] Because ego is absent in gnani, humility is his first characteristic. The original editor inserted footnote “Because ego is absent in gnani, humility is his first characteristic” by hand

473 338

CHAPTER IV

QUENCHING OF FIRE-BRAND

The humility of the *Brāhmanas* which is due to their realisation of their identity with the Self, is quite natural. This is (the real significance of) his humility. The tranquillity (of the mind which the Knowers of Brahman enjoy) is also natural and not induced by any artificial¹ means. Brahman is all-peace and tranquillity. Hence the *Brāhmanas* are said to have controlled their sense-organs (from pursuing the external objects). This is also the cause of the tranquillity of their nature. Having realised Brahman which is, by nature, all-peace the wise man attains to peace which is the characteristic of Brahman. That is to say, he becomes identical with Brahman.

(“Hindi⁴⁷⁴ passage omitted here”)

87. (*Vedānta*) recognises the ordinary (empirical) state of waking in which duality, consisting of objects and ideas of coming in contact with them, is known. It further recognises another more subtle state (i.e., the dream common to all) in which is experienced duality, consisting of the idea of coming in contact with the objects, though such objects do not exist.

ŚANKARA’S COMMENTARY.

We have, so far, come to the following conclusions: The theories of mere disputants contradicting one another, are the causes of our existence in the relative (*Samsāric*) world. Further these theories are characterised by partiality and aversion. Therefore these are merely false, as already shown by reasoning. On the other hand the philosophy of *Advaita* alone gives us true knowledge, as,—being free from the four alternative predicates referred to above,—it is untouched by partiality and aversion and is all-peace by its very nature.

It has been stated in the previous *Kārikā* that the Knower of Brahman need no longer perform the daily ritualistic duties which are obligatory for ignorant persons. This *Kārikā* states that he also need not undergo any *Yogic* or other practices in order to acquire humility, control of the senses and tranquillity of the mind. One who is established in Brahman, non-dual and all-peace, naturally and spontaneously acquires these virtues. The wise man realises that Brahman alone exists. Therefore his mind does not run after external objects, simply because they are non-existent^Δ for him. Realising Brahman everywhere, he does not show arrogance. Peace and tranquillity are quite natural for him. *Yoga* prescribes various artificial disciplines for acquiring these virtues. But he who clings to the *Yogic* practices, must be always on the alert lest his mind should be diverted to external objects. The Vedāntic method, depending upon discrimination, reveals everything as Brahman. Therefore for a *Jnāni* these virtues are quite spontaneous.

^Δ not to be interpreted literally: it has a different meaning in *advaita* to the ordinary one.

¹ *Artificial, etc.* — That is to say, the *Yogic* method.

Now the following topic is introduced as an explanation of the Vedāntic method of arriving at Truth. The word⁴⁷⁵ “*Savastu*” in the text implies objects that are perceived in our empirical experiences. Similarly, the word “*Sopalambha*” in the text implies the idea of one’s coming in contact with such objects. This constitutes the world of duality, common to all human beings, and known as the waking state which is characterised by the subject-object relationship and which alone is the sphere of all our dealings including¹ the scriptural, etc. The waking² state, thus characterised, is admitted in the Vedānta scriptures. There is another state which lacks the experiences (of the waking state) caused by external sense-organs. But³ there exists in that state the idea of coming in contact with objects, though such objects are absent. This is admitted (in the Vedāntas) as the dream state, which is again common to all, and different from and subtler than the gross state of waking.

(“Hindi⁴⁷⁶ passage omitted here”)

88. *There is another state (admitted by the wise) which is free from contact with (external) objects and altogether free from the idea of coming in contact with objects. This state is beyond all empirical experiences. The wise always describe the three, viz., Knowledge, Knowledge of objects and the Knowable as the Supreme Reality (which is ultimately knowable).*

⁴⁷⁵ 340

CHAPTER IV

QUENCHING OF FIRE-BRAND

The nature of ultimate Reality has been hinted at by the refutation of the theories hostile to the *Advaita Philosophy*. Now is given the *Advaita* method of arriving at Truth which consists in the analysis and co-ordination of the experiences of the three states, *viz.*, waking, dream and deep sleep.

¹ *Including, etc.*—The scriptures, limited to the sphere of duality, have no application to *Ātman*.

² *The waking, etc.*—Vedānta admits the waking state as real so long as ignorance lasts, and further points that the analysis of the experiences of this state together with those of the two other states leads us, indirectly, to the realisation of *Ātman*.

³ *But, etc.*—Though the objects experienced in dream exist so long as the dream lasts, they are found to be non-existing from the waking standpoint. The internality and the externality of perceptions in the dream and the waking states are mere creations of the mind.

When we look at the objects from the waking standpoint alone we think them to be real. When the same objects seen in the dream are judged from the waking standpoint we know them to be mere ideas of the mind. And analysis of deep sleep, in co-ordination with the experiences of the dream and the waking states, convinces us that everything is mind or Brahman. This is the Vedāntic method. The following verse gives a fuller explanation.

⁴⁷⁶ 341

CHAPTER IV

QUENCHING OF FIRE-BRAND

The state in which one neither⁴⁷⁷ perceives any object¹ nor perceives the idea² of coming in contact with such object—a state free from the relationship of subject and object—is called the highest state, which is beyond all empirical experiences. All empirical experiences consist of the subject-object relationship. This state is free from all such relationship and is the seed of future experiences. This³ is known as the state of deep sleep. That alone is called knowledge which is the realisation of essence, *i.e.*, the Supreme Reality, as well as the means to do so, *viz.*, the analysis of the states of gross experience, subtle⁴⁷⁸ experience and the condition beyond all experiences. The⁴ three states, mentioned above, are the objects of knowledge; for, there cannot be anything knowable besides these three states. All entities falsely imagined by the different schools of the disputants are included in these three states. That which is to be ultimately known is the truth regarding the Supreme Reality, known as *Turiya*, *i.e.*, the knowledge of Self, non-dual and unborn. The illumined ones, *i.e.*, those who have seen the Supreme Reality have described these features (topics) ranging from the objects of gross experience to the Supremely Knowable Self.

(“Hindi⁴⁷⁹ passage omitted here”)

⁴⁷⁷ The original editor inserted “neither” by hand

¹ *Object, etc.* — That is to say, the waking state.

² *The idea, etc.*—*i.e.*, the dream state in which one, in the absence of external objects, seems to perceive such objects.

³ *This is, etc.* — In deep sleep one does not perceive any object, gross or subtle. There is no experience in deep sleep which when judged from the causal standpoint, consists of mental modification,—as in the dream,—due to the perception of external objects in the waking state. Deep sleep is further characterised by the total absence of the subject-object relationship. In deep sleep exists the real self. It has been characterised as containing the seeds of the two other states, only from the causal standpoint. Again it is from the relative standpoint that *Turiya*, the witness of the three states, is mentioned as the state of the Ultimate Knowledge.

⁴⁷⁸ 342

CHAPTER IV

QUENCHING OF FIRE-BRAND

⁴ *The three, etc.* — All experiences are limited to the three states. Therefore the Truth discovered by the study of the three states is the Supreme Reality.

Therefore the Vedāntic method of arriving at Reality is the co-ordinated study of the three states. All experiences are confined to the limits of the three states.

⁴⁷⁹ 343

CHAPTER IV

QUENCHING OF FIRE-BRAND

89. Knowledge and the threefold knowable being known, one after another, the knower possessed of the highest reason⁴⁸⁰ spontaneously attains to the state of knowledge everywhere and in all things in this very life⁴⁸¹.

ŚANKARA'S COMMENTARY.

The word *Jnānam* signifies knowledge by which one grasps the significance of the three states. The word "*Jneya*" or knowable, signifies the three states which should be known. The first (knowable) consists of the gross state¹ of empirical experience. Then comes the state of subtle² experience in which the first state loses itself, *i.e.*, merges.^Δ And last comes deep sleep which is beyond all empirical experiences (gross or subtle) which results in the absence of the two previous states, *i.e.*, in which the two previous states merge. By the knowledge of these three, one after³ the other, and consequently, by the negation of the three states the *Turiya*⁴ non-dual, birthless and fearless, which alone is the Supreme Reality, is realised. Thus the knower (possessed of the highest power of discrimination) attains in this⁵ very life the state of omniscience⁶ which is identical with the knowledge of Self. He is called *Mahadhīh*⁷ or the man of the highest reason⁴⁸² as he has understood that which transcends all human experiences. His omniscience is constant and remains undiminished. For, the knowledge of Self once realised remains as such for ever. This⁴⁸³ is⁸ because the knowledge of the knower of the Supreme Reality does not appear and disappear like that of mere vain disputants.

⁴⁸⁰ The original editor strike out and replaced "intellect" to "reason" by hand

⁴⁸¹ The original editor added underline by hand

The scriptural statements that the *Ātman* being known, everything else is known, is explained in this *Kārikā*.

¹ *Gross state, etc.* – That is, the waking state.

² *Subtle, etc.* – That is, the dream state.

^Δ the external is converted by inquiry into ideaThe original editor inserted footnote "the external is converted by inquiry into idea" by hand

³ *One after, etc.* – That is to say, by knowing that the waking state merges in the dream, and both these states merge in deep sleep.

⁴ *Turiya* – Turiya is conceived as the transcendental state from the relative standpoint.

⁵ *In this, etc.* – One need not wait for death or the other world for the realisation of the ultimate Truth.

⁶ *Omniscience* – It is *Ātman* alone which appears as the three states. Therefore when *Ātman* is realised, all objects included in the three states are known.

⁷ *Mahadhīh* – The knower of Truth is designated as the possessor of the highest intellect: for, the keenest intellect alone can know *Ātman*.

⁴⁸² The original editor strike out and replaced "intellect" to "reason" by hand

⁴⁸³ 344

("Hindi⁴⁸⁴ passage omitted here")

90. *The four things to be known first are: the things to be avoided, the objects to be realised, the things to be attained (by practice) and the thoughts to be rendered ineffective. Among these four, the three things, excepting what is to be realised, viz., the Supreme Reality, exist only as imaginations.*

ŚANKARA'S COMMENTARY.

There may arise a doubt that the three states of empirical experience may constitute the ultimate Reality on account of their being pointed out¹ as things to be *gradually known*. In order to remove this doubt it is said, the "*Heyas*" or things to be^o are the three states of empirical experience, *viz.*, the waking, the dream and the deep sleep. These do not exist in *Ātman* just as the snake is not present in the rope. Therefore they should be^o. The word *Jneya*, *i.e.*,⁴⁸⁵ the thing to be known, in this text refers to the

⁸ *This is, etc.*—The appearance and disappearance of knowledge, often noticed in our empirical experience, is due to the ignorance of the real nature of the Self. As the *Jnāni* is free from ignorance, his knowledge is also constant.

This *Kārikā* further elaborates the *Advaita* method of realising Self. To the man of the grossest intellect the object appears to be extraordinary. To the man of better discrimination, the object appears to be a mere idea or modification of the mind. The *Jnāni* sees only the mind, undifferentiated, changeless and non-dual in whatever manner the objects appear. That which appears as ideas, associated with the relationship of subject and object, is known to the *Jnāni* as mere non-dual mind or *Ātman*. This is better explained in the light of the three states. The gross external objects perceived in the waking state are known to be ideas—as in dream. And the ideas of dream are known to be pure mind, non-dual and unchanging, as in deep sleep ideas disappear in the mind. This is the meaning of the merging of the previous state of waking in the subsequent state of dream and the ultimate merging of both states in deep sleep, which includes all the states. This method has been explained in the second *Mantra* of the Upanishad with reference to *AUM*. "*A*" which stands for the waking experiences is merged in "*U*" which signifies dream state. "*A*" and "*U*" are merged into "*M*" which indicates deep sleep. All the three states merge in *Turiya* which is *Ātman*. From the absolute standpoint the undifferentiated mind, free from the subject-object relationship^o, is the highest Reality. One who knows these becomes omniscient. He sees everywhere the non-dual *Ātman* alone. That which appears to others as name, form, object or idea, is realised by a *Jnāni* to be Self alone. *Ātman* alone exists.

^o Those who are ignorant think this means *nirvikalpa*; on the contrary all the objects must be there.

484 345

CHAPTER IV

QUENCHING OF FIRE-BRAND

¹ *Pointed out, etc.*—Compare *Kārikās* 88 and 89 (Chapter 4).

^o insert "not relied on as permanent" The original editor inserted footnote "insert "not relied on as permanent"" by hand

485 346

CHAPTER IV

QUENCHING OF FIRE-BRAND

knowledge of the ultimate Reality, free from the four² alternative theories described before. The things to be acquired are the accessories of spiritual realisation, *viz.*, intelligence^{486,3} childlike⁴ innocence and silence.⁵ These virtues are practised by the sages after they have renounced the threefold⁶ desires. The word “*Pākyāni*” in the text signifies the latent⁷ impressions which in due course attain maturity, *viz.*, such blemishes as attachment, aversion, delusion, etc. These are known as *Kashāya* or the passions that hide the real nature of the soul. As a means⁸ to their realisation of the Supreme Reality, sages should first of all be acquainted with these four things, *viz.*, the thing to be avoided, the thing to be realised, the thing to be acquired and the thing to be rendered ineffective. These, however, with the exception of the thing to be known—that is to say, with the exception of the non-dual Brahman alone, the essence of the ultimate Reality, that should be realised—are perceived⁹ on account of our imagination. This is the conclusion of the Knowers of Brahman with regard to the three things, *viz.*, those to be avoided, acquired, and those that are (awaiting maturity and therefore) to be made ineffective. In other words, these three do not exist from the standpoint of the ultimate Reality.

(“Hindi⁴⁸⁷ passage omitted here”)

² *Four, etc.*—Compare *Kārikā* 83 (Chapter 4).

⁴⁸⁶ The original editor strike out and replaced “wisdom” to “intelligence” by hand

³ *Wisdom*—This wisdom consists of the intellectual capacity to know that the non-dual Brahman alone is the objective of the Vedānta scriptures.

⁴ *Childlike, etc.*—That is to say, freedom from egoism, vanity, etc.

⁵ *Silence*—It means that intense concentration on Brahman which makes one avoid all vain talk.

⁶ *Threefold, etc.*—That is, the desires for children, for wealth and for heavenly felicity.

⁷ *Latent, etc.*—An ignorant man cherishes many vices, such as attachment, hatred, delusion, etc. These are known in Vedānta as *Kashāya*. Among those vices, the effect of past work and thought, some are bearing fruits which are seen in our daily activities. But others are mere tendencies and latent impressions waiting for favourable conditions to manifest themselves. These latent impressions are known as “*Pākyā*”. These should be destroyed by discrimination.

⁸ *As a means, etc.*—The seeker after Truth should know the nature of the three things to be avoided, etc., because it helps him in his knowing truth.

⁹ *Are perceived*—From the standpoint of the ultimate Reality, Brahman alone exists. Duality is perceived on account of illusion. Therefore these three things are perceived to exist only in the plane of ignorance. And this is due to ignorance. On the acquisition of knowledge one understands that there is nothing to be avoided or shunned as Brahman alone exists everywhere.

⁴⁸⁷ 347

91. All Dharmās (entities) are, by their very nature, beginningless and unattached like the Ākāśa. There is not the slightest variety in them, in any way, at any time.

ŚANKARA'S COMMENTARY.

Those who seek liberation should regard, from the standpoint of the ultimate Reality, all *Jivas*, as by their very nature without beginning, *i.e.*, eternal, and,⁴⁸⁸ like *Ākāśa*, subtle, free from all blemish and all pervading. The plural number used with regard to the '*Jivas*' may suggest multiplicity. The second line of the *Kārikā* is meant to remove¹ any such apprehension. There is no multiplicity in the *Jivas* even² in the slightest degree and under any condition.

("Hindi passage omitted here")

92. All *Jivas* are, by their very nature, illumined from the very beginning: and they are ever immutable in their nature. He who, having known this, rests without^o (sees the needlessness of) seeking further knowledge, is alone capable of realising the highest Truth.

ŚANKARA'S COMMENTARY.

Even the knowableness attributed to the *Jivas* is also due to the illusion of empirical experiences. It cannot be applied from the standpoint of the supreme Reality. This idea is explained in this text. The *Jivas* are illumined, by their very nature, from the very beginning. That is to say, all the *Jivas*, like the sun which is of the very nature of eternal light, are ever illumined. No effort need be made to define their⁴⁸⁹ nature, as the nature of the *Jiva* is, from the very beginning, well determined.¹ It cannot be subject to any such doubt as, "The *Jiva* may be like this or like that". The seeker of liberation who, in the manner above described, does not stand in need of anything else to make this knowledge certain to himself or others,—just as the sun, by nature ever illumined, is

488 348

CHAPTER IV

QUENCHING OF FIRE-BRAND

¹ *To remove, etc.*—The plural number is used in consideration of the multiplicity of *Jivas* seen from the empirical standpoint. Even though an ignorant person sees multiplicity of embodied beings, yet, in reality, there exists nothing but the non-dual *Ātman*.

² *Even, etc.*—It is because the apparent multiplicity is due to the obsession of the imaginary time and space as well as causal relation. As *Ātman* is ever free from time, space, and causal relation, therefore no idea of multiplicity can ever be applied to *Ātman*.

489 349

CHAPTER IV

QUENCHING OF FIRE-BRAND

¹ *Well determined*—That is to say, all *Jivas* are, by their very nature, ever free, pure and illumined.

never in need of any light from itself or others—who thus always rests² without forming ideas of duality regarding any further knowledge of his own self, becomes capable of realising the ultimate Reality.

(“Hindi passage omitted here”)

93. *All Dharmās or Jivas are from the very beginning and by their very nature, all-peace, unborn^o and completely free. They are characterised by sameness and are non-separate from one another. Therefore the Jivas are the Ātman unborn, always established in “sameness” and “purity” itself.*

ŚANKARA’S COMMENTARY.

Similarly, there is no room for any effort to make the Ātman peaceful, for, all Jivas are, by their very nature, eternally peaceful, unborn and of the nature of eternal freedom. All Jivas are further, of the same nature and non-separate from one another. They being the⁴⁹⁰ Ātman in their very essence, ever pure, unborn and established in sameness, therefore the effort of attaining to liberation is meaningless. For, if something is accomplished with regard to an entity which is always of the same nature, it does not make any change in the thing itself.

The previous *Kārikā* stated the condition which alone makes one capable of attaining to liberation. But this liberation is not something external or foreign to be achieved or acquired. The Self is, by its very nature, ever free and illumined. It has never been covered with a veil. Therefore one who understands the real import of *Advaita* Vedānta, realises himself as ever pure, free and illumined and ceases from making efforts at gaining further knowledge.

(“Hindi passage omitted here”)

94. *Those who always rely on (attach themselves to) separateness can never realise the innate purity of the Self. Therefore those who are drowned in the idea of separation and who assert the separateness of the Jivas are called narrow-minded.*

ŚANKARA’S COMMENTARY.

² Rests, etc. — That is to say, no duty nor any moral imperative can be applied to the non-dual Ātman.

^o not of the same characteristic as drsyamThe original editor inserted footnote “not of the same characteristic as drsyam” by hand

⁴⁹⁰ 350

Those who have realised the truth regarding the ultimate Reality as described above, are alone free from narrowness. Others are verily narrow-minded. This is thus described in this verse. “Drowned in the idea of separation” means those who stick to the idea of separation, that is to say, those who confine themselves to the multiplicity of phenomenal experiences. Who are they? They are those who assert that the multiplicity of objects exists, *i.e.*, the dualists. They are⁴⁹¹ called “narrow-minded” as they never realise the natural purity^x of *Ātman* on account of their ever dwelling in the thought of multiplicity, *i.e.*, on account of their taking for real the duality of experiences imagined through ignorance. Therefore it has been truly said that these people are narrow-minded.

Compare “Whoever, O Gārgi, without knowing that *Akshara* (the Imperishable), offers oblations in this world, sacrifices, and performs penance for a thousand years, his work will have an end. Whosoever, O Gārgi, without knowing this *Akshara*, departs this world⁴⁹², he is *narrow-minded*. But he, O Gārgi, who departs this world⁴⁹³, knowing this *Akshara*, is a *Brāhmana*.” (*Br. Up.*, 3. 8. 10.)

(“Hindi passage omitted here”)

95. *They alone are said to be of the highest wisdom*⁴⁹⁴ *who are firm*^o *in their conviction of the Self, unborn and ever the same. This, ordinary men cannot understand.*

ŚANKARA’S COMMENTARY.

That this knowledge of the Supreme Reality is incapable of being understood by the narrow-minded, by the unwise,¹ *i.e.*, by persons of small intellect who are² outside

⁴⁹¹ 351

CHAPTER IV QUENCHING OF FIRE-BRAND

^x = undifferentiated

⁴⁹² The original editor added underline by hand

⁴⁹³ The original editor added underline by hand

⁴⁹⁴ The original editor deleted “(intellect)” by hand

^o who are unshakably legal to the guru, after having tested him/or, who are not satisfied with mere glimpses of truth but went stable convictionThe original editor inserted footnote “who are unshakably legal to the guru, after having tested him/or, who are not satisfied with mere glimpses of truth but went stable conviction” by hand

¹ *The unwise* – That is, men devoid of discrimination.

² *Who are, etc.* – The Vedānta scriptures alone can illumine us regarding the real nature of the Self. But the rea006C meaning of the Vedānta can be understood only through reason.

the knowledge of Vedānta,—is thus explained in this verse. Those few, even though³ they may be women or others, who are firm in their conviction of the nature of the ultimate Reality, unborn and undivided, are alone possessors of the highest wisdom. They alone know the essence of Reality. Others,⁴ *i.e.*, persons of ordinary intellect, cannot⁴⁹⁵ understand their ways, that is to say, the Supreme Reality realised by the wise. It is said in the *Smṛiti*:—“Even the gods⁵ feel puzzled while trying to follow in the footsteps of those who leave no track behind, of those who realise themselves in all beings and who are always devoted to the welfare of all. They leave⁶ no track behind like the birds flying through the sky.”—MahaBharata⁴⁹⁶

(“Hindi⁴⁹⁷ passage omitted here”)

96. *Knowledge (consciousness), the essence of the Jivas (who are unborn), is admitted to be itself unborn and unrelated (to any external object). This knowledge is proclaimed to be unconditioned as it is not related to any other object (which, really speaking, does not exist).*

ŚANKARA’S COMMENTARY.

What constitutes the highest wisdom (*i.e.*, the wisdom of the knower of the non-dual *Ātman*)? This is thus explained: Knowledge which constitutes the essence of the

³ *Even though*—The women and the *Śudrās* were interdicted from the study of the Upanishads though it was conceded that they could attain to the highest knowledge through *Smṛiti*. This was the tradition in India during post-Upanishadic age. But in the age of the Upanishads, women were certainly not precluded from seeking or attaining the highest knowledge. Many inspiring portions of the Vedās were composed by women.

⁴ *Others, etc.*—Ordinary people cannot appreciate the life and activities of the truly wise because the former do not understand the truth about, and believe in, the interdependence of Brahman and phenomenal world.

⁴⁹⁵ 352

CHAPTER IV

QUENCHING OF FIRE-BRAND

⁵ *Gods*—That is to say, the beings that are said to move in a higher plane of existence. They also stand stupefied before the Knowers of Brahman as the former have not yet transcended the realm of duality.

⁶ *They leave, etc.*—The wise, on account of their realisation of the non-dual *Ātman*, never manifest by way of advertisement, any supernatural characteristics by which the ordinary men could mark their greatness. The life of the truly wise is perfectly natural though their angle of vision is totally different from that of the ordinary folk. Hence no one except those who have similar wisdom can understand the nature of the wise.

⁴⁹⁶ The original editor inserted “—MahaBharata” by hand

⁴⁹⁷ 353

CHAPTER IV

QUENCHING OF FIRE-BRAND

Dharmas (Jivas), unborn, immutable and identical with *Ātman*, is also admitted to be unborn¹ and immutable. It is just like the light and the heat belonging to the sun. Knowledge, being ever unrelated to other² objects, is said to be unborn. As knowledge is, thus, unrelated to other objects, it is like the *Ākāśa*, called unconditioned or absolute.

("Hindi⁴⁹⁸ passage omitted here")

97. *The slightest idea of variety (in the Ātman) entertained by the ignorant bars their approach to the unconditioned. The destruction of the veil (covering the real nature of Ātman) is out of the question.*

ŚANKARA'S COMMENTARY.

If persons, through ignorance, think,—as those who differ from us assert—that an entity (*i.e.*, *Jiva* or *Ātman*) does undergo the slightest change, either subjectively or objectively, then such ignorant persons can never realise the ever-unrelatedness (of the *Ātman*).¹ Therefore² it goes without saying that there cannot be any destruction of bondage (that is supposed to keep the *Jiva* bound to the world).

("Hindi⁴⁹⁹ passage omitted here")

¹ *Unborn, etc.*—This refutes the theory of the *Nyāya* realists who say that knowledge is an attribute of *Ātman* and arises only by the contact of the mind with an external object. It has already been pointed out that the appearance of external objects is due to illusion. But consciousness does not cease to exist in the absence of objects as in *Yoga Samādhi* or deep sleep. Therefore the real nature of knowledge is that it is unborn and unattached. From the standpoint of Reality the *Jiva* is identical with consciousness like the identity of the sun with its heat and light.

² *Other objects.*—It is because such objects do not, from the standpoint of Reality, exist.

498 354

CHAPTER IV

QUENCHING OF FIRE-BRAND

According to *Advaita* Vedānta the ultimate Reality is immutable and non-dual Self. Knowledge is ever unrelated to objects as they do not, as such, exist. The view of the opponent regarding the separate existence of objects cannot be upheld as it contradicts the unrelated nature of *Ātman* which is admitted by all schools of thought.

¹ *Ātman, etc.*—If the birth or production of an object be admitted, knowledge must be related to it. Otherwise one cannot know its birth. In that case the absolute and unrelated nature of knowledge cannot be maintained.

² *Therefore, etc.*—If it be contended that knowledge is produced or if it be said that knowledge (Consciousness or *Ātman*) is not birthless by nature, then one cannot speak of liberation or the destruction of bondage, as there is no guarantee of the liberation being permanent.

499 355

CHAPTER IV

98. All Dharmas (i.e., Jivas) are ever free from bondage and pure by nature. They are ever illumined and liberated from the very beginning. Still the wise speak of the Jivas as capable of knowing^o ('the Ultimate Truth').

ŚANKARA'S COMMENTARY.

(Objection)—It has been stated in the previous *Kārikā* that (according to the view of the ignorant) the destruction of the veil covering the real nature of *Ātman* is not possible. This is a (tacit) admission by the Vedāntist that the (real) nature of the *Jivas* is covered by a veil.

(Reply)—It¹ is not so. The *Jivas*² are never subject to any veil or bondage imposed by ignorance. That is to say, they are ever free from any bondage (which does not at all exist). They are pure by nature; illumined and free from the very beginning as it is said that they are of the nature of eternal purity, knowledge and freedom. If so, why are *Jivas* described as capable of *knowing* (the ultimate Reality) by teachers who are competent to know the Truth, i.e., those who are endowed with the power of discrimination? The reply is that it³ is like speaking about the sun as *shining* though⁵⁰⁰ the very nature of the sun is all-light, or speaking about the hill, which is ever free from any motion, as always *standing*.

QUENCHING OF FIRE-BRAND

^o The guru has to use human language; i.e. the language of duality, and suggest truth is knowable. But in fact the pupil is already truth, Brahman, the second thing which he deludes himself he is seeking. The original editor inserted footnote "The guru has to use human language; i.e. the language of duality, and suggest truth is knowable. But in fact the pupil is already truth, Brahman, the second thing which he deludes himself he is seeking" by hand

¹ *It, etc.*—People imagine that they can remove the veil of *Ātman* by knowledge. This is also due to *Avidyā* or ignorance.

² *The Jivas, etc.*—If a man got the idea of veil or impurity, then he is bound. But in the absence of such idea he is free. *Ātman* has no veil. One speaks of veil, bondage, etc., only from the causal standpoint. This position is the most difficult to be correctly understood inasmuch as for the generality of men, causation is a fact, therefore the veil or bondage of *Ātman* is also a fact. But from the standpoint of the ultimate Truth, there is no causality and therefore no veil, bondage or ignorance.

³ *It is like, etc.*—One speaks of the rising and the shining of the sun though the sun, inasmuch as it is always of the nature of light, cannot be said to rise or shine at any particular moment. Similarly one describes the hill as standing, which correctly speaking is only a correlative of motion. Nevertheless, though the hill never moves, yet it is described as standing. As the ideas of rising, shining, etc., associated with the sun or the ideas of standing, etc., attributed to the hill do not affect their real nature, so also the idea of "knowability" ascribed to the *Jiva*, which is all knowledge by nature, does not affect it in any way.

⁵⁰⁰ The original editor changed "through" to "though" by hand

("Hindi⁵⁰¹ passage omitted here")

99. *The knowledge of the wise one, who is all-light,^o is ever untouched^Δ by objects. All the entities as well as knowledge (which are non-different) are also ever-un-touched by any object. This is not the view of the Buddha.*

ŚANKARA'S COMMENTARY.

The knowledge of the wise man, that is to say, of the one who has attained to the Supreme Reality, is ever unrelated to other¹ objects or *Jivas*. This knowledge is always centred in or is identical with *Jiva* (i.e., the *Ātman*) like the sun and its light. The word "Tāyee", "All—light", in the text signifies that which is all-pervasive like *Ākāśa* or, it may mean that which is⁵⁰² adorable or all-knowledge. All entities, i.e., *Jivas* (beings like so many *Ātmans*) are as unattached as the *Ākāśa*, and ever-unrelated to anything else. Knowledge (*Jnāna*) which has been compared to *Ākāśa* in the beginning² of this chapter is non-different from the knowledge of the wise one who is all-light. Therefore the *Ākāśa*-like knowledge of the wise does not relate itself to any other object. This is also the essence of the *Dharmas* or all entities. The essence of all the entities is the essence of Brahman, and is, like *Ākāśa*, immutable, changeless, free from parts, permanent, one and without a second, unattached, non-cognizable, unthinkable and beyond hunger and thirst. The *Śruti* also says, "The knowledge (characteristic) of the seer is never absent." This knowledge regarding the Ultimate Reality, non-dual and characterised by an absence of perceiver, perception and the perceived, is not the same as that declared

⁵⁰¹ 356

CHAPTER IV QUENCHING OF FIRE-BRAND

^o he has within himself the awakened capacity to know everything is Brahman or all-gnanam. The original editor inserted footnote "he has within himself the awakened capacity to know everything is Brahman or all-gnanam." By hand

^Δ =never enters into relations with. Thus the mind in dream does not really have a relation with the dream-mountain. The original editor inserted footnote "=never enters into relations with. Thus the mind in dream does not really have a relation with the dream-mountain" by hand

¹ *Other, etc.*—It is because objects or *Jivas*, different from knowledge or *Ātman*, do not exist.

⁵⁰² 357

CHAPTER IV QUENCHING OF FIRE-BRAND

by the Buddha.³ The view⁴ of the Buddha, which rejects the existence of external objects and asserts the existence of ideas alone, is said to be similar to or very near the truth of non-dual *Ātman*. But this knowledge of non-duality which is the Ultimate Reality can be attained through Vedānta alone.

(“Hindi⁵⁰³ passage omitted here”)

100. *Having realised that condition (i.e., the knowledge of the Supreme Reality) which is extremely difficult to be grasped, profound, birthless, always the same, all light, and free from multiplicity, we salute^Δ It as best as we can.*

ŚANKARA’S COMMENTARY.

The treatise is now completed. This Salutation is made with a view to extol the knowledge of the Supreme Reality. It¹ is extremely difficult to understand it. In other words, it is difficult of comprehension as it is not related to any of the four² possible predicates, such as existence, non-existence, etc. It is profound, that is, very deep like a great ocean. People³ devoid of discrimination[◦] cannot fathom it. This knowledge (*Jñāna*) is, further, birthless[□], always the same and all-light. Having realised this knowledge, which is free from multiplicity, and having⁴ become one with it, we salute it. Though⁵ this absolute knowledge cannot be subjected to any relative treatment (such

³ *Buddha*. — The reference is to the views held by the Buddhist idealists.

⁴ *The view, etc.* — Metaphysically speaking, Buddhistic philosophy is nearest to Advaita Vedānta in its dialectics.

⁵⁰³ 358

CHAPTER IV

QUENCHING OF FIRE-BRAND

^Δ words are useless here so I make a sign, low or prostration, as the only thing to be done. *The original editor inserted footnote “words are useless here so I make a sign, low or prostration, as the only thing to be done.” By hand*

¹ *It is, etc.* — It is because the knowledge of the non-dual *Ātman* is not possible by direct perception through the instrumentality of the sense-organs.

² *Four, etc.* — Reference — *Kārikā* 83, Chapter IV.

³ *People, etc.* — This knowledge of *Ātman* can be attained only through discrimination by which one can negate what is non-self. Then the knowledge of Self reveals itself.

[◦] whose minds are not ragor sharp *The original editor inserted footnote “whose minds are not ragor sharp” by hand*

[□] = the idea of time belongs to the drsyam world *The original editor inserted footnote “= the idea of time belongs to the drsyam world” by hand*

⁴ *Having, etc.* — The knowledge of *Ātman* enables one to realise one’s identity with it.

⁵ *Though, etc.* — Salutation always implies duality and is possible only from the relative standpoint. The Commentator, being full of human love and gratitude to the knowledge that

as, Salutation, etc.) yet we view it from the relative standpoint[#] and adore[×] it to⁶ the best of our power.

Here⁵⁰⁴ ends Sri Gaudapāda's *Māndūkya Upanishad Kārikā* with the Commentary of Sri Śankara.

AUM PEACE! PEACE! PEACE!

The⁵⁰⁵ Concluding Salutation by Sri Śankarāchārya.

("Hindi passage omitted here")

I bow to that Brahman, the destroyer of all fear of those who take shelter under It, – which, though unborn, appears to be associated with birth through its (inscrutable and indescribable) power (of knowledge and activity); which, though ever at rest, appears to be moving; and which, though non-dual, appears to have assumed multifarious forms to those whose vision is deluded by the perception of endless objects and their attributes.

("Hindi passage omitted here")

I prostrate at the feet of that Great Teacher, the most adored among the adorable, who, – out of sheer compassion for the beings drowned in the deep ocean of the world,

enables him to realise the Supreme Reality, drags it, as it were, to the relative plane by imagining it as a Person or Teacher and then adores it by saluting it.

= when the author is dealing with pupilsThe original editor inserted footnote "= when the author is dealing with pupils" by hand

× = to impress on readers that it is beyond speechThe original editor inserted footnote "= to impress on readers that it is beyond speech" by hand

⁶ *To the best, etc.* – No salutation is possible with regard to the non-dual *Ātman* because the knower of *Ātman* becomes one with *Ātman* itself. This salutation is made from the relative standpoint.

⁵⁰⁴ 359

CHAPTER IV

QUENCHING OF FIRE-BRAND

⁵⁰⁵ 360

The Concluding Salutation by Sri Śankarāchārya

The 1stpara means that man has idea of cause offed, yet tho' I see these things appearing in the world, I see only non-causality because I see non-duality; hence I have no fear.The original editor inserted footnote "The 1stpara means that man has idea of cause offed, yet tho' I see these things appearing in the world, I see only non-causality because I see non-duality; hence I have no fear." By hand

infested with the terrible sharks of incessant births (and deaths)[□],—rescued, for the benefit of all[◦], this nectar[×], hardly obtainable even by the gods, from the innermost depths of the ocean of the Vedās by⁵⁰⁶ churning[◦] it with the (churning) rod of his illumined^Δ reason.

(“Hindi passage omitted here”)

I make obeisance[□] with my whole being to those holy feet—the dispellers of the fear of this chain of births and deaths—of my great teacher who, through the light of his illumined reason, destroyed the darkness of delusion enveloping my mind; who destroyed for ever my appearance and disappearance in this terrible ocean of innumerable births and deaths; and who makes all others[#] also that take shelter at his feet, attain to the unfailing knowledge of scriptures, peace and the state of perfect non-differentiation.

AUM PEACE! PEACE! PEACE^Ψ!

[□] birth & death is only in the world of drsyamThe original editor inserted footnote “birth & death is only in the world of drsyam” by hand

[◦] Vedanta is not for the cave but to help all men. For “I am” the all! how then can I leave others to suffer?The original editor inserted footnote “Vedanta is not for the cave but to help all men. For “I am” the all! how then can I leave others to suffer?” by hand

[×] *not to be taken literally; it is poetical term only*The original editor inserted footnote “not to be taken literally; it is poetical term only” by hand

⁵⁰⁶ 361

The Concluding Salutation by Sri Śankarāchārya

[◦] you must use your reason to think hard: truth will not come without such hard labourThe original editor inserted footnote “you must use your reason to think hard: truth will not come without such hard labour” by hand

^Δ every man has some reason, but this is reason ruised to the stage where it can know truthThe original editor inserted footnote “every man has some reason, but this is reason ruised to the stage where it can know truth” by hand

[□] the meaning of all salutation is, “I am effacing my I”.The original editor inserted footnote “the meaning of all salutation is, “I am effacing my I”.” by hand

[#] the gun cannot restrict his aid only to disciples, cannot give up all the others, for he feels his identity with all existence and must work for the good of as many as he can. The last chapter of gita, as this last chapter of mandukya karika, stresses same pointThe original editor inserted footnote “the gun cannot restrict his aid only to disciples, cannot give up all the others, for he feels his identity with all existence and must work for the good of as many as he can. The last chapter of gita, as this last chapter of mandukya karika, stresses same point” by hand

^Ψ perfect peace can be only where there is no second entity with whom to quarrel: hence it is only in non-duality.The original editor inserted footnote “perfect peace can be only where there is no second entity with whom to quarrel: hence it is only in non-duality.” By hand

2169-35⁵⁰⁷ – Printed at The Bangalore Press, Mysore Road, Bangalore City, by G.
Srinivasa Rao, Superintendent